The Journal and Letters of Lt. Ralph Clark 1787-1792

Clark, Ralph (d.1794)

University of Sydney Library

Sydney, Australia
Source Text:

Edited by Paul G. Fidlon and R. J. Ryan

All quotation marks are retained as data.

First Published: Unpublished diary 1787-92

994.820924/1 Australian Etext Collections at early settlement diaries pre-1810
The Journal and Letters of Lt. Ralph Clark 1787-1792

Sydney

Australian Documents Library in Association with The Library of Australian History Pty Ltd

1981
EDITORS' PREFACE

Ralph Clark's journal is a very personal document — clearly not intended for publication. Yet it would not be unfair to suggest that had he lived long enough Clark would have made some attempt at transcribing his notes into a saleable book. Clark's desire to earn money and his impecunious circumstances become clear as one reads through his writings.

It is probable that the original journal comprised three notebooks the second of which has been lost. This could account for the period 11 March 1788 to 14 February 1790 apparently not recorded by Clark. The change of style beginning with the entry for 15 February 1790 affords some evidence that Clark might have just started using a new book.

Clark's letter book would then have made a fourth volume — copies of his official and semi-personal letters. We suspect that a few personal letters were pasted into the book sometime after Clark's death in 1794. We further suspect that there was another letterbook in which would be found copies of official letters written between his return to England in 1792 and his death. Admiralty and Marine Records at the Public Record Office in Kew, England, list a number of such letters. Is it too much to hope that some of the missing documents may yet come to light?

Whatever may have become of other documents, we know that the Mitchell Library purchased Clark's memorabilia at a Sotheby's auction in London in 1914. The Clark lot included the journal, letters and a small portrait of Mrs Clark (Betsey Alicia), all of which are reproduced in this work. There was also a typescript of the journal signed by F.A. Trevan, a great-nephew of Ralph Clark. It was F.A. Trevan who offered Clark's papers and the portrait for sale.

Clark's journal contains 312 pages of yellowing, unruled, thin diary paper 160mm wide and 197mm deep and written in ink. The diary pages are mounted on heavy cream paper by means of office sticky tape. This is unfortunate as not only are the last words of each line difficult — sometimes impossible — to read, but it is probable that the masked words will become illegible. The journal is listed under the Mitchell Library call number Z 1/27.

Clark's letterbook consists of the same heavy cream paper as the journal. The letters and various other pieces are mounted on the pages which are pencil-numbered to 122 with a score or so of blank pages at the back of the book. The letterbook is 245mm across, 275mm deep and 20mm thick. Mitchell Library call number Z/C 221.

The small oval portrait of Betsey Alicia which measures approximately 70mm x 50mm is delicately coloured and well preserved. Clark says it was “done by a limner” and seems to suggest that he and Betsey commissioned it when his departure for New South Wales was imminent (p.71). Two locks of hair (partly obscured by the identification label) are pressed into the back of the portrait. We think the hair may have been young Ralph's (p.20).
Both the journal and letterbook are bound in brown hide with gold-ruled ridges along the spine and imprinted with two black outline waratah flowers. Inside and back covers are marbled in light brown and cream.

As Clark's journal and letters fall into three distinguishable parts, we have divided this publication as follows:

PART I. Ralph Clark's Journal, 9 March 1787 to 10 March 1788.

PART II. Ralph Clark's Journal, 15 February 1790 to 17 June 1792.

PART III. Ralph Clark's Letterbook.

As with our earlier publications in this series, we have modified the author's style and layout. Clark left many blank spaces in his manuscript (e.g., convicts' first names); we have marked the spaces thus: [*]. Clark's inconsistent spelling also caused problems. Where we judged that the reader could make sense of it, albeit with some difficulty, we let the word stand (e.g., Spalms for Psalms). In some cases, especially where Clark wrote “the” instead of “they”, we have added missing letters or words (e.g., “the[y]”) in the hope of making the narrative easier to follow. But we have not gone too far with this practice for fear of losing Clark's originality. We have also punctuated Clark's writing with a series of double dashes (——) so that the author's intention — or what we take to be his intention — will be more readily understood.

To assist readers and researchers we have set Clark's journal dates in the margin; they can thus be seen more easily than in the original. We have also added the year and a catchline at the top of each page. Although we have altered the arrangement of these details, Clark's method of expressing them — with all the inconsistencies — has been retained.

Occasionally in the journal Clark refers to an “orderly book”. As far as we know, this book has not been found. We are unable to say if it was a book kept by Clark or by the adjutant of marines. It could have been the Order Book which is listed at the Public Record Office as ADM 184/PL.

With one exception (see page 310) Clark appears to have made no sketches in his journal or letterbook. We have therefore included some illustrations to assist in explaining some of Clark's references.

Our cover picture, taken from The Founding of Australia by Algernon Talmage, R.A., shows the marines drawn up for the ceremonial toast to the success of the colony on 26 January 1788.

Paul G. Fidlon
R.J. Ryan
March, 1981

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This volume has been produced by permission of the Mitchell Library, Sydney. We wish to acknowledge the assistance given by the Librarian and staff of the Mitchell Library in making the Ralph Clark manuscripts available for editorial and photographic purposes.

We wish to thank Jennifer Heward for tracking down further references to Ralph Clark in the British Museum and Public Record Office. A summary of Ms Heward's information appears as Appendix 1. We extend our grateful thanks to the staff of the British Museum and the Public Record Office for their assistance.

We would also like to thank Janet D. Hine for making her notes on Ralph Clark freely available to us.

As always, we acknowledge the efforts of Lois Foster and Bev Owens for typing, reading and re-reading from photo-copy to final text.
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Editors' Preface</td>
<td>v</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acknowledgements</td>
<td>ix</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>List of Illustrations</td>
<td>xiii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Introduction</td>
<td>xv</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Part 1: Journal from 9 March 1787 to 10 March 1788</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Part 2: Journal from 15 February 1790 to 17 June 1792</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Part 3: Letterbook</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendix 1</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index</td>
<td>323</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INTRODUCTION

We have not been able to discover the year of Ralph Clark's birth but it cannot have been far removed from the year in which the marines were reborn, in 1755. According to Janet Hine, Clark was in service with the Dutch before 1777—it is possible that he would have been about 20 years of age at that time.

The marines were first raised by an Order in Council of 28 October 1664. A regiment of 1200 soldiers known as the Admiral's Regiment was “to be distributed into His Majesty's Fleets prepared for sea service”. Thereafter soldiers “for sea service” were drawn from other regiments until 1690. In that year the formation of two Marine Regiments enabled the recruitment of soldiers exclusively for sea service. A Marine Pay Office was established on 16 May 1702, but the continuity of the marine force itself depended on the exigencies of war. The marines were disbanded between 1713 and 1739 and again between 1745 and 1755.

On 3 April 1755 an Order in Council raised 5000 marines in 50 companies each assigned to one of the “Grand Divisions” quartered at Chatham, Plymouth and Portsmouth under the control of the Board of Admiralty. The marines were honoured with the prefix ‘Royal’ by George III in an order of 29 April 1802.

Ralph Clark was commissioned as a Second Lieutenant of Marines (not Royal) on 25 August 1779† as a member of the 27th Company. He was appointed to the 6th Company on 1 August 1783 with which Company he sailed for Australia.

Part of our difficulty in tracking down information relating to Clark arises from the fact that, with a few exceptions, no records of marine appointments before 1793 have survived. From what little record there is, however, we can piece together some of Clark's service life. It appears that he volunteered for service with the First Fleet in the hope that it would bring promotion and financial reward. This hope was fulfilled when the death of Captain Shea left a gap in the ranks which Major Ross filled from among his subordinate officers. In the reshuffle Ralph Clark was promoted to First Lieutenant.

However, the prospect of promotion lost its glitter as soon as the fleet sailed; almost daily references to homesickness in the early part of Clark's journal attest to this. “All the gains on earth”, Clark bemoaned on the eve of his third wedding anniversary, “should never have made me leave . . . my dear beloved Alicia and sweet boy”. (p.19). Yet he was hardly back home after five years away when he volunteered for duty in the West Indies — this time taking his “sweet boy” Ralph junior with him.

Judging by his journal and letters Clark appears to have been an unhappy man, not given to the kind of riotous living one often associates with servicemen. When his comrades sat up late at night enjoying themselves, Ralph Clark either complained of the noise they made or joined them — but drank only lemonade. On one occasion, while despising the drinking habits of Lieutenant Faddy, he boasted that he'd only ever been tipsy once. And that was when he married his dear Betsey Alicia!
During the long voyage thoughts of Betsey Alicia and young Ralph occupied many of Clark's waking hours. And his sleeping hours were likewise given to dreams of family and home. On his wedding anniversary Clark wrote: “Oh how I long for the months to fly away to restore [me] to my Alicia my friend my dear wife and Beautiful little engaging son”. On another occasion Clark “dreamt last night of having been with my dear Alicia . . . sitting at the fire with her night cap on and Seemd very Low”. Ralph Clark's heart and mind were filled with love, affection and kindness for his wife and son. On Sundays he took the picture out of its protective bag and kissed it “a thousand times”. It is hard to imagine anyone more homesick than Lt. Clark during those long days at sea.

While he was tender-hearted toward his own family, Clark displayed an arrogant intolerance of the women convicts aboard the Friendship. Early in the voyage, some sailors got into the women's quarters — but Clark blamed the women! Even if they were the “damned whores” he says they were, it is hard to imagine the women breaking through the bulkhead without assistance from the outside. In any event, Clark was glad to be rid of them when the women aboard his ship were replaced by sheep at Cape Town. He wrote: “I think we will find [the sheep] much more agreeable ship mates than [the women] were”. (p.65).

It is a great pity that so much of Clark's journal is missing; from the missing part we might have learned something of the man's optimistic side. As Part II of this volume opens, Clark is once again up-river seeking out the Aborigines. From the narrative it appears that Clark had struck up a useful acquaintance with the natives since landing at Sydney Cove some 12 months before. The Aborigines seemed to trust him more than anyone else. Clark showed he was worthy of their trust by refusing to capture two of them because he feared their children would starve. Here Clark shows the same tenderness to mother and child as he does to his own wife and son. But, alas, our chance of learning more of Clark the optimist is probably lost forever. We are left again with Clark the pessimist — perhaps the original “whinging pom”!

Betsey Alicia seems to have been overlooked for much of Part II which, for the most part, coincides with Clark's stint on Norfolk Island. It was during this time that the weakness of the flesh, which Clark so deplored in other men, triumphed over Clark's love for his wife and son. Though he makes no mention of her (which is not surprising) Ralph Clark found a paramour among the convict women of whom he previously thought so little. Her name was Mary Branham; she was barely 20 years old. In July 1791 she bore him a daughter. The daughter was christened Alicia.

The date of Alicia's christening (16 December 1791) falls in the middle of a gap of nearly seven weeks in Clark's journal. Clark explains his failure to keep his diary on a daily basis because he was alternately sick and busy. It seems clear however that Clark did not leave the child on Norfolk Island when he sailed for Sydney on 19 November 1791— the mother and child sailed with him.

We are grateful to Jennifer Heward for filling in some of the gaps in Ralph Clark's biography relating to the time of his return to England in 1792 up to his death in 1794.

After Clark's return to England he appears to have been appointed to the 100th Company based at Chatham. Although the appointment was made in early October 1792, Clark did not join the Company until 20 January 1793 on which date he is reported as being “fit for duty”.


We cannot of course assume that he was “unfit” for the previous three months; weekly returns of marines were always written in such form. Clark may have been granted leave to the beginning of 1793. (See Appendix 1, page 321.)

Ms Heward found Ralph Clark's name on the list as fit for duty from January 1792 until he embarked aboard the Tartar on 1 May 1793, presumably for the West Indies. According to the records he was still listed as being in the Company on 28 December 1794. This latter information poses something of a problem because we had expected to find Clark's death recorded several months earlier than this. The pay register seems to indicate that Clark's pay for 1794 terminated on 31 March 1794 but we know from his letters that he was alive in early June 1794. The Admiralty List for 1794 reads “Died” and Clark's name is struck off the list.

The mystery deepens when one compares Clark's last letter home (see p.313) with the Marine List in Appendix 1. The list shows Clark as victualled by the Tartar—but Clark writes from the Sceptre. Such mysteries are the stuff of research and a diligent fossicker might one day dig up the missing material and tie the loose ends together.

Janet Hine has already done a considerable amount of work in piecing the Ralph Clark story together. Her notes, which are invaluable to those undertaking further research of the subject, are in the Mitchell Library (ML. MSS 3556).

The Ralph Clark story has a sad ending. Betsey Alicia died after giving birth to a dead child. Clark died probably not knowing what happened to his “beloved Betsey”; we think he was killed in action (fighting the French in Haiti) before the news could have reached him. And young Ralph, fighting on the same ship as his father, died of yellow fever. The catalogue produced by Sotheby's to advertise the sale of Clark's journal states that young Ralph died “on the same day” as his father. Presumably this claim was made by the Trevan family.

Thus the small family for which Clark suffered so much came to an end. The promotion he sought so desperately eluded him. He died, not having advanced in rank since his promotion to First Lieutenant in New South Wales.

Yet it is possible that the Clark line continues to this day. What became of Mary Branham and her little girl Alicia? Was Alicia their only child? These are questions to which a biographer of Ralph Clark will no doubt find answers.

Paul G. Fidlon
R.J. Ryan

*See Australian Dictionary of Biography.*

†cf Appendix 1, Army List which gives 25 August 1780 as the date of Clark's commission.
MARCH 1787

March the 9 1787

March with the detachment from the Barracks to the dock Yard at ten in the morning and Embark on board the Friendship Transport with Captain Lieutenant Meredith and 2d. Lieut Faddy 2 Sergeants 3 Corporals 1 Drummer 36 Privates 9 Woman and Children —— never did a poor Criminal goe to meet the [unknown] with greater reluctance than I leave the best of Woman and Sweetest of Boys —— god out of his gracious goodness my leaving them may turn out to our advantage —— never did poor Mortal feel himselfe So unhappy as I doe at this present moment —— I wish to god that I was Returning home again to the best of her Sex — Oh What goodness dose She my belovd Betsey posses She is come on board to Stay with her fond Clark Untill Mr. Faddy Returns on board to Relieve me

March the 12

Received on board Yesterday Male and Female Convicts with Children —— can never forgive the Unkindness of Capt M [eridith?] in refussing me leave to Sleep out of the Ships last night —— oh did he love as well as I doe he would never have Refused me

March the 13 at Sea

Oh Gracious God What a task have I gone throu last night in taking leave of the dearest and best of Wives and not Seing my Boy —— god grant them health and welfare is the most Sinceer wishes of ane affectioned husband and fond father —— oh when ever I am Restord to them again will never leave them —— Bless them Both

Details of Convicts Aboard the “Friendship”

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Time Recd. on board</th>
<th>Names</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Trades</th>
<th>Crimes</th>
<th>What Transpt.</th>
<th>Time</th>
<th>Wher Tried</th>
<th>Year</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>Wher Born</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>M: if on board the</th>
<th>Remarks</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>March</td>
<td>Wm. Eyres</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>Sadler</td>
<td>Stn. 6 Guineas</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Winchester</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Staffordshire</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Year</td>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Age</td>
<td>Occupation</td>
<td>Experience</td>
<td>City</td>
<td>County</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>---------------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Yardsley</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>Gardener Sheap Steag.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Curtis Bryn</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>None 2 Game Cocks</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Midst</td>
<td>Sussex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Wm. Haris</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>Buckle makr. Horse Steag.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Winchester</td>
<td>Dorset M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jos. Mawley</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>Silk dyer High Way</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Winchester</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Patk. Burn</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>Baker High Way</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Exeter</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Redmd. McGrath</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>None House Breakg.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Wm. Edwards</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>Brick makr. Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex Bedfordshire M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jas. Grace</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>Shoe Makr. 1 Pr. of Stocking</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Dick McDeed</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Shoe Maker Steag. 6 Guineas</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jno. Rouse</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Bricklayer Steag. Slops</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Andw. Ronold</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>None Forgery</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Hill</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Ls. Breechs. Steag. a Watch Makr.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Dorchester</td>
<td>Shrewsbury M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Edwd. Flin</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>None Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Simon Burn</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>Stockg. Weaver High Way</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Exeter</td>
<td>Devonshire M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Wm. McNamara</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Seaman 1 Pr. of k: Buckles</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Mickl. Bryan</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>None Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>14 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jos. Bishop</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Fisherman a Handkerchief</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jno. Penny</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>Jeweller Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Heny. Taylor</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>Stockg. Weaver an Iron Bar</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex Derbyshire M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Stretch</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>Miller Old Iron</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire Chester</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Frans. Woodcock</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>None Sheep Steag.</td>
<td>14 Yrs.</td>
<td>Exeter</td>
<td>Devonshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jas. Murphy</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>Shoe Makr. High Way</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Exeter</td>
<td>Devonshire M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jas. Thody</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>Plasterer Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Hughes</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>None Horse Steal.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Oxford</td>
<td>Berkshire M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Turner</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>None High Way</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Oxford</td>
<td>Berkshire M</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Year</td>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Age</td>
<td>Occupation</td>
<td>Term</td>
<td>Location</td>
<td>Maleshift</td>
<td>County</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>---------------</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>----------------</td>
<td>-----------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Danl. Barnett</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>Waterman</td>
<td>Kings Stores</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Winchester 1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Wm. Field</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>High Way</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Winchester 1783</td>
<td>Hertfordshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Mark Wood</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Werg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Richd. Davis</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Printer</td>
<td>Werg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jno. Best</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House Break</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jas. Dodding</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Werg. appl.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1784</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jno. Load</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>3 Guineas</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1784</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Robt. Sidaway</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Watch case</td>
<td>Werg. app</td>
<td>Life</td>
<td>London 1782</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Henry. Lovall</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Ivory Turn.</td>
<td>Forcery</td>
<td>Life</td>
<td>London 1782</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jno. Spence</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>2 lb of Tea</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Hudson</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House Break.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London 1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Moses Tucker</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>Carpenter</td>
<td>Forgery</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Plymouth 1786</td>
<td>Devon</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Heny. Cable</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House Break</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Norwich 1783</td>
<td>Norfolk</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Jno. Lambeth</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>BlackSmith</td>
<td>Steag. £1–19</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol 1785</td>
<td>Warwickshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Roger Twyfield</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Steag. 5lb of Suett</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury 1783</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Wm. Jones</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Stockg. Weaver</td>
<td>Steag. £4–14</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury 1785</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1787</td>
<td>Thos. Jones</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Bricklayer</td>
<td>House Breakg.</td>
<td>14 Yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol 1784</td>
<td>Warwickshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Name</td>
<td>Age</td>
<td>Trade/Job</td>
<td>Duration</td>
<td>City</td>
<td>Age</td>
<td>Trade/Job</td>
<td>Duration</td>
<td>City</td>
<td>Age</td>
<td>Trade/Job</td>
<td>Duration</td>
<td>City</td>
<td>Age</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>--------------------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>--------------------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>--------------------</td>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jerh. Learly</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>House Breaker</td>
<td>14 yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol</td>
<td>1774</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Stepn. Le Grove</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>Waterman</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Fairly</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>Steag. Deals</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol</td>
<td>1785</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas. Neel</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>Steag. 2lb of Sugar</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol</td>
<td>1785</td>
<td>Glostershire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jno. Patrick</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Cornwall</td>
<td>1785</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ed. Parkins</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>Brick Maker</td>
<td>1 Game Cock</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Devonshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wm. Brice</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>Looking Glass</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Glostershire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jos. Jameson</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Midston</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jno. Barns</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>3 pr. of Stockg.</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol</td>
<td>1785</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jno. Fendlow</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Patk. Delany</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>High Way</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jno. Bailis</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>Silver Smith</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>Middl.ess</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thos. Pritchard</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>Wearg. appl.</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jas. Mackay</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>Weaver</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Coopr. Handy</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>High Way</td>
<td>7 yrs.</td>
<td>Salisbury</td>
<td>1783</td>
<td>Yorkshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

D:D: the 24 June 1787 at Sea Latte. 9:11 North
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>March 11 1787</th>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Trade</th>
<th>Years</th>
<th>Place</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>County</th>
<th>M</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wm. Haynes</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>Cabt. Maker</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Richd. Cartwright</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>Farmer</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td>Staffordshire</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Richd. Jones</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>Miller</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jno. Bennet</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jas. Hussey</td>
<td>33</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Oxford</td>
<td>Oxfordshire</td>
<td></td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jno. Turner</td>
<td>44</td>
<td>Ship Wright</td>
<td>Midston</td>
<td>1784</td>
<td>Kent</td>
<td>Kent</td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Chas. Granger</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Ls. Breech</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Plymouth</td>
<td>Devonshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jos. Owen</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>14 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Geo. Clair</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>Shoe Makr.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td>Manchester</td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wm. Davis</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>Taylor</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Shrewsbury</td>
<td>Shropshire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jos. Elliott</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Gardener</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jno. Wisihamer</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Bristol</td>
<td>Glostershire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jno. Ryan</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Silk Weaver</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Jos. Temihile</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>10 Ed. Pugh</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>House Carptr.</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>Gloster</td>
<td>Glostershire</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Elizt. Barber</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>Book Stitcher</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td></td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Ann Baizley</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>1.6d.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Elizt.</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>9 Guineas Robry</td>
<td>7 Yrs.</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
<td>M</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Additional information:
- Ann Baizley was 21 years old, no trade, Stolen 5 Yrs.
- Elizt. was 23 years old, no trade, 9 Guineas Robry 7 Yrs.

Note: The dates and locations are placeholders and may not reflect accurate historical data.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Occupation</th>
<th>Offense</th>
<th>Years</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Sent on Bd.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Dudgeon</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>9 Guineas Robbery</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Susanah Gought</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Shop Lifting</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Dito</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hannah Green</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House breaking</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>Norwich</td>
<td>Norfolk</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frances Hart</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>Mantua Maker</td>
<td>2 pr. of boots</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rachel Harley</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House breaking</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marget Hall</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>£90 Stolen</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizt. Harvy</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House breaking</td>
<td>14 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sarah McCormick</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>2 Guineas Stolen</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary McCormick</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Buying a Silver</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>Tank Stolen</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Isabella Oldfield</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Shop Lifting</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizt. Pully</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Shop Lifting</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jane Parkenson</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Wearing appl.</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizt. Thackey</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Shop Lifting</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Charlotte Ware</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Shop Lifting</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td>London</td>
<td>Middlesex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mary Watking</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>Gown &amp; Handks.</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>April 10 1787</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House Breaking</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elizt. Mason*</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>15 Guineas Stolen</td>
<td>14 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>March the Elizt. Clark</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>None</td>
<td>House Breaking</td>
<td>7 yrs</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* Sent on Bd. the Charlotte the 11 of Augt. 1787
Dito
Dito Octr. 28/1787
Prince of Wales Octr. 28/87
Dito Octr. 28/87
Dito Octr. 28/87
Dito Octr. 28/87
Dito Octr. 28/87
Lady Penrhyn Octr. 28/87
Charlott Octr. 28th/87
Sent on Bd. the Charlott the 11 Augt. 1787
Dito Octr. 28/87
* It appears that Elizt. Mason had a son with her when she boarded the “Friendship”. See the entry for Sept. 29. 1787, p.49 infra.

**List of Femal Convicts Received from the Charlotte Transport**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Time Received</th>
<th>Names</th>
<th>When Dischargd.</th>
<th>Where Too</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Augst. 11th/87</td>
<td>Hanah Smith</td>
<td>Octr. 28th/87</td>
<td>Lady Penrhyn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augst. 11th/87</td>
<td>Fanny Anderson</td>
<td>Octr. 28/87</td>
<td>Lady Penrhyn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augst. 11th/87</td>
<td>Margt. Stuart</td>
<td>Octr. 28th/87</td>
<td>Lady Penrhyn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augst. 11th/87</td>
<td>Mary Phillips</td>
<td>Octr. 28th/87</td>
<td>Prince of Wales</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augst. 11th/87</td>
<td>Ann Coombs</td>
<td>Octr. 28th/87</td>
<td>Prince of Wales</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Augst. 11th/87</td>
<td>Elizh. Coole</td>
<td>Octr. 28th/87</td>
<td>Prince of Wales</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
May 1787

May the 13th. 1787

5 oClock in the Morning The Sirius made the Signal for the whole fleet to get under Way, O gracious god Send that we may put in to Plymout or Torbay in our Way down Channell that I may See my dear and fond affectioned Alicia and our Sweet Son before I leave them for this long long absents —— Oh almighty god hier my prayer and grant me this request —— Satt down and wrot a few lines to my Tender Betsey, and sent them by the pilot to put into the Post office, what makes me so happy this day is it because that I am in hoppes the fleet will put in to Plymt. —— Oh my fond heart lay still for you may be dispointed I trust in god I will not ——

Monday the 14

Oh my God all my hoppes are over of Seeing my beloved wife and Son —— Plymt. Sound in Sight —— Oh croul wind why will you not change and grant my fond heart the longing wish, the Pylades in sight also —— oh that I could Send this letter on board of her for my Beloved woman and bid her a long Adui now I must goe without knowing how my dear Boy is may his great God protect him and preserve for his fond father and Beloved mother, oh how hard is my fate of not being able to See [the]m and been so near them —— dear happy spot adieu wher all my treausure is on earth dear stocke adieu

the 15

abreast of Falmouth and a great number of fishing Boats in Sight —— I wish that on[e] of them would come in board of use that I might send a letter on shore by her to my Betsey but I find it is in Vain to Botany Bay I must goe —— I trust in god that it is all for the best if I thought other Wise I never should have thought of leaving the best of women and the most Sweetest of Boy's, will make my self as happy as my absents from them will admit —— I will take my Beloved Betsey advice in putting my whole trust in god, for I now find without him there is no happiness in this World —— I hope he will be my Guard and protector while absent from England and ever after
The Fis[h]burn made our Signal to Speak use —— going every moment father from all that my soul holds dear —— I wish to
god that I was once so near home to them again then I should be a happy man —— untill then I must make my self as happy as
I can —— Several Ships standing to the E:W: —— the Seamen refused to doe there duty on Account of there Provisions ——
the agent came on board by the Commd. orders to enquire in to the complaint which was that the[y] would have two pounds of
Beef a day in the room of having 11/2 pound* which is at present a half a pound a day more than we are alloud —— the[y] all
agreed to goe to work again Since the other Seamen in the rest of Transports have no more but if any Ship in the fleet gives ther
Ships Company more they are to expect the same —— I never met with a parcel of more discontent fellows in my life the[y]
only want more Provisions to give it to the damned whores the Convict Women of whome the[y] are very fond Since they brock
throu the Bulk head and had connection with them —— I never could have thought that there wair So many abandond wrecches
in England, the[y] are ten thousand time worse than the men Convicts, and I am affraid that we will have a great dele more
trouble with them —— the wind, S:E: our Course, WB:S: went by the Log 101 miles.

a great many Porposus a bout the Ship, which the Seamen Say is a Sure Sign that it will blow hard —— I dreamt of my
beloved Betsey last night —— wind S:B:E Course NB:S: went by the Log 73 miles, have had no obs. these two days

Modrat and clear Wether, Saw two large Duch Ship a running to the ye. Eatsward, bore down to Leward to speak the Agent
—– dreamt again of being with my dear Alicia, I hope in god that ther is nothing the matter with them. I trust in him that my
dear Boy has got well over the Small Pox, what would his fond father, give to know —— wind NB:S Course NB:N: went by
the Log 65 miles, Obs. to day Latt 48-56N
exceedingly Sea Sick, strong wind with drizzling rain, with a large Swell running from ye. S:W: the Commd. made the Signal, for the Ships to close —— wind S:S:W: and Variable Course NB:S1/2S: no obs. to day

20

exceedingly Sea Sick still, strong wind and constant Rain, begine to think that Seing many Porposus, is a Sign of blowing hard, a great number of those fish about the Ship —— the Commd. made the Signal for the Ships to close —— Still a very large Swell from the S:W: —— the Commdore made the Signal to Wair Ships and haild use and gave orders to put the Convicts out of irons and order use to order the other Transports to doe the same, at the same time informing use to get our letters redy that the Hayena would part with the fleet for England tomorrow —— the Hayena made the Signal to Speak the Commd. haild the Alexander, Charlotte, Scarborough to put the Convicts out of Irons —— Sat down to writ a letter to my dear Beloved wife and most Sinceer friend on earth —— God out of his great goodness give her health and that of our dear Sweet Boy, if I had either his mother or him I would eat them up with love and kisses —— have been exceedingly Sick all day, not able to hold up my head —— Sent my letter by Capt Walton to my ever dear belove and Tender Alicia for him to put on board the Hayena —— Capt Walton went on board the Commd. respecting putting all the Convicts out of Irons, as Capt Merideth and Self don't think is Save for so great a number to be out of irons at once. the Commd. inform the Capt of the Ship that Since there was so great a number of the Mercurys on board of use, to put them out when we think proper and on the Smales falt to put them in again —— the Hayena parted company with the fleet, thank god that my letter is on board of her, I think if I had waited untill to morrow, should have miss the oppotunity of sending it as a great number has done —— I wish I had been the Bearer of the dear letter to my Alicia, then I should be quite happy —— wind WB:S Course WB:S: went by the Log 65 miles Latt 47-51N:

21

Very Sea Sick this day —— thank God that the Hayena has got so good a wind, my beloved woman will have my letter Sooner than if the wind was against her —— wind S:E: and our Course W:N:W: Latte. obs. in to day 47-28N: went by the Log 48 Miles

22
much better than I was Yesterday —— the Commd. made the Signal for the fleet to Tack —— Light Breeses and hazey, wind Variable Course W:N:W: went by the Log 44 miles Latt: 46:59.N: ——

23
did nothing but dream all last night, but being with my most Sinceer Betsey and Son —— oh my god never did a man long So much after any thing than I doe to know how they Both are, what would I give for a letter from her dear hand but why doe I think of inpossabilitys because I love them tenderly with a Sincer hart, as ever man loved woman —— modrat Wether to day —— the Ship very healthy only a few Sea Sick —— Wind W:B:W: Course S:W:B:S: went by the Log 90 miles Latte. 45-40N

24
a little Sea Sick to day, a strong wind and Squaly with a great Swell from the West —— a great number of fish about the Ship —— wind West Course S:W:B:S: went by the Log 83 Miles Latt 44-10N

25
not Sea Sick to day, hope it has quite left me, hope the Hayena has got Save home and my beloved Betsey has got her fond Clarks Letter. I wish I could send her a nother —— a strong wind from the N:W: and cloudy Wether, exceedingly hot to day. Ships Course S:W: went by the Log 109 miles Latt 42:19N.

26
Shortened Sail to Speak the agent. a fresh of wind and cloudy Wether, wind from the N:E: Sailing to the S:W a find wind for use to Teneriff, hope to be there in a few days if this wind continue —— went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon 109 miles Latte. ob 40:40 North ——

27
a large Swel from the NW: Strong wind from the N:E: and cloudy —— Ships course S:W: Went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon 1251/2 Miles 38:39 Latt.

28

have not been Sea Sick for these Several days, hope in god it has left me —— dreamt last night of being with my Beloved Alicia, at Mr. Bedlakes, hope in god that there is nothing the matter with her or my Sweet Boy —— Saw a large ship standing to ye. Northward —— was the first on board that Saw her, Saw also a Brigg a standing to the Southward —— hope to be at Teneriff in two or three days if this wind Stands, the wind blows very Strong from the NE with a great Sea following use —— Ships course S:W: flog this day John Bennet, a Convict, with 37 Lashes for breaking out of Irons, a young man But an old Rogue —— read Part of the Story of the Humble friend in the Lady Magazien, for the Year 1775, very much taking with it —— went by the Log Since yesterday 12 oClock, 131 miles Latt 36—03N

29

fresh Gales and Hazey wether —— Shortened Sail for the Ships a Stairn, the Commd. made the Signal for the Ships to close —— read part of the Humble friend again this day, admire the Caracter of Mr. Audley —— wind from the N:E: Ships Course S:W: went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon 155 miles, not bad going —— Latt: none to day ——

30

fresh wind and Squally with Drizzling rain at times —— carried away the main Top Gallant Mast, Soon after got up another, a great Swell running from the N.E. —— Saw the land which proved to be the Island of Sancto, one of the Canarys Bearing W:N:W: distance from use about 3 or 4 Leagues —— I wish that it was the St Nicolas, then I should not be long before I Should See my beloved Alicia and dear Sweet Boy, I wish to God I know how the[y] was, then I should be a little more happier than I am at present —— went by the Log Since Yesterday 12 oClock 99 miles Latte obs. in to day 32.13 North.

31
Light Breezes and Pleasant Weather and at times inclineable to calm —— the agent made our Signal to Speak him Shortened Sail for that purpose and for the Ship astairn to come up —— the wind from the N.E: Blow a little fresh in the night Ships course SB:W: went by the Log Since Yesterday noon 90 miles Obs. to day 30:43N

* MS reads “1 1/2 pound and half”. 
JUNE 1787

June the 1st.

Pleasant Weather a little wind from the W.S.W: the ship course S:B:W: calm the most of the last night — went by the Log Since Yesterday noon only 58 miles Latt obs. in today 29 50 North

2d.

calm mostly alday lay too for the Ship astairn to come up —— Saw the Island of Salvages a nother of the Canarys Bearing SW of use about 4 or 5 Leagues —— Shortened Sail to Speak agent —— went by the Log only a fue miles no obs. Vation to day ——

3

Light Breezes and inclinable to calm the little wind that there is from the S W B W: Ships head S.B.W: the Commd. made the Signal for Ships to tack last night — the Island of Teneriff in Sight distance 12 Leagues. 1 P.M. a good Breeze — the Commd. made the Signal for the Ships to gett into ther stasion —— at Eight oClock at night come to ane Anchor in the Roade of St Cruze, Island of Teneriff, one of the Canarys —— the Shore looks from the Ship but high Baron Rocks, hope that I shall have ane opportunity at this place by Some Ship going to Some port in Europe to send a letter to my dear heavenly Woman, god only knows how much I love her and what I would goe throu for it to be of any Service to her how I long to Know how my Ralphie is. I hope that he is alive and in good health ——

4

Lieut Long came on board with orders at Six oClock in the morning from Majr. Ross and Capt Phillip and also to inform use that if we wish to be introduced to the Spanish Govenour that Majr. Ross would doe it and for use to be onboard the Sirius at 11
oClock from whence he should goe with the Officers that come on board for that purpose. Capt Meredith and I declaind going But Mr. Faddy went. Major Ross came on board respecting 2 Serjeants whome Capt Meredith had confined for a Court Martial for unsoldierly Behaviour —— Majr. Ross told Capt Meredith that he would not try them although he said the[y] ought both to hanged for the offence (a very pretty Way of carr[y]ing on Service I must own) and order them both to be released —— our Ship drove of the Bank and was oblige to get the anchor up and goe out to Sea and make a Tack Come again to an Anchor —— the Commd. and Major Ross came on board and order all the Convicts to be put out of Irons with Strick order for them to be put in Irons again on the Smales offence and inform use that ther should [be] wine and fresh Beef for the whole of use while we remained here and that ther was a Spanish Packet to sail for old Spain to morrow after noon and if we would Send our letters on board of his Ship he would Send them Save for use (for the orders left by Lt. Long See the orderly Book) Satt down a wrot part of a letter to my Sinceer and affectioned wife —— Several Boats came off with thing from the Shore to Sell was in hopes that we should have got Some fruit heer but it not being the time of Year excep for green figgs and Pumkings —— never Saw the Kings birth day worse kept than this ——

5

got by Six oClock to finshis my letter to my adorable Alicia wrot one also to Mr. Hartwell —— went on board the Alexander Transport & According to the orders of Yesterday to enquire into the merrits of a complaint made by first Lieut John Johnstone agains two of his men and to report to the Commanding Officer whether are grounds for a general Court Martial —— got almost over set by the poppling Sea —— Sent my letters on board the Sirius god grant them a Save passaged and a Quick one —— the Sun exceedingly hott

6

the Sun very hot endeed wish that we wair gone from heer —— hope the Ship will not get Sickly —— thank god She is very from that at Present thru the great attention of Mr. Arundell the Doctor —— went on board the Scarborough with Arundell to dine with Shea, Kellow, Davy and the Doctor ——

7
have had fresh Beef for these two days past it is very poor but exceedingly Sweet I wish we could have it all the passage ——
the fleet getting Waterd as fast as possible —— the Ship as full of vats as She can hold Very hot indeed have not been in shore
nor doe I intend it having no money to Spend —— the Shore looks very Baren the Peke is the highest land that I ever Saw ——
orders came on board for which See the orders in the orderly of this date ——

8

gone on board the Alexander Transport according to the orders of Yesterday as a Pro[vost?] but was obliged to sitt as a
Member of the Court Martial in the room of Lieut Sharp —— Exceedingly hott the Sun to day

9

the Sun remarkable hott sat down after dinner and wrot a letter to my Beloved Alicia my most Sineer Betsey Alicia Clark as I
find the Commander means to Sail to Morrow and as there is a English Brigg heer loading for London —— Capt Merideth and
Mr. Arundell the Surj went on Shore and bought a great number of Pumkings Wine and other Stock for the Mess no fruit of any
kind to be had ——

10

get up by day light and wrot the rema inder of the letter to my honour wife which I left unfinished Yesterday and went on
board the Scipio Capt Kirkman with it wher I found that he was to call at Plymouth for T.Pilot —— I wish that I know that
before wrot on board of the Scipio on the Back of my letter Per Favour of Capt Kirkman of the Scipio —— Should have wrot a
nother letter theer for my Beloved but the Commd. made the Signal for the whole fleet to wight at 5 oClock in the Morning very
little wind and the Sun exceedingly hott I hope we shall find more fruit at St Jagoes than we have done at this Place ——

11

no wind this day the Ships head all round the Compass —— Teneriff and the Grand Canarys both in Sight Latt ob 20-0 North
calm most part of the this day Teneriff and the Grand Canarys in Sight —— order came on board for which See the orderly book of this date —— not very well this day I hope I am not going to be Sick —— dream of b[e]ing with my amiable Alicia last night at Mr. Kempsters —— hope she is not ill —— Lat obd. in 27-3N

Worse than I was Yesterday gracious God for the Sake of my beloved wife and dear Sweet Boy restore me again to health which you have heather to blessed me with merciful god —— wind S:W: and a good Breze Course S:W:B:W: —— the Agent made our Signal to Speak him went by the Log Since Yesterday noon 95 miles, no obsvn

Exceedingly ill this day oh my God for Your Servant my dear Alicia's Sake dont for Sake me —— took ane ematick by the doctors orders, very ill after it —— the doctor very kind gave me Some thing else in the Evening —— hope that we will be at St. Jagoe in 3 or four days at most if this wind stands —— Shortend Sail often for Ships a Stiern —— Close Weather with rain at times —— Wind NE Ship course SW:B:W went by the Log 95 miles Latt obsevade in To day 23:28 North

a little better to day I never wish'd more to see my Alicia than now —— Oh my God what it is to Love so tenderly as I doe my dear Sweet Alicia and Son —— order to take the Bark —— much Troubled with the hart Burn Since ever I was first taking ill —— hope in God will again be quit well in a few day —— Shortened Sail for the Ships a stairn —— Strong wind and Pleasing Weather —— Wind EN:E: the Ships course S:W: went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon 130 Miles Latt observade in To day 23:28 North
Thank my gracious God for being so much better to day, I trust in his goodness that he his hard my prayers, oh if my dearly dearly Beloved woman know that I was ill how unhappy She would be, Blessed God Protect her and my Sweet Ralphie in health and welfare is my constante Prayer —— often Shortened Sail for the Ships a Stairm to come up to day —— Still Strong wind and Plesant Weather —— wind N.E: and a good wind for use course S:W: went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon untill to day 12 oClock 157 Miles Latte. observad in to day 21..23 North

a great dele Better than I have been Yet thank my God for it also Mr. Arundell for his kind atten tion —— Strong wind Still and Plesant Weather with a following Sea —— Wind N:EB:E the Ship Course S:W1/2S and went by the Log Since 12 oClock untill to day Noon 174 Miles —— Not bad going for a Transport deeply loaded —— Latte. obs. 18:55 North

Quit well to day thanks to my blessed God our heavenly father for being So good to me and family hope in the Lord that my ever honourd dearly Beloved wife and Sweet Boy are well then I am compleatly happy —— fresh gales from the NEBE and Hazey Weather —— Shortened Sail for the Ships a stairn —— Split the Fore Top Sail —— the Comr. made the Signal for the fleet to Shorten Sail —— Saw the Island of St Lucia one of the Cape De Vere Islands —— Ships cours S:SW: went by the Log Since Yesterday 166 miles from 12 Noon untill 12 to day Latt 16.30

Quit Recovered from my late illness —— cannot Return too much thanks to my maker for it —— dreamt of being with Reynolds at the Lovells last night hope he is well poor fellow —— Still Strong wind from the E:N:E: with Hazey Weather —— the Ship Stiring S:B:E: —— Saw the land of the Island of Bonavista another of the Cape De Vere Island —— The Comd. made the Signal for the Ship to come in to there Stations Lay too for 5 hour —— 10 oClock the Island of May another of the Cape De
Vere —— 11 oClock Lay the Land of the Island of St Jagoe —— Capt Meridith put the four Convict women Elizh. Dudgeon, Marget Hall, Elizh. Pully, Charlott Ware out of Irons whome I had put in Irons on the 9 of this month for fighting ther was never three great whores living than they are, the four of them that Went throu the Bulk head while we lay at the Mother Bank —— I am convinced the[y] will not be long out of them the[y] are a disgrase to ther Whole Sex B . . . ..s that they are I wish all the Women Wair out of the Ship —— Log Since Yesterday Noon Untill to day dito 104 Miles Latte. 14.58 North—

20

I am greatly disapointed in the Commr. not going after attemting it the wind would not let use —— most wait with patience untill we get to South America which is a very long passaged —— Gentle Breezes from the E:N:E: and Hazey Weather our Course South —— how long will it be before I heer from my Beloved Alicia —— went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon Untill to day dito 99 Miles Latt 13.13N

21

the Sun very hot to day —— what will it be Should we be becalmd on the Line —— Modrate Breeze from the N:E: —— Ships course South —— all the fleet in company —— Log for 24 hours 108 Miles Latt 11:57 North

22

to-morrow oh my Great God three Years is the day that you made me the most happy of men on the face of the earth for Which I shall never forget your goodness, for never did man posses Such Treasure before as is centerd in her, dear Blessed Woman the most tender best and Beautifulest of her Sex, god out of his great goodness grant her health and wellfare is the Sinceer Prayer of Your Servant —— O Lord I will alwayse keep the 23rd. of June as long as I have breath in my Body and alwayse make it a happy day of it Wheather at home or a Broad —— I have ask Capt. Walton, Mr. Laurance the first Mate and Mr. Short the 2d Mate of the Ship to par take along with my Mess Mates and Self of my happiness and will Spend the day as happy as the Ship will per mitt if I thought that I Should have been So unhappy at leaving my family behind I should never have come away from them —— I did not know half how much I love them or all the gains on earth Should never have made me
leave them O dear Sweet Alicia my dear Beloved Alicia and Sweet Boy —— Modrat Breeze from the N —— Course South Log 77 Miles Latt 10.47 N.

23

Blessed Lord God, Heavenly father, accept of my Prayer and thanks for my Self and Your Servant Betsey Alicia for joing our hands and Hearts this day three Years in happy Union —— Oh Gracious Jesus in what manner Shall I humble myself to make you ane recompence for giving me so heavenly a Gift —— oh my Beloved God protect her and Self in health and welfare and that of our dear plege of our love which you have been So kind and good to give use Bless him in all his Actions and be his protector good Jesus, what would I give to bee with my Sinceer Alicia this day —— I only want that to make me most Sinceerly happy for with her I cannot be otherwayse than happy dear Heavenly woman the best of wives the most Sineerest friend and the kindest of Mothers where is a nother to be found her equal —— none on earth tender Beautiful Lovely to excess happy man that I am —— never after it pleases god that I Return to my much Beloved Alicia Shall any thing Seperat me from them dear good Woman I did not know thy Worth or I should not gone on this long absents —— oh how I long for the months to fly away to restore to my Alicia my friend my dear wife and Beautiful little engaging Son oh Sweet boy what would Your father give for a kiss of Your Mother and You —— oh I think I heer him cry pappa pappa as I am taking my hat to goe out —— dear Sweet Sound musick to my poor ears the only happiness that I have is the kissing of my Betseys dear Pictor and my little Boys hair that She Sent —— I would not part with them for a Captains Commission for with out them I Should be the most unhappy of men now living —— May the Almighty be a guard over my wife Son and Self then we shall want for nothing —— I could write abouth them for ever but most leave off and See a bout getting dinner —— thank god that it is Still Modrate Breeze from the North as I now can enjo y my friends the better as I wish to be happy —— This day wind from the E:N:E: Course South went by the Log 60 Miles —— The Weather been cloudy had no obervation to day ——

24

Made my friends as happy as I in the Ship could and the[y] wair happy as the[y] Saw that it maid me happy on Account of it being Yesterday may Weding day — I gave them a cold dinner wine Beer and Cyder which was all that I had —— the doctor Faddy and Self Sagn untill 10 oClock at Night —— dear happy day I hope my dear Alicia keep it when My God Shall She and I
be together to keep it —— god only knows how Much I love her never did man love Woman So as I doe her dear Tender Soul the best of her Sex, if God keeps me in life I will always have Some friends to dine with me that day for it was the best and happiest day that ever I Saw and will also keep that of our dear Sons dear Sweet Boy —— I hope that he will be like his mother then he will be Beautiful in deed —— have a pain in my head to day from the drinking Yesterday hope it will goe off Soon otherwayse very well —— hope to remain So for my Alicia and Son's Sake —— Dreamt last night that Mrs. Copland was bringt to Bed of a Son if So I wish her joy or when ever it is and wish Mattw. all the happiness that this world affords Departed this life Patrick Delany Convict which has been Expected ever Since he came on board —— a fue Sick only but non very bad Excep Parkenson one of the Convict women which is her own falt —— Thunder and Lightening all round —— Shours of havey rain —— Log 51 —— Wind South —— Latt to day 9.11 North.

25

Thunder and Lightening with Havey Shours of Rain all day —— Log 43 Latte. 8:38 North.

26

Light airs of wind and Verable the Sun Exceedingly hott to day Log 29 miles —— I wish to god that the wind would come fair otherwayse we shall make a long passaged and the Ship will get very Sickly —— thank god that we have none on board that is very bad —— Latt 8.48 North gone ten miles back again than wher we was Yesterday—

27

Very havey Squals of wind and rain all day —— all the Ships in company —— Log 42 Miles Latte. 8:8 North

28

dreamt of being with my beloved Alicia —— oh why did the dear Sweet Woman learn me to believe in dreems if she had Should not have been so unhappy as I am at this present momont from dreaming that my Alicia took a dead louse from herself
and gave it me —— oh unlucky dream for have often herd her say that dreaming of lise was a certain Sign of Sickness —— oh my Gracious God protect her and Son in health and welfare is the most Sincer prayer of her fond and affectioned Clark —— when ever it pleases god to restore me to my dear beloved Betsey my fond wife and dear Sweet boy never will I leave them for living as I have done Since that fatal day the 12 of March last have been in Missary ever Since —— Havey Squals of rain and wind with dito of thunder and Lightening —— Log 28 miles Latt 7:32 North.

29

Saw a strange Sail to the South west standing to the W. —— She hoisted portigues Coulors and comig dount to Speake the Comd. who sent his boat on board of her find that She is bound from Lisbon bound Rio Janirio in South America the Same place that we are going too —— wish in Christ that the wind wo uld come fair —— a great number of fish about the Ship —— Mr. Laurance the first mate caught three Dolphins and one Bonetta with the grains —— gentle Breeze and pleasent Weather Log 63 miles Since Yesterday 12 oClock Latte. by ob 7:31 North

30

Very little wind all day and that from the Southwd the worst wind that can blow for Use —— the Portigues Vessel in Company and going the Same Way that we are —— Log 43 Miles Latte. by obs. 7:27 North
JULY 1787

July the first

Squaly all round with constant Heavy rain all day —— dreamt again of being at home with my dear Betsey my only friend —— it must be from doing nothing the Whole day but of thinking about them that makes me dream So often of them —— I hope they are well then I am happy —— Log 57 miles —— Latte. 6.55 North

2

fresh wind and Cloudy Weather —— The Commr. made the Signal to tack Ship all the fleet in Company —— The Portigues could not keep up with use parted Company with her in the night —— Log 80 Miles Latt by obs. 6:39 North.

3

was caled up by the Capt of the Ship last night informing use that his men had brock thrue the Womens Convicts Bulk head again and that he had caught four of the women in the mens place —— four of the Number that had gone thrue while we lay at the Mother Bank & two of them that I had put in Irons while we lay at Teneriff for fighten —— I thought as I have Said before that these D...d troubelsem Whores it would not not be long before the[y] gott ther again —— made the Signal to Speak the Comr. the Capt went on board the Commr. who order the men that the women wair with to be brought on board of him Sent the Carpenter the Boatswain the Steward and one of the Seamen being the four men that Elizh. Dudgeon Elizh. Pully Elizh. Thackly Sarah McCormick wair with Whome the Comr. flogd except the Carpenter and order the four Women to be keep in Irons all the Way —— if I had been the Commr. I Should flogd the four Whores also —— fresh Breeze from the Southard Log 54 miles Latt the Same as Yesterday —— order came on board from Major Ross for which See in the order Book of this date
little wind to day Log 47 miles Latte. 6:22 North —— last night one of the Marines wives was brought to Bed of a fine Boy the Child has got a defect in his right hand otherwise the Mother and it are as well as the come Saying is as can be expected

caught a large Shark to day —— the agent made the Signal for all Masters —— the master went on board the Commodore to Riceeve orders and returned Soon after with a Shoulder of Mutton from the Commr. to Mr. Faddy wife Servant who was yesterday brought to bed and also with following order Respeting the Water

When the Sirius hoist a Blue flag with a Yellow Cross at the Main Top Gallant Mast head the officers Seamen Marines and Convicts are the to goe on allowance of water —— Three pints for the Twenty four hours, one half to be served in the Morning and the remainder in the afternoon —— A Lieutenant of Marines with a Serjeant or Corporal and tuo of the Convicts always to be present when the Water is Served that part of Hold wher the Water is kept is never to be opend but in the presence of those appointed to See the Water Served and the Serjeant or Corporal and the two Convicts are to be changed every day —— the Water that is Necessary for the Stock is to be given out at the time the Water is Served to the people and the Quantity Issued daily to be marked in the Ships Log Book.

The Surgeon to have whate Water he Judges Necessary for the Sick and a proper Quantity of Water is to be delivered out every morning for the Coppers which the Officer and Men appointed to See the Water Served will See put in the Coppers —— The Orders to be read to the Ships Company the Marines and Convicts.

One Quart of Water a man to be allowed for the Coppers

Sign

M: S: Sirius at Sea July 5 1787

A Phillip

a bout four oClock this after noon the Sirius made the above Signal for the fleet to be put on the above allowance of Water —— I hope in Christ that the wind will come fair, that we may not be put on a shorter allowance than three pints in the Twenty four hours, for it is a great Way to Rio Janiero and no licklyhoods of Getting ther Soon with this Wind —— I trust in gods goodness that he will protect use from Sickness as he has hitherto done —— Spoke Kellow and Davy who informed use that Capt. Shea was very ill and that it was the Surgeons oppinion that he would not live I hope he will Recover for his wife and
Young family Sake for no body knows the loss of Parent but them that has Experienced Such a loss for instance My Beloved Betsey when she lost her Tender Mother dear good Woman she was; a loving wife and a Most Tender and Kind Mother, a Sincere friend with ane open hand and purse to the needy and poor —— my dear Beloved Alicia has all the Virtues of the Best of Women that Was (her Mother) —— Capt. Walton has given me a puppy have cald it Efford after the dear Sweet place wher first I came acquainted with my Alicia my Virtious Wife —— Capt Merideth order one of the Corporals to flog with a rope Elizh. Dudgeon for being impertinent to Capt. Meridith —— the Corporal did not play with her but laid it home which I was very glad to see —— then order her to tied to the pump She has been long fishing for it which She has at last got untill her hearts containt —— Latte. [*]

6

Nothing exstrodinary to day —— Latte. [*]

7

catched to very fine Bonaties with the grains to day —— Latte. [*]

Sunday the 8 July 1787

catched a very large Shark one Bonetta 2 Dolphin with the hook and one very large Dolphin withe grains —— thank god for the fish as it is a very good fresh male and Made into chouder eats most Excellence —— I wish we may get Some fish Every day which will Save our Stock as it begins to grow low having now only 5 fouls and one Small pigg beloning to the Mess —— Saw a Sloop Standing to the North Ward the Commr. made the Signall for the fleet to tack came up withe Sloop that we Saw in the morning —— the Supply Spoke her dont know wher She is from or Bound too —— Latte. [*]

Munday the 9 July 1787

catched a large She Shark this morning with 37 Young ones in her —— the Same Weather that we have had for these 8 days
past thank god for his goodness in Keeping Use from Sickness and permitting the two or three that have being Slightly ill to recover —— Spoke the Alexander Transport —— Saw John Johnson my old companion in the Dutch Service and Maitland Sharp my old School fellow well as also Balmain the Surgeon and all on board very well —— Latte. [*]

**Tuesday the 10 July 1787**

Was taking very ill in the Night order Some Phisex was very ill all day I wish to god the wind would change —— the Weather has been Exceeding hott for these Several days past and very little wind —— Latte. [*]

**Wednesday the 11**

Still very ill and have been all Night could not close my Eyes for thinking what would become of my belove Alicia and dear Sweet Boy if any thing Should happen to me —— Gracious God Spair me for My wife and childs Sake o Blesed Christ doe —— for what will become of them —— order again to take the bark the doctor informs me that my illness is only from the change of climat and that I will be well again in a day or two —— I trust in god that he will be so good as to restore me a gain to my former good state of health —— Latte. [*]

**Thursday the 12**

thank my Gracious God for his goodness in given me health again hope to be quite well in a day or two —— dreamt last night of having been with my dear Alicia and Miss Turner in dock and that my Tender love was sitting at the fire with her night cap on and Seemd very low— I hope in gods goodness that ther is nothing the matter with her for if I know ther was I should certainly goe mad —— heavens grant ther is nothing amiss with her or our dear child —— god preserve them Both is my most Sinceer prayer —— I Shall now be the most Unhappy of men living untill I dream of them again —— oh why did my Betsey make me believe So much in dreams —— I hope that I shall dream of My dearest wife my most Sinceer friend (what Tender name shall I Mention of my Alicia that will make it Sound more dear to my Ears for she is by all that is Sacrad the most lovely of Women) to night —— nothing Extraordinary has happend to the fleet Since my last and have gone very little on our way to Rio Janerio —— Latte [*]
Friday the 13

the fleet all in company thank god I was with my betsey last night again by which I am to day in a little better Spirits than I was Yesterday the dreaming last night of My betsey given me Gold has quite recoverd me again —— Thanks to Mr. Arundell also for his very Kind attention for he realy is very Kind and tender to me when I am any wayse ill —— I know that if my Alicia was here She would thank him most kindly for it —— Spoke the Scarborough and Kellow informd me that Capt. Shea was much better thank god for it and I am heartly glade it is so for his Wife and Young family Sake —— Latte. [*]

Saturday the 14

I am exceedingly glade that we have got over the line to day at Six oClock hope we will have a little better wind this Side of the World than we had the other Side —— read this day part of the Tragady of Douglas oh with what Sinceer love dose Lady Randolph exspress herself for the Death of Douglas & her lost child and the timeless death of her Brother, in the begining of the first Act —— how hard it is on the part of Lord Randolph who loves his wife Sinceerly and she only Returns that love with friendship —— I love the character of Anna, but I am affraid that Glenalvan from his first Speech has Some Treachery in Vue hope not but Some thing fortells me he has —— Latte. [*]

Sunday the 15

the weather Exceedingly hot —— all the fleet in company and Ship will lay her course with the wind would come a little more aft —— amonst other thing that in conversation after dinner the Coudrys family was brought on the carpet When Mr. Faddy informed the company that if ever woman was . . . . . . . . . . . that Hanah Coudry was while at Mrs. Fuges in Stone House by Mr. Perry then also at Fuges —— I ask him how he could Say So, Faddy made Answer that he was certain of it as Mr. Perry had as good as told him So —— I thought when I went to See Miss Coudry at Mr. Simons in Plymouth after Mr. Fuges— things wair told off that Mr. Perry then took libertys with her while I was in the Room that he as a married man Should not have done and more So on her Side as a Virtious Young Woman ought not to have Sufferd, which I mentioned to my beloved Betsey, the moment that I came home —— if it is So as Mr. Faddy Says, I am exceedingly Sorry for her father and Mother and her other two Sisters but cannot Say I am very Sorry for her to take up with a man whome She know was a Married man and a
father of a family and he cannot be any thing but a Rascal which certainly most be —— Latte [*]

Munday the 16

thank God for having the Wind a little More fair that we had it for the 3 weeks past —— hope we will get into port in a fortnight now if this wind stands —— Read the remainder of the Tragady of Douglas this oh it is a Sweet play —— what an innocent Sweet Speech that is of Young Norval when he informs Lord and Lady Randolph whom he is and wher his father lives, on the Grampine hills —— My father feeds his flock & & and what are the emotions in the Breast of Lady Randolph when She Sees the features and shape of her lost and Stained Husband Douglas in that of Young Norval —— little dose She know fond Mother that he is her long lost Son or she would not have let him gone to the field with her Lord —— What a Villain Glenalvon is if it had not been for him her Son had lived and She fond mother had not taken the rash step which She did —— but Still I cannot think that She Loved as my Betseys My Virtuous Alicia dose —— heavens knows how much She and I loves, the Tear of Sorrow would not Refrain from rolling down my cheeks at the affecting Scain in this play. The Commondor made the Signal for the fleet to make more Sail —— Latte. Obs. To day 1:23 South —— poor Efford got his leg hurt this morning I hope he will recover on Account of the Name of the dear Sweet place I have cald him after —— Latte. [*]

Tuesday the 17

thank god that we have got a fair wind at last —— gave one of the men convicts Some Silk thread white to cover Some button moules also Some cotton thread which Arundell gave me to get a pair of groves’ made of —— the day Exceedingly hott —— hope we will be at Rio in fourteen days from this —— all the fleet in Company —— thank God that I have been So Exceedingly well for these Several days past hope in Christ I will remain So —— Latte. 4.17 South

Wednesday the 18

Saw the Alexander Send her Boat on board the Charlott and Return on board with Mr. White the Surgeon General —— the Alexander Soon after made the Signal to Speak the Commondore from which I think that Some of the officers on board of her are dead or very ill or the Ship is become very Sickly —— I hope in god neather for Should Sickness once come into the Ship
dreadfull most be the consequence hope in my Great God that he will keep use from it, as his goodness has all along done —— Sure he is very kind to use, and much we ought to thank him for it from the bottom of my heart I Return him my thanks morning and night —— Sergt. Stuarts Youngest child was most kild by one of the Convicts letting it drop out of his hand into the fore hold —— I should have been Exceedingly Sorry if any thing Should happen to it, for it is a Sweet little fellow and alway puts me in mind of my dr. Sweet Ralphie when I See it —— the Supply Brigg haild use and ask use if we had Spoke the commondor to day —— Answered not he then told use that is was the Comms. orders that we Should have two Quarts a Water a day in the Room of three pints —— thank god for —— Elizh. Barbur one of the Convict Women abused the Doctor in a most terrible man[ner] and Said that he Wonted to . . . .her and cald him all the names that She could think of —— after dinner Capt. Meredith enquird into the matter and ask her how She could raise Such a report and abuse Mr. Arundell So She Still in Sisted that it was true She was very much in liquor —— She was order on a pair of leg irons when She getting them on She begane to abuse Capt. Meridith in a much worse manner than She had done the doctor —— She cald him every thing but a Gentle man and Said She was no more a Whore than his wife —— She then begane and abused Faddy and I wonder how She come to forget me amonst the number, in all the course of my days I never hard Such exspertions come from the Mouth of human being —— the Capt order her hands to tied be hind her back and to be gact to prevent her from making noise —— She hoped and She was certain that she Should See use all thone over board before we got to Botany Bay— from the Bottom of my heart I dont think that the doctor Mr. Arundell ever offer any Such a thing to that Brute —— She disired Meredith to come and kiss her C . . . for he was nothing but a Lousy Rascall as we Wair all —— I wish to god She Was out of the Ship —— I would reather have a hundered more men th an to have a Single Woman —— I hope in the Ships that ever I May goe in herafter there may not be a Single Woman —— caught two Bonatas this Morning but the Seamen caught them So none came to our Share —— Latte. [*]

Thursday the 19

Elizh. Barbur Remaind in that position that She was left in untill 6 oClock this Morning when She was let goe down and order up again and her hands again tied behind her back —— the Seamen caught a very fine fish to day morning —— I am glad to find that Sergt. Stuarts little Boy is better and the doctor Says that it has no bones brok —— A great number of fish about the Ship to day —— the fleet is very much Scatter —— Latte. obs. to day 5:58 South.

Friday the 20
the Convict woman order to be punished the Same way as Yesterday— the day Exceedingly hott —— caught by the Seamen 2 Bonattas both very large fish a great number about the Ship —— hoisted out a boat to Scrub the Sides and bottom She being exceedingly foull with grass and Shells —— Lay too to let the Lady Penryn come up. She Sailing So Exceedingly bad —— Served out the water to day begining my Second week for all hands on Board According to the order Received the Commondor —— made the Supplys Signal to come within haile —— Latt ob in to day 6:51 South

Saterday the 21

got wett this morning in Seing the Water Served out for the Ships Company and lost my pencle by it —— the day a great dele cooler than it was Yesterday —— gave one of the men convicts Some thread to make me a nett for my head as the night caps are too warm and the[y] come of every night —— the young child that was born the third of this month in the morning is also crippled in its right leg —— I am Exceedingly Sorry for it poor little thing its hand is the Same as a ducks foot— the doctor has cut the fingers a Sunder once and will be obliged to cut them once more when we comes into harbour —— have not found myself So well Since I have been at Sea —— Slept Exceedingly well all night —— have come to a Resulition not to open the case that contains my dear beloved wifes picture but once a week for fear that Some accident Should befall it So that So that I must now be content to kiss the little bag that it contains dear Sweet treasures —— oh my beloved woman little doe you know how much I love you I god only knows to what Excess that I doe —— got my frame finished for my Betsey but I doe not think it good a nuff for her but Since I had It made for her will keep it untill I am able to give it her —— oh when Shall that happy time come I wish it was to morrow —— got a nother pair of my Trouser done have only on pair more to doe —— gave a pair of old Stocking to be cutt up to make me Socks being in great Wont of them —— Latt ob in to day 7:58 South —— the Convict finished my Gloves this afternoon the[y] fitt very well —— Shall give him thread to make me another pair for I am in great Want of them —— had Some chouder for dinner to day thank God for it as I have had not a fresh dinner this week before —— hope we shall be able to get Some fish to morrow —— the fleet very much scaterd —— the Commondore made the Charlett and Boroughdoles Signal to close or to come nearer him

Sunday the 22

got up this Morning early and washd my Self all over —— the Supply Brigg haid use and ask use what was our reason that
we kept So fare to Wind Ward and why we did not Set our top Gallen Studding Sails —— Faddy has had no Sleep he having a great number Bugges in the Small place wher he Sleeps has kild above a hunder this morning with oil of Tar —— thank God that I have not one in my bed and hope I shall have none —— the Ship is Swarming with them every body complains of them Except Capt. Meredith and Self who Sleep in cotts —— Latte. obs. in to day 9 8 South —— Capt Meridith put Margt. Hall one of the Woman in irons for Sh . . . . . . between decks he handcuf her with Elizh. Barbar that abandond wrech and took her leg irons off — I thought as I have Said once before that Margett Hall would Not be long out of these orniments that I put on her at Teneriff for her bad behaviour ther —— She was one of the Woman that went throu the Holl to the Seamen at the Mother Bank —— Spoke the Scarborough and find them all well on board which I am very Glade —— hope the[y] will remain So as I wish the Whole fleet

Munday the 23

hard Squales with havy rain but thank god the wind is come abaft the beam —— I now that we will be in Rio in a few days wher I hope to be able to Send a letter a Way home the day after our arrival to my ever dear and Tender Alicia Clark my much beloved wife —— what would I give to heer from her and that She and my Son are well dear Sweet fellow —— I Suppose that he has forgott his fond father who loves his mother and him dearly —— Latte. ob to day 10:10 South —— gave Mrs. Hart one of the Convict woman Some thread to make me a nother pair Trousers —— the Commdore carried away his main Top Sail Yard in the Slings —— the doctor desired Margt. Hall out of Irons being very unwell

Tuesday the 24

it blowd very hard in the night —— the fleet all in company —— put Mrs. McNa Mara both legs in Irons for being very impertinent to the Convict cook put also again Elizh. Barbar in Irons who was let out when Margt. Hall was Yesterday She being handcuf with her —— hand cuff her with Elizh. Tackny and put leg Irons on Eliz Pully who was hand cuff with Eliz Tackny before —— got my two Bandows done and the[y] fitt very well hope the[y] will remain better on my head than my night caps —— although the wind blows hard it is fair and hope it will Remain So that we may Soon be at Rio Janeiro —— thank God for being So kind to use, in keeping use So healthy having No Sick on board which is a very great blessing —— latte. obs. in to day 11.49 South
Wednesday the 25

blow very hard in the night —— all the fleet in company —— Split the Jib and main Top Gallen Sails —— a great Sea from the South East —— Shipt Several in the cours of the day —— the doctor beg the S: Mc cormick might be put out of Irons She being very unwell —— Latte. obs in to day 13:26 S the wind has blowing very hard alday and Seems if it would blow harder

Thursday the 26

got very little Sleep from the rolling of the Ship —— blow Exceedingly hard in the night —— Split the fore Top G: Sail in the night —— abused the doctor for giving use So bad a dinner he being co[ok] for the week as a pice of pork Some potatoo and a pumpking piy —— the doctor desired that Eliz Pully might be put out of Irons She being very ill having a blister on her —— a feu Sick on board but none that are very ill —— Latte. 15.4 South —— the commondor made the Signal for to come and See the Longe. by his Time pice which we Saw to be 29.34W —— the Goulden Grove carried away her fore Top G: Mast which is the third Since we left England

Friday the 27

very Squaly with hard Shours of rain —— the Boroughdale carried away her For Top G Mast —— Latte. ob in to day 16:33 South —— gave the wood to the cabinet maker to make my beloved Betsey a writing desk —— hope the[y] will make it well on her Account —— caught 3 Bonettas to day —— gave one to Capt Walton

Saturday the 28

blow very hard in the night —— the Sea carried away the Womans cabouse in the night —— the Commr. made the Signal (a blue Flag at the main Top G: M Head) for the Ships to close and keep near the commanding officer —— Soon after he made the Signal for the Ships to get in to ther Stations (a Blue Flag at the Fore Top G: M. Head) the wind Strong but fair —— the commondore made the Lady Penryns Signal (a whit Flag at the Mizen Peek) to come in to his boat —— Latte. in to day 18:5 South —— Spok the Scarborough all well
Sunday the 29

a very fine Breeze and as fair as it can blow —— the Supply Lieut Ball haild use and informed use to keep a good look out for in the track that we are now going ther is ane Island laid down which the[y] dont know wher abouts it is —— all well on board the Supply —— Capt. Walton kild a very fine hogg and Sent use a loin which is very good of him —— hope Soon to be into port wher we may have fresh Beff again —— opend the case of my dr. Beloved Betsy’s pictour and gave it a hunder kiss dear Sweet woman for herself and my dr. Boy —— latte. ob in to day 19.32 S the convict woman finished the pair of Trousers that I gave her to make and the[y] fit very well —— the commondor made the Signal to come and See the Longe. by his time pice which is 33.12 West —— a very large [*] came close in board the Ship —— a great number of flying fish came on board in the morning Watch

Munday the 30

Still a very find Breeze and what is more a fair wind —— have a great head ack —— Latte. in to day 20:39 South —— dreamt of being with my beloved Betsey and Son god Bless them both —— Capt. Meridith ask me to day if I know a Mrs. Eady of Liskeard as he Says that She know Mrs. Clark and me —— I am Sure that I dont know her and I dont know that my Beloved knows Such a person ther for I never herd her mention Such a name

Tuesday the 31

Still a very fine Breeze the Same wether that we had Yesterday —— all the fleet in company but the Lady Penryn a great Way a stairn —— three or four of the convicts complaining to day of being ill —— the doctor Says that there is none very bad —— Latte. ob in to day 21:48 South

* Clark had a pair of “gloves” made by a convict. See the entry of July 21. 1787, p.29 infra.
AUG 1787

Wednesday August the 1st.

all the fleet in company the Lady Penryn a good way a stairn —— She Sails very bad for She was up with the fleet last night —— the Commandor hoisted his broad pendant at the main Top G: Mast (which is Red with a Swallow Tail) I wonder he did not doe it long before now —— a very fine day the wind the Same as it has been for the Several days past —— hope to be into port in a day or two at most —— Latt. in to day 22:35S —— the commondor made the Signal (a white pendent at the Ensing Staf) to come and See the Lond. by his time pice but he carring to much Sail could not come up with him —— Capt Meridith put Elizh. Barbor and Elizh. Thackny in irons together and Elizh. Dudgeon and Elizh. Pully together —— the doctor having reported them well again Except Sarah McComick —— the damned whores the moment that the[y] got below fel a fighting amonst one a nother and Capt Meridith order the Sergt. not to part them but to let them fight it out which I think he is very wrong in letting them doe so —— the Fisbourn haild use and ask use how we all wair on board and found them all well the same as we are thank God

Thursday the 2

got early up for I could not Sleep on Account of dreaming of being with my beloved Betsey —— hope in god that ther is nothink amiss with her or my Son —— found a strange Sail in company with the fleet who hoisted Portigues coulers —— Soon out Sailed the Stranger although she is standing the Same way that we are —— lost my dog Efford overboard I am apt to think that he was thrown over board by the first mate if I was certain I would make some of the men give him a good thrashing —— I am sorry that I lost him poor dog for he begane to be very fond of me —— the Commandor Sent the Supply Brigg ahead which I think is to look out for the land —— Latte in to day 23–1 South —— the commondore made the Signal (a white pendant at the Ensings staf) for to come and See the Loge. by his time pice which we Saw to be 40:25 West —— the Supply made the Signal (which is hoisting her Ensing) for Seeing the land —— Saw Soon after the land under the Lee Bow

Friday the the 3
got up early to serve the water to all hands on board —— the land very near use but will not get into port as it is quit calm and very likely to remain So —— got my beloved Alicias desk done all to the lock and hinges and green cloath which I hope to be able to get at Rio —— I am happy to find that we are So near a place from whence I shall be able to write to my only friend dear Sweet woman —— what would her fond Clark give to know how She and my dear heavenly Boy is all that I have in the world for to be with them —— the commondore made the Signal (a dutch Jack at the Mizen Top mast head) for the fleet to bring too as he finds the fleet will not be able to come to ane Anchor to night —— Sarah Mccormick taking very ill this after noon —— the doctor has been oblige to Bleed her twice to day and Says that She will not live the night out —— She is now quit Speachless I am apt to think (God forgive) if it is not So, that She is eating up with the P . . . She is one of them that went throu the Bulk head to the Seamen —— I hope She has given them some thing to remember her —— never was ther a Set of greater rascals together than the[y] are —— the[y] are ten thousand times wors than the convicts and if the convicts had any thought to make ther escapt the[y] would assist them

Saterday the 4

the convict woman Still very ill —— the doctor has been oblige to bleed her three times Since Yesterday which makes it 5 times —— little wind all night and very little all to day —— Shall not get into night —— the commordore made the Signal for the fleet to Tack (ane English Jack at the Fore Top En M. Head) about twelfe he Tack again —— two Small boats and a Strange Ship in Sight which come out of the Harbour

Sunday the 5

it was calm all night —— I am affraid that we will not be able to get in to day for ther is no wind —— took my beloved Betseys pictour out of the little bag and kist it a hunder times my dear beloved woman —— hope in god that She is well as that of our dear Sweet boy —— a bout twelf oClock a little Breeze Sprung up hope we will be able to get into port to day —— 1/2 past four the commondore made the Signal (a chequered flag at the Mizen Peek) for the fleet to prepair to Anchor Still very little wind —— Sarah McCormick Still very ill —— the doctor has been up almost all night with her and has Bleed her now Eight times Since She first taking with the Stoppages of her breath —— all the fleet in company —— the land very near and the Strange Sail that we Saw Yesterday Still in Sight and 3 Small Boats —— a very large turtle past very near the Ship —— I wish
that I had a piece of him for Supper to night —— the commodore made the Signal to come to ane anchor at half past Eight (two lights at the Ensing Staf and fired two Guns) came to ane Anchor at 1/2 past ten at night in road of Rio Janerio

**Munday the 6**

all the Ships at ane Anchor round use and the land of both Sides of use very high rocky Mountains all cover over with green trees —— the commrs. boat came on board with order for the Capt of the Ship to goe on board the Sirius —— the doctor went in board the charlett with a Sick list to the Surgeon General —— Capt. Meridith went on board the Sirius respecting Elizh. Barbar Behavour —— orders came on board for the Ship get under weght when the Sea Breeze Sets in and to goe up in the harbour —— I wish to god that I could Send a letter (on board that Ship that is now under Way for Lisbon) to my beloved Alicia —— Capt Shea came on board to See use —— he looks Still very ill but he ought to thank god for his being So well as he is —— he informs use that one of there Seamen fell from the main Top Gallen Yard Yesterday and frackterd his head and brock his arm all to pices but the Surgeon Says that he still will doe very well —— Sarah McCormick still very ill —— the doctor thinks her a great dele better than she was Yesterday —— order come on board for to let every body have what water the [y] please thank god for it —— got under way at half after 2 oClock and Stood in to the harbour as did all the fleet —— a shore boat came along Side with Some black men in her and hove Several oranges on board —— one the Right hand going in is a batty in ane opening close to the Waters edge the Same on the left hand —— on the top of a very high hill and lines all the way down to the first Battry a very Strong fort on the Right hand almost even with the Water —— when the Commd. came abreast of this fort he Saluted it with 13 Guns which the fort returnd with Same Number —— one the left hand almost oppisid to the fort that Saluted ther is a nother fort but not near So Strong as it —— a little father one the left hand is a Squar fort one an Island which we past also —— the Charott came on board of use ther been little wind —— Spoke to Creswell and Poulden and find that the[y] have been very well as also Tensh —— 3 Boats with Several Gentlemen came along Side which throw Several oranges on board —— at half after 5 the commd. made the Signal (a Checkerd flag at the Mizen peek) for the fleet to come to ane Anchor —— came to anchor at half past 7 oClock in the Harbour of Rio Janaria South America —— Rodney one of the Boys cald So from being on Board Ld. Rodneys Ship in the Accion of the 12 of April 1782 fell from the Staboard [set?] harpons over board but was got in again without houtrt ing himself much except been brused from lighting one the Anchor befor he fell in the water
Tuesday the 7

ccaught Several fish with lines out of the cabin windous which the[y] call old wives —— Lieut Long & Fuzer and the
 commodors Sectary came on board with orders (for which See the orders in the orderly Book) Long ask me if I wish to goe a
Shore to morrow to be intrudused to the Viz King as the[y] term him —— I told him I had no particulor desire and Seeing
Faddy ancious I declined going So Capt. Merideth and Faddy gave in ther names that the[y] would goe —— at 10 oClock the
Commd. made the Signal for the fleet to moor Ship —— at 11 oClock we got under way to get father up the harbour —— at
one oClock let goe the Anchor near the commd. —— after dinner the doctor and I went on board the Scarborou to see the lads
ther wher we Staid to Tea and Supper —— Sarah McCormick Still very ill She being the only one that we have Sick onboard
—— Lieut Maxwell came on board to ask Capt. Merideth if he would Exchange a Sergeant with him which Capt. M: would not
doe

Wednesday the 8

Capt. M: and Faddy went on board the Sirius at 1/2 past 9 oClock from that to goe on shore with the rest to the Viz Roys ——
Shifted our birth again —— fresh Beef and greens came on board for the Marines and convicts —— at 1 oClock Capt. M: and
Mr. F: returnd and are very much taking with the Town —— intend going to Wait on the comd. to morrow and from that I mean
to goe on shore to enquir if ther are any Ships heer bound to Europe that I may Send a letter with them to my beloved Alicia
bless her and that of my dear Sons —— I wish them health and happiness is the most Sienceer prayer of her fond and affectioned
husband and fond father —— god protect them always

Thursday the 9

Raind very all last night and all this fore noon —— Lieut Long came on board with order (for which See the orderly Book) ——
the doctor went on board the the Charlott to the Surgeon General respecting a cask of wine that has leak out —— the
commd. Sent Sent for Mr. Arundell to come on board of him wher he Staid dinner and returned in the boat with Major Ross
who came on board to enquir into Elizh. Barber complaint which She has wrot to the comd. when he found the complaint but
fixious —— Rise order to be Served a pound a day in the room of our pound a Bread —— ment to have gone a shore to day for
a walk but it been So bad a day did not wish to goe for to get Sick —— for what would become of my dear well Beloved Alicia and that Tender Sweet Boy of ours —— thank god that I find there is a Ship here bound to London and will Sail much a bout the Same time for ther that we will for the Cape of good hope —— I shall write a long letter to my Adorabl Sweet and Sinceer Alicia —— god out of his great goodness bless her and I wish her a good night for I suppose She is in bed long before this for it is now 11 although it is not 8 oClock now with use So god protect her and my Ralphie

Friday the 10

Faddy went on board the Charlott According to the orders of Yester to Sit as a member on a court martial —— Capt. Meridith and the doctor went a Shore Soon after Breakfast and returned to dinner —— Capt Hunter of the Sirius and Major Ross came on board Soon after they went on Shore and inform me to tell Capt. Meridith that he had Settled all the matter Respecting Elizh. Barbor with the comd. —— Faddy Returns after dinner from Scarborough (wher he went to dinner from the Charlott) with Kellow and Mr. Tolman and cald on me to goe on Shore with them which I did —— landed at the Pallice and walk throu the Town and then a little way in the country —— I did not See but one white woman all the time that I was on Shore and She was only peping throu the window gratings for the portagues will not permitt ther women to be Seen but the[y] behave very Polit to use —— a bout two miles in the country we Stept in to a grove of oranges when the Gentleman ask use if we would walk in and offerd use knives and goe and eat oranges in the grove, he Sent his Servant with use to pull them of the Trees for use wher we eat as maney as we could and Stuft our pockets full and he would take nothing for them —— his wife who is a true Native is very dark like a Mollotu presented me with a Nose Gay for which I thank her very much —— Soon after returnd on board —— from the bottom of my heart I dont beleve that ther is a Single Woman in all the place So hansom as my beloved Betsey if She Was her the[y] would Steal her from me but they must take first the last drop of my Blood before the[y] Should have her

Saterday the 11

after Break fast went on shore one the other side of the harbour wher the Town Stands with Capt Merideth wher we Staid Untill 2 oClock wher I did not See a Single white woman Except a feu Ugly Mollotues with whom we talk as well as we could —— on both Sides of the road the oranges and limes are the Same as the nuttes are in England —— on our Return on board found that Lieut Long had been on board with an order to discharge the following Women to the Charlott Viz Susanah Gought,
Hannah Green, Francis Hart, Eliz Harvy, Mary Watkings and Ann Baighly the Six Very best Women we have in the Ship and to receive Six of the Worst from the Charlott which I dont think is right and I dont know what I shall doe now as well as the rest of use for the[y] are the only Women that can wash amonst them —— Received the following Women from the Charlott Viz Margt. Stuart, Fanny Anderson, Mary Phillips, Hanah Smith, Elizh. Cool, Ann Combs —— the doctor and I went on board the Alxd. to See Sharp and Balmain and John Johnson wher we staid Tea and Supper —— found them all well but they have been ill Since the[y] left Teneriff

Sunday the 12

drest and went on board the Lady Penryn to prayers wher Goe. Johnson and Wm. Collins would not let me Return but detaind me to dinner wher Major Ross dinner and Mr. Johnson the Clergyman and his wife wher Mr. Johnson Baptized one of the convict children —— Returned on board with Mr. & Mrs. Johnson wher he read prayers and after Service Baptized the Marines child that was born at Sea which was Named Thomas Russel —— Mr. & Mrs. Johnson Stayd Tea with use —— I was to have Return on board the Lady Penryn to Tea Majr. Ross Seem to be remarkable kind to me and ask me if I expectd Mrs. C: my beloved Alicia out —— I told him I did not he told me he did not know if Mrs. Ross would come out or not Yet —— Shall goe on board of the Sirius to Morrow and Wait on the commd. if the Weather will permit every body on board Seemd to Behave themselves very well while Service was performing which I am very happy off —— the Tex on board the Lady Penryn was taking from the 107 Psalm be[gin]ning at the 23 Vers They that go down to the Sea in Ships and occupy their business in great Waters —— his Sermon on board of use Was taking from the [*]

Munday the 13

The Commandor and Majr. Ross came on board and gave orders to Capt Meridith (that from the bad behaviour of the women on board of use and in all the Ships) that Since putting them in irons the[y] thought no punishment —— order capt. Meridith to flog them the Same as the Men when the[y] behaved ill which will not be long before Some of them are —— when he ask Capt. Meridith below in the cabin if he would try the women that wair in irons once more and if the[y] behaved ill to flog them which Capt. M: had no objections —— Soon after the comd. went Capt. M: order Elizh. Barbor, Elizh. Dudgeon, Elizh. Pully and Elizh. Thackery four convict women out of irons and also Wm. McNamera one of the convict Men —— the comd. ask Capt M
and Self to dine with him to day —— drest and went at half after one with Capt. Meridith on board the Comd. to dinner —— Satt down to dinner with the Comd. Majr. Ross, Capt. Hunter, Capt. Collings, Capt. Meridith, Lieut King, Lieut Maxwell, Mr. Miller the comd. Sectary and Self and had a very good dinner —— we Staid Tea then Capt. M: and Self Went on board the Scarsborough to the See the Lads ther Wher Soon after Arundell came also on board —— there we Staid late and Arundell got tipsey which thank god I have not been (except on my Wedding day a little) Since I left my beloved Alicia

Tuesday the 14

Capt. M: and Faddy the doctor went on Shore Soon after Break fast I ask the Portaguese officer that is in the Guard Boat to Break fast with he came on board and drunk only one dish of Tea —— he can nother Speak English or French So we could not converse with one or the other but Satt like posts —— order came on board /for which See the orderly book to this date/ Balmain Surgeon of the Alexander and Sharp the Lieut of Marines came on board to See Me and Staid Supper

Wednesday the 15

Faddy went on board the Scarborough According to the orders of Yesterday from whencse he after Wards went on Shore to the town as did the doctor and Capt. Meridith —— dreamt of Seeing my dear Tender Alicia at Mr. Kempster —— hope in Christ that ther is nothing the matter with her and our dear Sweet Boy —— oh my God the thought makes me the most Unhappy of Men living I trust in god for the Best and he I hope is my friend

Thursday the 16

I Soon after breakfast went a Shore with Capt. M: and the doctor and Staid all the day —— we walk up in the country and cald at Several houses but the[y] could not understand use —— we took Some bread and cheese with use which eat under a orange tree and afterward drunk Some lemonade —— the doctor and Capt. Meridith got tipsey after Supper —— Faddy and Self went to bed directly after Supper wher we left them making a great Noise —— Capt Shea and Lieut Davy from the Scarborought to See use —— the[y] went away directly after Supper —— Saw Majr. Ross, Capt. Camble and Lieut Geoe. Johnstone on Shore and the parsen and his Wife
**Friday the 17**

Capt. M. went in his little boat a fishing he soon after returnd to dinner — Jo. Johnston from the Alexander came on board to See me and lent him two Vol: of Magazines — I wanted him to Stay dinner but he would not — gave yesterday to one of the convict women all my dirty Linnen to wash — Lieut Long came on board with orders to release Tho. Catherall one of the Corps. whom I confined for neglect of duty and disobedience of order and for the remainder of the orders See the orderly book to this date — a nasty rain day — intend going a shore if it clears up

**Saterday the 18**

it raund all day Yesterday which prevented me going a Shore as I intended and it is much the Same Weather that we had Yesterday — if it clears up will goe after dinner to See if I can get Some wood to make my a Small chest of drawers — Capt. M: and the doctor gone in Capt. M: little boat a fishing — not very well to day have caught coold and got a little Soreness in my throat — a walk a Shore will I hope take it off — this is very bad weather for my linnens — I hope it will clear up and let them get dry — after dinner Faddy and I went a shore in abay round the Nunnary to See if there wair any [*] to be had but the Surf ran So hight that we wair in great danger of lossing the boat and perhaps Some of use being drownd — if it had not been for the Some portuguese Soldiers that wair on the Bech that help use to hauld the boat up — I was too much adgitated to think of [*] and how we should get of So that Faddy and Self got non thank God we got off better than I expected and with damage to the boat or the people in her except getting all of use very wett by the Sea breaking over use — Majr. Ross and Lt. Long came on board before I went on Shore to ask what NonComd. officer went on Shore to See the fresh Beef wight — my throat very Sore the doctor order me Some bark which I took a glass off before I went to bed

**Sunday the 19**

intended to have gone on board the Scarborough to prayers but all the boats wair from the Ship before I was drest — Capt. M: and the doctor went on Shore — Lieut Pouldon cald on board to See me but would not Stay dinner — Mr. White came on board with him to Arundell — Since I am disapointd of going on board the Scarborough will read the morning prayers and the Spalms for the day — about 3 oClock went on Shore with Capt. M: and the doctor — cald at the French mans that
one the other Side of the harbour — eat a few oranges — it was late before we came on board — think my throat is better to day

Munday the 20

the doctor and Capt. M: went on Shore Soon after break fast to the Town and I went on Shore by my Self one the other side of the harbour to collect Butterflys wher I caught a great number of beautiful one for my dear Belovd woman — I wish that She was here with me now I would give all the World if I had it — at a Gentlemans house wher I went in to rest my Self and ask for a few oranges my Tender beloved Alicias pictor Swung out of my Bosom When one of the Ladys ask me what it was and beg of me to let her See it which I did on her fathers promise that She Should return it me again — on me opening the case wher all my Treaurer that I have her with me was She Said that it was impossible that ther could be so much beauty on earth — I told them that my betsey was much more So than the[y] had done her in the picter —— I was glade when it was Save in its little bag again for my heart flutter all the while that it was out of my hands —— lick a little Birds when the Scool Boys is handling its Young — ther wair three Young Ladys in the House that I saw none of them so handsom as my dear adorable Alicia and like the Generalty of the Women her of a Mollotue coullour —— the[y] Wair all unVaild —— the[y] behaved remarkable Sival to me and Wanted me to Stay dinner but I would not it was very late before I got on board and was oblige then to beg a passage in one of Store Ships boats as our boat did not come on untill it was very late —— the[y] had just Sent her a way for me a little before I came on board —— I was very Glade I got off as I did for the portiguese think nothing of killing a man here no more than the[y] doe a dog in England —— Capt. M and the doctor kept it up again last night

Tuesday the 21

Lt. Long came on board to See if any of use wish to goe a Shore to the Viz Roys to pay our Respects to him with the Governour and Mjr. Ross it being the Prince of Brazill (the king of Portigals oldest Sons) Birth day —— Faddy and my Self declining going —— Capt. M: went wher he maid his bow —— got all most all my linnin irond to day —— gave the remainder to wash —— I am Sorry to See Capt. M. and Mr. F not on good terms for it is very disagreable for them and to See them not agree but I think Mr. F in the falt but he is to ack as he thinks proper —— I hope I will Quarl with non of them —— Capt. Shea and Kellow came on board and Faddy went on Shore with them to the Town —— Mr. Arundell and Self went on board of the
Scarborough to See the doctor and Tom davy wher we Staid Tea —— the Capt. and Arundell keep it up again after Supper

**Wednesdays the 22**

got early and Breakfast Soon to goe on Shore —— went on Shore a little before light with Capt M: and the doctor wher we Staid the whole day —— I got a few Butterflys and other Beautiful things for my dear Beloved Alicia my tender life —— to morrow is my little Ralphi's Birth day when he inters in his third Year —— I hope god will give him grace and that he will follow the Steps of his Virtious mother —— god Bless and preserve her —— Keep her and our dear Sweet Boy in health and happiness is the most Sincere prayer of my dear Beloved Betseyes Fond husband and my dear tender engagin Boys father will goe and drink a glass of Lemonnade and Drink Both ther health and goe to Bed So God Bless them and I wish them a good night

**Thursday Morning the 23**

Returnd thanks to god for given me this day 2 Years my Beautfull and dear Beloved Son and preserving his good and most Virtious Mother —— god Send his mother and him manney happy Returns of this day —— what would I give to be now with them but I hope god well Bless them —— went on Board H.M:S Sirius to dine with Long wher I also Staid Tea and he wanted me to Stay Supper which I Refused on Account that I wish to come on board to drink my Ralphies and my Betseyes —— god out of his great goodness Bless them their health is a boul of Punch So good night as I shall not be able to write more as it will be late before we break to night as I will make my Mess mates drunk if I can as I don't drink any thing but Lemonnade —— So god protect my much adorable and Beloved and most Sincere Alicia and Son —— Capt. M: went on Shore to the Town in his little boat to See if he could get me a little fish for Supper but he could get none

**Friday the 24**

Keep the night up pretty well —— Capt. M: and Mr. F wair pretty well in for it —— the doctor would not drink on Account that Sarah Mc Cormick the Woman that was So ill before was again taking bad and that he did not exspect her to live untill morning —— doe what he will She cannot remain long in this World for She is nothing but a Mess of corruption eat up with the
Capt. M: went a Shore in his little boat and Staid all day —— the doctor and Self went a Shore after dinner and Staid untill evening then went on board Alexander wher we staid untill eight oClock and eat a little ham and drank a little wine and water —— Capt. M: keept it up again —— in my oppinion he is doing very wrong —— thank God I have not been but only twice Since I left my beloved betsey and then I was but very little —— the doctor and Self went on Shore after dinner for a Walk and afterwards went on board the Alexander wher we staid untill 8 oClock

Saterday 25

Capt. M. and Mr. F. went on Shore and staid all day —— the doctor went on Shore to fetch two people to dinner, one a Frenchman, the other a portague —— Mr. Consident Surgeon of the Scarborough Came on board ask him to Stay dinner which he did

Sunday the 26

went on Shore after dinner with Capt. M: and got a Some cotton pods and bought Some Bananahs for my Self

Munday the 27

Capt. M: went on Shore with Capt. Shea —— went on board the Scarborough with Arundell and lent Mr. Consident 51/2 lb of Soap untill he gets to the Cape of Good Hope —— Mr. Consident came on board —— Arundel and Faddy went on Shore with him.

Tuesday the 28

Capt. M: and Mr. F and the doctor went on Shore befor Eight oClock this morning and Staid all day —— Capt Shea and davy came on board to take me on board to dinner with them —— could not goe —— Nobody been on board but my self was employ all day in writting to my dear Tender Beloved Betsey —— Shall [do so]† again to morrow god Bless her —— I wonder what has made me dream for these Serevel night past a bout Majr. Lidsay —— dreamt of being home and at Kempsters
**Wednesday the 29**

wrot all most the Best part of this day to my lovely wife after going on board the Charlott with Capt M: to a court Martial of James Baker a Privat Marine

**Thursday the 30**

intended to have gone on Shore in the afternoon with Capt Mer. but it raind all day —— Balmain came on board after dinner and Staid Tea and Supper with use —— Capt. M got very much in for it as did Mr. Faddy and the doctor —— the[y] may goe on it will not last long

**Friday the 31**

gent on board of the commondore to Majr. Ross to enquir for what reason the commodor meant to open my letter which I intended to Send home to my Beloved Alicia —— Majr. Ross was Quit Surprised What I told him and ask me wher I got my information —— I told him from Mr. Faddy who had it from the Surgeon general —— the Majr. told the Commodor was not on board now but that he would acquaint him with it and desired Mr. F and the doctor to Stay on board —— was Sent for after dinner With Mr. F and the doctor to come on board the Sirius —— went and ther the[y] Related the Same as the[y] had to me which made me make Such an enquiry of Majr. Ross before the Surgeon General which he Said had but he ment it only in Jock —— the comr. was very angry with him for Saying So and by me not to think that he had ever Said So for that never Such an ungenerous thought had ever come in to his thoughts

† Typescript reads “do so” but MS looks like “Oct To”.

* Some interlinear words have been partly erased making them unreadable.
SEPT 1787

Saterday Sept. the 1st.

finishd my letter to my Betsey and Kempster and Reynold —— thank god ther is a conveyance to Send them —— hope that the[y] will come Save —— oh my Alicia I hope you will get yours save

Sunday the 2d.

did not Sail as was exspected —— Sat down a wrot a few lines more to my Alicia my Love my wife —— god Bless her and my Son —— Capt. M and the doctor went on Shore this morning and did not Return untill late in the Evening —— Faddy has been very bad all night and all day —— doctor Johnson came on board in the afternoon and Read prayers and gave use a very good Sermon —— went on board the Scarborough to See Shea was very ill but found that he had gone on Shore against all advice —— found ther Creswell and J Johnston and the Same thing —— Sent my letters on board the Sirius

Monday 3

got on Shore early in the morning with T Davey, Creswell and Consident wher we Staid all day wher I bought tuo Bunches of Bananas for my Self and 16 cabages for the mess —— Brought on board Several Young orange Trees coffy and Bananas to carry to botany bay —— caught a few Butterflys for my Betsey —— dined on board the Scarsborough then Returned on board wher I found the doctor and faddy in bed who is much the Same —— Capt. M went on Shore after dinner wher he Staid late

Tuesday the 4

got under way and Stod out of the harbour with the whol fleet —— the fort Saluted the Comd. with which he Returned with 21 Guns —— a large Ship standing in to Rio Janeiro —— very little wind
**Wednesday the 5**

Still very little wind —— a little Sea Sick —— Capt M. and the doctor had Some words a bout Some wood —— the doctor told the Capt. that he did not behave like a Gentleman on which the Capt. Struck him which the doctor did not Return —— I order them both to be Quit or I would confin them both So ther the matter Stands —— have Seen two friend fals out a bout a Small pice of Wood —— So ends Wednesday night

**Thursday the 6**

a good Breeze all night —— dreamt of being Returned home from Botany bay and that I had march the party into Barracks (I wish to god it was trew) wher I thought I Saw Kempster in his office wher he Said that he was Just writing a letter to me —— I hope to have one from him when I come at the Cape —— I wish that I could bring the Doctor and Meredith to be good friends again —— Latte. ob in to day [*]

**Friday the 7**

dreamt of Seing my Betsey my Beloved Alicia in her faverout gown and a New Gaunce cap on, also of being with Mr. Hartwell for money but did not get any —— I hope ther is nothing the matter with her or my dear Son —— Latte. 25:40

**Saterday the 8**

very much frightend in the night by the Ships being taking al a back in a very hard Squal of wind and rain —— it raind all night and lightend very hard —— dreamt of being at home and that I was Engaged to dine on Monday with Kemp. at Bedlakes —— I trust in god that ther is nothing the matter with my dear alicia or Son for I have often herd her Say that dreaming of Meat was a Sing of Sickness —— I hope in christ it is not So —— I am very happy that I have made Capt. M: and Mr. A: good friends again to day —— all the fleet in company —— Latte. to day no observation —— So ends Saterday Night
Sunday the 9

dreamt of being in holland and I thought that Mrs. Hanse and I wair eating Greaps and that She order me to take a hors and Ride Exspess to Some place —— perhaps She is dead and has left me some thing Worth —— I hope She has then how happy will my Betsey be very happy I know indeed —— all the fleet in company but the most of them a great way a Stairn —— the [y] made the Signal at 8 oClock this morning (a Red flag at the Mizzen Peak) for the Ships a Stairn to make more Sail —— Latte. ob in to day 26. South —— the convict women Read prayer and Sang Spalms to themself —— I Read the prayers of the day and Spalms for the day —— was taking very bad at dinner with the tooth ack and Still very ill with it —— the Comr. made the Signal (a Blue flag at the fore Top G. M:head) for the fleet to close —— So ends Sunday Evening

Munday the 10

was very ill all night with the tooth ack —— dream Some thing a bout Aunt Hawkings but what I dont reollect —— thank God the pain of my tooth is gone but will have it out when I come at the Cape by Mr. Consident Since our doctor has no instrument for it —— at 1/2 after 5 in the Evening the Comr. made the Signal (a Blue flag at the F.T.G M) for the fleet to close he a great way to Leward —— Saw a great [number?] of Birds cald albetrosses —— Latte. in to day 25..58 —— the Comr. made the Signal (a English Jack at the FT:G:M Head) to the fleet to Tack

Tuesday the 11

blow very hard in the night and dose Still with a great Sea —— got no sleep all night bein Slung to low —— was obliged to get out and lay on the deck —— the comd. made the Signal (a Blue flag at the F:T:G:M:H) for the fleet to close —— Latte. in to day 27:5 South —— Sick on board 1 Seaman, 3 men Convicts and 3 women dito but none very bad the children mostly ill only Sea Sick —— dreamt that I was going to dance with Mrs. Faddy —— I hope that She is living for her husband and Young family —— Still blows hard with a great Sea —— So end this day

Wednesday the 12
Sleep much better than the night before —— had my own cott Slung —— dreamt of going on board to the Rev Mr. Johnson but could not See him also that a great many came on board a Ship in homage to dine with me I thought Munday, Kempster and a great many more then I thought that I was walking with my Betsey from Efford to Bulkland Town and that it raind very hard all the way Mary Ann and Jemaima wair with use —— I hope in Christ that my beloved Betsey and Son are well —— I wish to God that I could heer from her and that She mentioned that that She and Ralphe wair Both well then I should be as happy as my absents from them would admit —— god out of his great goodness Bless them both, dear Beautiful pair how much I dearly love You both —— god only knows how much I doe —— It [blew hard] all night and still blows very hard with a great Sea running with at times Shours of rain —— all the fleet in company —— Latte. obs. in to day 28:42: South —— Sick the Same as Yesterday getting all well fast as the[y] well can —— So ends Wednesday Evening

Thursday the 13

blowd hard all night with a great Sea but thank god the wind is fair raind all most all this day and the Ship rouls very much —— had no observation to day —— all the Ship in company —— the Sick the Same a Yesterday —— gave william an old red Jackatt been gone so bad that I could not wear it any more —— it Still blows hard —— So end this day

Friday the 14

Sleep better last night than any night Since we left Rio de Janario —— very little wind all day —— all the fleet in Sight but the Lady Penryn a great way a Stairn —— dreamt of Quarling with Mr. Bexly —— observation to day 30:30 South —— come I hope we will be at the cape in 14 or 18 days wher I hope to find a letter from my Beloved Alicia god grant that I may —— Water Issued out to day for all hands on board 133 Gallons and one Quart —— gave Mrs. Young one of the Sergt. wives Some Tea She having non —— So ends this Evening

Saterday the 15

very little all night —— the doctor was cald up twice to goe to people that wair taking ill but the[y] are Both got well again —— all the fleet in company —— the comr. made the agents Signal to speak him —— the comr. made the Signal (a French Jack
at the Mizen Peak) to the fleet to come in the Weal of the Sirius —— the agent made the Signal at 11 oClock (a Yellow Flag at the Main Top G.M H) for all masters —— hoisted out our Jolly Boat and the Master went on board the Fisbourn the agent Ship and Soon after returnnd to See what quantity of rice ther was on board which was the purpose of the Signal —— the Master went on board to the agent again to inform him and return a little before 12 oClock and informd me that the master of the Lady Penryn informd him that Capt. Campbale was a little better —— hoisted the Boat in and made Sial after Sirius —— Latte. in to day 30:27S —— the Sirius Boat came on board after dinner with orders to Capt M: for which See th the orderly Book —— the Master of the Ship killed a large hogg and Sent use the Loyn —— calm allmost all day —— So ends this day —— the comr. md. the Sigl. to See the Longd. being too far of could not See what it was ——

Sunday the 16

Sat up untill 2 oClock this morning Singing and drinking Capt M: Mr. F: and the doctor got a little in for it with drinking Punch —— I drank nothing but Lemonnade —— Sleep but very little —— got up early and after Returning thanks to god kist my beloved alicias pictour* and looks at it I being Sure took the Ribon from of my neck it being a little worn made it more Save than it was —— read the morning Service and Spalm for the day —— put clean sheets in my bed —— hope that I will Sleep well to night —— I wish that my betsey was going to Sleep with —— how dearly I would hugg and kiss her dear Sweet Woman god Bless and preserve her is my most Sinceer wish as that of my tender Boy —— I think that I See him troting over the parade and william after him —— dr. heavenly Boy Bless him and his good mother —— Latte. in to day 30:49 S —— So ends this day

Munday the 17

was very ill all night with the Tooth actk got no sleep with the pain —— a very fine Breeze and the wind fair —— Sat down and wrote the different order in my orderly Book that have been Issued out Since the 2 of Last month —— Latte. in to day 31: South —— that are this day on board 1 Seaman and three Women convicts and the[y] are getting well as fast as possible —— So ends this day

Tuesday the 18
it raind very hard all last night with a strong wind but fair —— dreamt of being with my Alicia and also of Seing Reynolds but what it was I dont recollect —— the fleet all in company but Several of the Ships a great Way a stairn —— it rains very hard —— the comr. made the Signal (a red flag at the Mizen Peak) for the Strenmost Ship to make more Sail —— the Supply repeated the Signal —— at 11 oClock the Supply repeated the Signal again with a Gun —— it been very thick and rainy had no observation to day but went 140 miles Since Yesterday 12 oClock untill to day at the Same hour —— So end this day

**Wednesday the 19**

dreamt last night of being home with my betsey and thought that Reynolds, Billy white wair to dine with me and a great many more —— I hope in christ that there is nothing the matter with my beloved or Son for my Alicia has often Said that dreaming of meat was a Sign of Sickness I hope it is not So —— a great Sea a good Stiff Breze —— all the fleet in company —— the Charlott hove all a back to day —— I hope that nobody has fallen over board —— the Weather been thick and with Small rain could have no observation to day —— only three Women and one Seaman Sick —— the [sea] Brock in the Ship this afternoon a wetted Several of the People Particular the Convict women as it went down ther place

**Thursday the 20**

Still exceedingly cold —— a great Sea and a fresh of wind all night —— at nine this morning the comr. made the Signal for the fleet to close (a Blue flag at the M:TG:MH) all the Ship in Sight —— the Lady Penrhyn a great way a Stairn —— Latte. in to day by observation 31:48 South —— was Exceedingly cold all night must put the under Blanket a top to night —— the Sick the Same as before —— So ends this day

**Friday the 21**

dreamt of Several thing and cryd very much in my Sleep on account I thought that two men had taking my belovd Alicia a Way —— oh that I only could heer from her —— how happy it would make me to be informed that She and my Son are well —— a fine Breeze not so cold as it was yesterday and has been for these Several days past —— the comr. tack Ship about 11 oClock last night is come a gainst use a foull as it can blow —— this day a bout 5 oClock the Sun crosses the line and comes in
this part of the World —— I hope we will have no blowing Weather as in General there is when the Sun get in the Northward Quarter and Returns the Southward Quarter of the world —— Latte. in to day by observation 31:56 South —— all the Ship in company

Saterday the 22d.

was much disturb in my Sleep by dreaming that my Betsey was dead and Buired —— oh my God how I wish to Know how my beloved is —— I also thought that my Betsey and Self Wair at Aunt Hawkings and that Aunt was very Angry with with my Alicia for dirtying her house —— I hope ther is nothing the matter with her or family good Woman —— the comr. Tack Shipt last night once at 10 and the other at 11 oClock a good Breeze and a little more fair than Yesterday —— all the Ship in company —— the Comr. made the Signal (a Blue flag at the F:T:G: M:H:) for the Ships to get in to ther Stactions —— Latte obs. to day 32:59 South —— the Sick the Same a Yesterday —— one of the Convict Carpenters made me a little Book —— blows now very hard

Sunday the 23th.

the doctor, Capt. M and Mr. Faddy keep it up last night —— I went Bed directly after Supper —— could get no Sleep with dreaming about my dear and tender Beloved Alicia —— I thought that I Saw her in her old Black Silk gown and close up in a Room in the Barracks and that my lovely Woman had been crying —— She Said to my She thought that I had been gone —— I gave her a Kiss although in Sleep it appeard to be a dear Sweet Kiss —— god out his great goodness grant that ther may be nothing the matter with her or my dear Son —— also dreamt that Mr. Faddy and Self wair order on board the the Princ of Wales in the room of Maxwell and Timins I hope not —— it blows very hard much harder than it has Since we have Been at Sea —— the Sea Brock over use Several Times to day —— had no observation —— although it blows so hard the wind is fair which is one good thing —— dined with Capt. Walten to day on roasted Pig —— made a most harty dinner —— it Still blows hard and I am affraid that it will blow harder —— this is the Equinoctial gale —— read the Service for the day and the Spalms and kist my Beautifull Alicias Pictor out of its little Bag this morning ten thousand times it being Sunday —— I hope that She is So well as I wish her dear heavenly woman then She wants for nothing —— So god Bless her this day and the Grace of God attend her for ever is the most ardent wish for her fond husband Ralph Clark —— Battend the hatches down of the Marines and
convict women the Sea Breaking over the Ship

**Munday the 24**

not So much wind as ther was Yesterday but still Blows hard —— all the Ships in company —— went soon to bed last night as I had but little Sleep the night Before from the noise the[y] made —— Latte. by observation 34:06 South —— it blows now very hard 5 in the Evening and the Ship rouls very much

**Tuesday the 25**

it blowd very hard all night and the Ship rould her Gunwale under Several times and a great dele of water went between decks and washt the marines out of ther beds and the Convict Women all the thing rouling about —— thank god that the wind is fair and is going right before it other wise Should be in my bed very Sick perhaps —— all the ships in Company —— it now Blows very hard and a great dele of hail falls as it did last night —— no observation to day —— the Sick the Same as before except one convict man more —— went Since Yesterday 12 oClock untill to day noon 133 miles

**Wednesday the 26**

less wind than we had Yesterday and the Sea gone down very much —— all the Ships in company —— I wish that this wind may continue for ten days more —— I hope that we will be at the cape —— it still blows pretty fresh at times with Shours of rain and hail —— Latte. in to day by observation 34:22 South —— the Wether begines to grow more warm again —— went by the Log Since Yesterday and having no more than our two top Sails close furld went in the 24 hours 183 miles —— not bad going —— I like our littl e Barcky very much would not change for any one in the fleet

**Thursday the 27**

Still a great Sea and wind but still fair —— one of the marines fell down on the deck with the Ship rolling and hurt him self very much —— Latte. in to day 34:22 South —— went Since Yesterday by the Log 137 m —— all the Ships in company and
very well up —— So ends this day

Friday the 28

it blow very hard in the night —— dreamt of being with my beloved Alicia but dont Recollect wher or what it was about —— dreamt also of being with Kempster and I thought that I took him in my Arms and kist him —— Munday and Reynolds was with him —— I soon after Waked —— oh that I could heer from my tender Alicia I would be much more content than I am and her that She and my Boy are well —— I never since I was born long so much for any thing as I do for a letter from my dear Betsey —— it blows still very hard and a great Sea but thank God the wind is fair —— had no obervation to day —— the Weather been thick but went Since Yesterday 12 oClock untill to day dito 188 miles —— not bad going —— five days more such will carry use to the Cape —— the Doctor and F: and Capt. M: kept it up last night

Saterday the 29

the doctor was cald up to see one of the Convict womens children which was very ill and has been almost ever Since it has been on board —— it depart this life at 2 oClock this morning poor thing it is much better out of this World than in it’ —— the wind came round from the S:W: to the S:E: and blow very hard in the night which it dose at present —— the S:E: is the worst wind that can blow for use —— all the fleet in Sight but all a great way to Leward except the Sirius, little Brig Scarborough and Self —— the comr. made the Signall at 8 this morning for the fleet to close /a Blue Flag at the F T: G M.H/ at 1/2 after 9 committed the Body of Thomas Mason to the deep —— Henry Lovall one of the convicts read prayers over it —— it now /11 oClock/ blows very hard and a very great Sea running which often breaks over the Ship —— dreamt again last night of Kempster —— hope there is nothing the matter with him —— I thought that him and I wair walking that we came to a mill where I lost him —— I should be very Sorry if any thing should goe wrong with him or his family —— had no observation this day —— a great number of Albetrosses, pintarneys and other Birds a bout the ship also a great number of porpusous —— Capt. Walton kild his Bore this afternoon and sent use a Loin of it —— I never lived so poor in my life as we doe at this time —— nothing every day except Salt Beef or Salt Pork —— thank God we have got Some Rice in the mess otherwise I would Starve for I dont like Salt pork and Beef every day —— So ends Saterday Evening
Sunday the 30

ther was very little wind all night and it is now quit calm —— all the Ship in Sight but the[y] are very much Scattered ——
this being Sunday kist my dear Beloved Alicia pictour out of its prison —— God Bless her Sweet woman and my dear heavenly
Boy —— I hope that he will grow after his Lovely mother —— read the prayers and Spalms and lesson for the day —— Latte.
in to day 33:45 South —— Sick on board only one Seaman and who will be well in the course of 3 or four days —— how good
the Lord has been to use to keep use So healthy as we have been —— at 1 oClock the comr. made the Signal for to come and
See the Longatude /a whit pendent at the Ensing Staf/ the Longd. was 3:4 —— Soon after he made the Signal for the fleet to
close (a Blue flag at the F:T:G: M H) at 1/2 after one he made the Signal for the fleet to make more Sail /a red and white flag at
the M:T:G:M:H:/ Soon after he made the Fisbourn and Charlots Signal to make more Sail the Charlots (a whit pendent at the
M:T:M H) and the Fisbourns a red at the F T:MH —— a little Breez has sprung up Since noon from the N:E: —— I wish ther
was more of it —— Capt. Meridith lost his dog Shot over board last night —— This is now the 5th. dog that has been lost over
board Since we left England —— Capt. M 3 Mr. Faddy one and my Self one —— we have been very unluckly with our dogs
—— thank god that ther is a very fine Breeze again and fair —— So ends this day of the Lords

* Clark wore Alicia's picture in a protective bag round his neck, and records his kissing it each Sunday from 29 July, 1787. The picture is
reproduced on p. 106 of this work.

* Probably Elizabeth Mason's son. Clark did not record the names of children who came aboard with their mothers.
OCT 1787

Monday October the 1st.

went to bed last night at 9 oClock but could not get any Sleep for Capt. M: and the doctor Sat up untill past 1 oClock in the morning drinking and was Exceedingly hurt for the[y] keep Signing although it was the Lords day which was very wrong of them —— they would not let Faddy and self Sleep because we would Sit up with them and make a Noise and break the Lords day like the[y] —— this bein October I hope as we have a fair wind that we will be at the Cape in the course of a few day —— the comd. make the Boroughdales Signal to keep near him he being a great way to Windward of him —— it is a very fine morning and Blows a good Stiff Breeze —— we goe 7 knots a hour —— all the fleet in Sight —— at bout ten oClock it came on a havey Squal of Rain and brought the wind on the Stabord Quarter which is still a very fair wind for use but ther is not So much of it as ther was a few hours agoe —— no obser. to day —— have got a very great cold in my head

Tuesday the 2d.

went to bed last night very bad with the cold and pain in my head and in all my bonses —— Still very bad with pains all over my body and head —— this is a very fine day but little wind and that little ther is of it is fair thank God —— I wish that I was better —— hope to get a good sweat to night and that I trust will carry it off —— Latte. in to day by observation 33.8 South —— nobody Sick on board Except my self and the Seaman that has been So Long ill before —— hope we will both get better with the Blessing of god in a few days —— dreamt being at the Island of Whight eating appels —— I wish to god that I had some —— if I was at home with my tender dear heavenly Beloved Alicia She would give me some dear Soul —— I wish that I know how She was I would be soon a great deele Better —— how happy I shall be when I Recieve a letter from her hand —— I will kiss and press it to my poor Breast —— I shall be much disapointed if I dont Recieve a letter from her at the Cape —— I wish that we had got ther —— a calm the latter part of this day

Wednesday the 3
thank God I am to day a great dele better than I was Yesterday —— dreamt of Kempster and also of my Beloved Alicia —— I thought that I Saw her and my dear little Boy also old Nonny then again I thought that my Alicia and I Wair at the Crab Tree Turnpike house with Some others and my Betsey Was making Tea and I was Standing by her and She told me that I had been letting a pup pu —— dear Sweet Soul how I long to Know how She is for I am affraid that ther is Some thing the matter with her or my Beloved from the dreams but I must now hope in God that ther is not —— little wind all this last night and this day —— had no observation —— all the Ships in company —— two of the convict Women that went throu the Bulk head to the Seamen on the 3 of July last have inform the doctor that they are with child (Sarah McCormick and Elizh. Pully) I hope the comr. will make the two Seamen that are the Fathers of the children marrie them and make them stay at Botany Bay —— it has been a very fine Pleasent day —— it begins to grow Warmer every day —— I wish that we had got to Botany and my three Years out that I might Return to the arms of my tender Betsey —— oh my God how much I love her my pen is not able to put on paper

Thursday the 4

very little wind all last night and that little not fair —— all the fleet in company —— the wind came a little more aft about 12 oClock —— had no obersation it raind about 12 —— half after Spocke the Scarborough informing use that the[y] wair all well —— my cold thank God much better —— at Six oClock this Evening the Comr. made the Signal for the fleet close /a Blue Flag at the F:T:GMH:/ So ends this day

Friday the 5

all last night a calm with hard rain —— dreamt again of being home and that I Saw my dr Boy —— hope he is well —— a nasty day Small rain with a thick fog —— cannot See any of the fleet at this time 12 oClock but the[y] wair all in Sight this morning —— had no observation —— my cold all most gone —— no body Sick on board

Saterday the 6

got but little Sleep last night and did nothing but dream of being with my dear Beloved wife —— I thought that I met her and
Mrs. Copland in a field walking and thought that my Alicia Said that She would not part from me but would live with me and She gave me a Kiss and Sweet it was although only in a dream after which we walked for some time and then a weaked' —— oh my God what it is to love So much as I Sinceerly doe my Betsey Alicia althought it is a happiness it is also gives me much pain but I trust in God that when I Return to her my happiness which I then Shall enjoy in her company will Repay me for the pain that I now Suffer in being absent from her —— got up early this morning for I could not Sleep —— ther is little wind as ther has been all night much the Same kind of day as Yesterday —— all the Squadron in company —— about half after ten this morning the Supply haild use and Lieut Ball informd use that we must be very particular Respecting our lights and to hang a curtan in the Cabin windows as the fleet had been led a stray a few nights agoe by the prince of Wales light in the cabin —— ask use how we wair on board —— he then haild the Scarborough and Repeated the Same to them —— Saw Capt. Shea and found him and all the Rest on board Scarborough very well —— as I Said on Wednesday the 19 of last month that I was afraid that the Charlot had lost a man over board which She did as we found to day by the Supply —— Latte. by observation to day 36–19 South —— this wind is driving use father to the Southward th an we Wont to goe —— 1/2 12 oClock the Alexander made the Signal to speak the comr. /a English pendent at the FT:M:H/ the Comr. hoisted out hi s boat and Sent on board the Alexander and Return with Some Seamen of the Alexander in her whom I Believe wair flog for misbehaviour —— the Comr. Made the Signal for the fleet to come in the Weak of the Sirius /a Whit flag at the Mizen Peak/ at one oClock the Comr. made the Fisbourns Signal /a whit pendent at the F:T:G:M:H/ at 4 oClock PM. he made the Charlots Signal to get into her Station —— at 1/2 after 5 oClock he made the Charlots Signal to [get] into the Weak of the Sirius both which Signals I dont think Wair Seen on board the Charlot as She did not answer them —— the Supply then made Sail and Staid under the Comr. Stairn and then made Sail again I Suppose to Speak the Charlot as she did not answer the Signal —— I wish that the wind would come fair for it blows from the very point that we wont to goe /East/ —— God Bless my love and our Sweet Plege of Love I wish them a good night —— I almost for got to mention th at Elizh. Pugh and Rachel Harley wair put in leg Irons to gether —— the former for Quarling and dirtyness and the latter for theft and dirtyness

Sunday the 7

Satt up late last night as the Capt. Mr. F and the doctor keep it up last night —— this been Sunday kist my Alicia as usal on this day —— a very fine day but little wind and that little not fair —— all the Ship in company —— read the morning prayer
Spalm and lesson for the day —— Latte obser. in to day 36:48 South a great way to S:Ward

**Munday the 8**

dreamt last night much about my Alicia and Mrs. Kempster I hope that they are all well — a fine day with a fair wind but very little of it — Nobody Sick have got Quit free from my cold thank God for it —— Latte. obser in to day 36:53 South —— all the Ships in company —— made a duty roster for the Subt. of the Detachment So that the Adjt. may put me on duty out of my turns —— Spoke the Scarborough who informed use that the Charlot was very Sickly and that it was one of the convicts that She lost over board the 19 of last month that the Alexander was very Sickly having 13 Marines Sick —— it was two men the Alexander Sent on board the Comr. the Comr. /Seamen/ and that the Lady Penryn was very healthy having only one Sick —— Spok to Thos. Davey the[y] are all well been very healthy on board Scarborough thank God that we are so healthy as we are he is very good to use and much we ought to thank him —— it gives me very great concern to think that the marines are getting So Sickly our only dependence is on the few that we have to defend use from the convicts and Natives

**Tuesday the 9**

dreamt last night that I Saw Reynolds in a Boat that he was weaving his hatt to me poor fellow I hope that ther is nothing the matter with him — a very fine day and a fair wind thank God for it —— all the Ships in company —— Latte. ob: in to day 36.28S: —— I hope if this continous to be at the cape by Saterday then for a letter from my Beloved Alicia Sweet thought —— Spoke the Fisburn this this afternoon the[y] wair all well who informed use that the comr. Longt. was 8 odd East

**Wednesday the 10**

dreamt that I Saw my Beloved Alicia in her Riding habit hope and wish to God that She was here —— I did not care if She was in her Shift I would put Breechess and Waiscoat on her —— Latte. in to day 35:23 South —— went by the Log Since Yesterday noon untill to day dito 145 miles —— hope the wind will Stand and in the Same Quarter then we will be at the Cape by Saterday —— all the Ships in company
Thursday the 11

dreamt last night of Seing my dear Beloved Alicia again in Bed and I thought that I puld her towards me —— dreamt also that I thought that I was at Musselburgh and that the General Gave me a letter from Some Body which he Received inclosed in one that he Received and it mentioned 20 Guineas —— I Suppose it is Sir Wm. Forbes —— I wish to God that that was paid and a great many other then I should be much happier than I am or would be my Beloved dear Beloved —— all the Ships in company —— Latt observd to day 34:52 South —— at one oClock the Comr. made the Signal for to See the Longatitude which was 15:40 East which if we have any luck we shall See the Cape to morrow being only 106 miles from it —— the doctor mett with a great lost this afternoon one of the convict women whom he gave Some thing to wash for him Said that She lost Seven pair of Stocking over board but I am apt to think that the[y] are not over board but that Some of the other Women have Stole them which is my oppinion for ther wair never a greater number of D . . . . d B . . . . . . s in one place as ther is in this Ship —— if the [y] wair to loose any thing of mine that I gave them to wash I would cut them to pices —— the Comr. made the Supply's Signal to come within hail at 1/2 after 3 oClock She went a head I Suppose to make the land —— Elizh. Pugh who was put in irons the 6 of this month with Rachell Harley for Quarling and dirtyness the doctor reported her very ill and wished her to be put out of Irons untill She has got better —— She was Accordingly put out but the Chain still remain one the other —— So ends this day

Friday the 12

dreamt of being with Mrs. Hume all night —— let her pay the Same to Sir Wm. Forbes and Remitt the Remaindr of the money She detains from me to my Alicia which She ought to doe —— all the Ships in company —— the Prince of Wales a great Way to L:Ward —— I am affraid that we Shall not See the land to day much more get to ane Anchor as the wind is come Quite against use —— 1/2 after 11 oClock the Comr. made the Prince of Wales Signal to Tack and come into the fleet —— Latte. obs. to day 34:26 South —— at 1 P:M: the Comr. made a Signal (a Blue Flag with a white cross at the Mizzen Peak) which Was Answerd by the Supply and She Soon after made Sail and went a head which I Suppose was for that purpose —— at 5 P:M: the Comr. made the Signal for the fleet to close —— the Supply a great Way a head —— a very Beautiful Evening —— a 1/2 after Six the Comr. made again the Signal for the the Ships to close which was on Account of the Boroughdales going too fare a head —— I hope we will get into Harbour to morrow for I long to See if ther is any letter at the Cape for me from my Alicia whome I wish and our dear little Boy a good night and God Bless them —— So ends this day
Saturday the 13

dreamt of Adjt. Martine being Blooded and dead —— all the Ships in company, the Supply Brig a great Way a head —— a
bout Seven oclock the Supply made the Signal for Seeing the Land /hoisting her Ensing/ about 10 oClock Saw the Land on
both Bows at one oclock Saw the land very plain which is very Hight land —— at 3 oClock Keep running a long shore at about
the distance of Six miles from the Shore —— the comr. a great way a head —— the land very hight on the top of the Sugar loaf
a flag flying and at the distance of Six mils from the Sugar loaf a nother flag which I Believe to be Signals to the Governour —
— came to ane Anchor at half past 3 oclock and found riding heer one Dutch Sloop of War, Dutch Eastindiaman 1 and two
French Eastindiamen —— the Town appear very pretty from wher we lay but very little wood and the hills very hight

Sunday the 14

got up early —— this being Sunday Kist my dear Alicia pictour out of the case —— Lieut Long and Fuzer came on board
with order book —— once the comr. Sectary came onboard also had a [Search]* for the doctors Stocking a monst the convict
women but could not find them —— Lieut Kellow came onboard to See use but did not See him being bellow looking amonst
the women for the doctors Stockings when he was on board —— the Signal was hoisted for the Boats to goe on Shore if they
please —— the comr. Saluted this morning the [*] and with [*] Guns which it Retu md with [*] Guns —— went on board the
Scarborought with Mr. Faddy to have my tooth drawn but could not ther being a great dele of company on board there ——
Staid very late Mr. F got very much in licour then came on board wher he begane to abuse me in a very Publick manner to Capt.
Meridith as ane officer and Gentleman for which I have wrot a letter on Service to Capt. M: beggin of him to apply for a
General court Martial on me to investigate wher in I have acte d in any manner unbecoming the character of the officer and
Gentleman for which See the letter Book,* Sunday 12 oClock at night

Munday the 15

gave the letter to Capt. M: which I wrot last night which he Said he would carry to on board to Major Ross but Major Ross
coming on board he gave it him heer then told me that he could not give ane order for a General Court Martial but wished that
we would Setteled it amonst our Selfes which I told him I could not think off —— he then Said that if I wished he would order
Some Gentlemen to inquir into the grounds of my letter and that I might name them also if I wishs it —— I told him I did not wish that Lt. Fuzer came on board with him —— a large Dutch ship came in last night —— it raind and Blow Very hard last night —— I am Sorry to find that ther has been no Ship heer from England Since April last So that I am much disapointed in not finding a letter heer from my dear Alicia —— wrot a letter on Service to Lieut & Adjt. Long for which See the letter Book† —— Mr. Consident came on board after dinner to drink Tea with use —— Mr. Faddy is very Sick after his lasts nights behaviour —— he thinks to make me believe that he did not know what he Said but I am not to be put on that way —— I went on board the Alexander after Tea to Speak to Lieut John Johnstone but he was not on board found only Shearp, Balmain and Lieut Maxwell of the Sirius —— Capt. Shea and Lieut Kellow came on board and Staid a few moment with use then went on Shore

Tuesday the 16

Capt. Meridith went on Shore this morning to Breakfast with the Commodoare and Mr. F —— went on board the Scarborough soon after Breakfast —— thank God that I have got my wish that I am to remain in Capt. Meridiths company with Lieuts. Davey and Timins but cannot tell as Yet with whome I shall be in a Markee in Short I dont much carre with whome it is with I shall make my self as happy as I possible can from my dear wife and Son —— Mr. F came on board and Soon after asked me leave to goe out of the Ship again which I did not Refuse him —— he went out to dinner —— Lieut J: Johnstone came on board to See me he Staid dinner with me as did Capt. M who returnd from the Shore who informed me that Majr. Ross had told him to inform me that the officers would Assemble on board this Ship to morrow Morning at ten oClock to enquir into my letter to Capt. Meridith —— the Fort Saluted the Dutch Sloop of war with 15 Guns who Returnd the Salute with the same number of Guns —— She got under Way and Sails for Batavia

15

for a General Court Martial but wishd that we would Setteld it amonst our Selves which I told him I could not think off —— he then Said that if I wished he would order So manny Gentlemen to enquir into the Grounds of my letter and that I might name them also —— I told him I did not wish that Lieut Fuzer come on board with him —— a large Dutch Ship came in last night —— it raind and Blow very hard last night —— I am Sorry to find that there has been no Ship heer from England Since April last
So that I am much disappointed in not finding a letter here from my Dear Alicia —— wrot a letter on Service to Lt & Adjt. Long for which See the letter Book —— Mr. Consident came on board after dinner to drinke tea with use —— Mr. Faddy is very Sick after his last nights bout —— went on board the Alexander after tea to Speak to Lieut John Johnstone but he was not on board —— found only Sharp Balmain and Lieut Maxwell of the Sirius —— Capt. Shea and Lt. Kellow came on board and Staid a few moment with use then went on Shore*

**Tuesday the 16**

Capt. Merideth went on Shore this morning to Breackfast with the Commdore and Mr. F went on board the Scarborough Soon after breakfast —— I have got my wish to find that I am appointed to Capt. Meridiths company with Lieuts. Davey and Timmins but Cannot tell as Yet with whome I shall be in a Markee in Short I dont much carre whoe it is with, I shall make my Self as happy as possible —— Mr. F came on board and Soon after went again on board the Scarborough to dinner —— Lieut J Johnstone came on board to See me he Staid dinner —— Capt. M came on board to dinner and informed that Major Ross had told him to inform me that the officers would Assemble on board this Ship to morrow morning at ten oClock to enquir into my letter to Capt. Meridith —— the fort Saluted the Dutch Sloop of War with 15 Guns Who Sailld for this to Batavia —— She Returned the Salute with the Same Number†

**Wednesday the 17**

Major Ross, Capt. Shea, Capt Tentch, 1st. Lieut Goe. Johnstone, 1st. Lieut Creswell, 1st. Lieut Kellow, 1st. Lieut Pouldon and 2d. Lieut and Adjt. Long came on board by ten oClock —— Major Ross cald use all dont in the cabin Capt. Meridith and Mr. Faddy also and told use that he had cald the officers that wair now on board to enquir into the Grounds of my letter to Capt. Meridith of the 15 instant but he wish that I would have it inqurid into in a Publick manner for if he was he would be obliged to Send it home to the Admity. but wish that I would give up a point and lett those Gentlemen whom he had order heer to determine the matter and the[y] would doe use both Justice and if the[y] thought that if it was necessary for a father inquire the [y] would report the Same to him —— I at last agreed that I would upon my honour abyed by ther determination on which the whole of use went on deck except the under mentioned Gentlemen Capt. Tentch, 1st. Lts. Goe. Johnstone, Creswell, Kellow and Pouldon —— the[y] cald Capt. Meridith to relate to them the exspersions that Mr. F had made use to me —— we
wair Soon after cald in when Capt. Tentch read the oppinion of the court that Mr. F Should acknowlege that he had made use of words to Lieut Ralph Clark very much to the [*]

Thursday the 18

went on Shore with Capt. Meridith and the doctor Soon after nine oClock and cald at the Coms. Lodgins wher he ask use to dine with him which we did —— we then walkt about the Town and in the Dutch Govenours Gardin —— I then parted with Capt M. and the doctor and went and cald on Coll Gordon but he was not at home —— I Soon after Saw 1st. Lieut J Johnstone, Wm. Collings, Balmain, consident and the Mr. White who informed me that the[y] had been trying to get Some money but could not With whom I walkt untill near one and then went to the Comr. wher I found Coll: Gordon who was very happy to See me and Said that he was Sorry that he was not at home when I cald on him but Should be happy to See me any day after this week as all his time was taking up With the Malitia —— Sat down to a very good dinner with the comr. Capt. Meridith, Mr. Arundell, Mr. Miller the comr. Sectary Mr. Palmer the old lady of the house with three of her daughters and one Son —— had Green Pease Young Potatoes and Straw Berrys —— we also Staid tea —— the People dress much after the English heer the Women in particular —— the most of the Women that I have Seen are very handsome —— came on board in the Evening and Soon after went to bed after Sending up my Prayer for the health and welfar of my beloved Alicia and Son

Friday the 19

the doctor and Mr. F. went on board the Scarborough to Breackfast and Soon after Returnd with Mr. Davey who came to ask me if I would be in a Tent with him and Mess with him —— I told him that I had no objections to be in a tent with in him but that Capt. M and I had agreed to Mess to gether when we get ther and if he had no objections I had non —— I went on board the Sirius to Majr. Ross to get Some list that he wants to give me —— Saw Majr. Ross who informd me that he had given it to a Some body on Shore and would not trouble me —— Soon after return on board and found Mr. F and Davy Return on board the Scarborough —— the Dutch Guard Ship Saluted with 5 Guns which a nother Dutch Ship Soon after Returned with the Same number of Guns —— went with the doctor on board a French Ship to See what the[y] had to Sell and found that the[y] had coffe at 16 dollars a hunder wight Perfumery & & —— went on board the Alexander afterwards to See J. Johnstone —— Staid Tea then Returned on board wher we found Mr. Consident who Staid Supper with use —— Lieut G: Johnstone came on board
Saterday the 20

went on board the French Ship Soon after Breakfast with Capt. M: the doctor, Mr. Consident to See the French Captain but did not See him —— went on Shore wher we Strold untill 1 oClock when we Return on board to dinner —— I ask Lieut Timmins to dine with me which he did —— dreamt last night about my dear Alicia hope in God that She and my beloved Son are well —— went on board the Alexander with Timmins to See J. Johnstone but could not See from whence went on board the Scarborough wher I Staid Supper —— Return on board about 9 oClock —— put Elizh. Barbour and Elizh. Dudgeon in Irons (leg ones) for fighting

Sunday the 21st.

dreamt again of my dear and most Sinceerly Beloved Alicia —— oh what would I give to heer from her —— oh that I could but have a few lines from her —— this being Sunday kist my tender one pictour as usual on this day —— intended to have gone on board the Scarborough to prayers but could not get my Self redy —— went on board then a little before dinner to Speak to Mr. Consident and Returned to dinner —— Capt. Meridith went a shore after dinner —— Major Ross came on board after Tea to Speak to the convicts —— So ends this day

Munday the 22d.

was taking very ill in the night and have been very ill all this day —— the doctor gave me Som Stuff which did me a great dele of good —— Mr. Faddy went on board the Charlott according to the orders of Friday the 19 for which See the orderly Book —— Capt M went on Shore and Returned to dinner —— the doctor went on board the Scarborough to dinner —— much better than I was in the morning —— Lieut Sharp came on board to See me and Staid Tea

Tuesday the 23
much better than I was Yesterday —— the doctor gave me again Some Phisick —— it is the Bread that is Served use heer has made me ill —— Majr. Ross and Lieut Long came on board heer to Speak to the convicts —— did not See them —— Capt. M and the doctor went a Shore after Breackfast and Staid untill Evening —— thank god that I am much better than I was Yesterday —— I hope in God that to morrow I will be quit well —— Shott a Gull from the Ship this afternoon —— the doctor and Capt. M: Returned to Tea —— the[y] Said that the[y] had a Pleasent walk and that the[y] wair at a Gentleman house in the country who Said that he know me and desired them to tell me to come on Shore —— So ends this night

Wednesday the 24

dreamt last night I was at my Beloved womans Burial —— oh my God what a dream —— oh that I could but have a letter from my Alicia before that I leave this place to no how She and my Son are —— why doe I wish for a thing that is almost impossible it is love dear Sweet passion —— thank god I am much better with his Blessing I trust to be quite well in a few days —— a very fine day —— the Signal house on the Top of the Sugar loaf has made the Signal for a Sail coming in —— hope it may be a Ship from England and that She has a letter on board for me from my Alicia my wife my most Sineer friend then I shall be quit well —— the very thought has made me much better than I was before the Signal was made —— Mr. F went on board the Scarborough before dinner wher he Staid —— oh for the Ship and my letter

Thursday the 25

Mr. F came on board from the Scarborough very drunk last night and he went on Shore very early this morning —— the comr., Majr. Ross and Capt. hunter came on board a little after nine to See wher we could put Stocks if the Women and men convicts wair taking out —— the[y] Staid about half ane hour and then went a way —— Capt. M. and the doctor went on Shore —— Soon after Major Ross came a long Side and told me to info rm the women convict that the[y] Should be put into another Ship to morrow or Next day and desired me to Send him the Names of those women of the convicts that had children on board —— Soon after Sent him the Names for which See the letter Book* —— Mr. Consident came on board and wanted me to goe on shore with him —— I am Exceedingly Sorry to find that the Ship that is coming in has hoisted Dutch coulors —— ther is no letter from my from my Alicia Bless her and my Boy Sweet Woman and dear little fellow —— 3 oClock the Ship come to ane anchor with in use from Middleburgh in the province of Zeeland
Friday the 26

Mr. Faddy Staid a shore last and is not come on board Yet —— a large Danish Eastindiam came to ane Anchor late last night very near use from chinia —— had lost her Mizen Mast and fore Top mast in a hard Gale of wind in April last wher in the[y] Says that they wair very near going down —— that the Adml. Hughes, the Brigdwater and Vansetter Eastindiamen Wair with her in the Same Gale —— that the[y] Wair all dismasted and She was affraid that the Bridgwater had gone down as the[y] had herd nor Seen any thing of her —— that Sevral dutch Ships Wair dismasted at the Same time —— The[y] say that the Sea Was coverd with Wrecks and casks —— I hope that She is Save —— went on board the Alexander with Mr. Arundel Whome I left ther to dinner —— on my Return on board found Capt. Shea on board of use with whome I went on board the Scarborough to dinner —— I wish I had not for it came on to blow and was very near being drown as the Sea brock over use and fild the boat but thanks god I got on board Save except being a little wet and hurt my knee and hand a little —— found Mr. Balmain and Mr. F returnd quit gadded —— I should like to knou wher he Slept last night for I don't think he Sleep in a very good house as Kellow did not and he and him Wair together all the while —— So ends this day

Saterday the 27

it blows very hard —— dreamt last night that I bought a drum for my Beloved Alicia and my Son but I thought She told me that he was dead —— I awakend Capt. Meridith with crying in my Sleep —— oh my god that I could but only heer from her —— what would I give dear woman She dose not know how much Sincerely love her —— I am affraid that I Love her too much for my own health but who can help not loving her —— She is all goodness and wher is her fellow on earth I would loose my left hand for only a pepe at her and my boy —— God Preserve and Bless them both is my ardent wish that it is —— Majr. Ross came on board to inform Capt. M to Send the women convicts away to Morrow Viz 4 to the Lady Penryn 4 to the Charlotte and the Remainder 13 to the Prince of Wales for to know the names of them that went on board the different Ships See the Remarks after ther names at the beginning of this Book —— went on board Scarborough with the doctor who Staid ther untill 8 oClock this Evening —— about 1/2 after Six oClock Saild from heer a large dutch Ship for Batavia —— So ends this [day]

Sunday the 28
dreamt Some thing about Mrs. Hume but what it was I dont Recollect —— this being Sunday kist my Alicia as usual on this day —— read the lessons prayers and Spalms of the day —— about 1 oClock Sent the Women convicts away as order thank god that the[y] are all out of the Ship —— I am very Glad of it for the[y] wair a great Trouble much more So than the [men] —— my knee much better than it was Yesterday —— hope it will be well to morrow —— So ends this day

Munday the 29

went a Shore with Capt. M: and the doctor —— the doctor Soon after parted with use —— Saw Capt. Campble who informd me that Coll: Gordon desired the favour of my Company to dinner to morrow —— told Capt. C: to inform him that I would doe my Self the Pleasure of Waiting on him —— Capt. M. and I took a long walk in the country then Return on board to dinner wher we wair inform that Mr. Vallance the 2d. mate of the Ship had about 1 oClock falling over board from the head of the Ship wher he had gone to ease himself and was drownd for although three men Jump over board after him the[y] could not Save him for he Soon after Sunk and has not been Seen Since —— he was drunk the[y] Say when he fell I am very Sorry for him for I know all his friends near Musseburgh and he was a very good Seaman a much better than we will be able to get heer in his place —— Lieut Sharp came on board and drink Tea with me he was a little cutt and that not a little

Tuesday the 30

got up early this morning to write a letter to my Beloved Alicia and one to Mr. Hartwell which I did as Capt. Walton informd use that there was a Ship to Sail to morrow from Sardinia Bay for Europe and that if the[y] wair Sent on board the comr. before 10 oClock he would Send them —— I went on board with them mySelf to Majr. Ross who told me he know nothing of it a Ships going but would let me know if ther was —— I got very wett in going —— Return on board to dress to dine on Shore with Coll: Gordon but it came on to Blow very hard So did not goe —— the doctor was cald up early to goe on board the Lady Penrhyn to See one of the convicit Women Who got her head fracturd this morning by a graiting falling on her —— the doctor went on board the Scarborough wher I believe he must Remain for the whole day if not the night if it continus blowing So hard as it dose at Present —— the doctor came on board a little after 7 oClock very much in for it

Wednesday the 31
dreamt Some thing about Mercer of our but dont Recollect what it was —— Capt. M. and Mr. F went a Shore with whom I sent a letter to Coll: Gordon for which See the letter Book† —— order came on board to Capt. M: for which See the orderly Book —— about 10 oClock the doctor went on board the Scarborough from whence he Soon after Returnd —— about 12 oClock it came on to blow very hard a 1/2 after one Some Ships boat over Sett but what Ships I can yet tell or if the are any body lost but I hope not —— 5 oClock it blows and Rains very hard So that I shall not think of Sending a boat to night for them So that they may as well take up their Quarters on Shore for the night

* Awoke, woke up.
* MS reads: Scher.
* See page 253 infra.
† See page 254 infra.
* This appears to be a duplication of the entry for Monday the 15 opposite.
† This appears to be a duplication of the entry for Tuesday the 16 opposite.
* See page 255 infra.
* MS reads “Women”.
† See page 255 infra.
NOV 1787

Thursday November the 1st.

dreamt last night Some thing about Genl. Stuart but what it was I doe not Recollect —— Capt. M: and Mr. F and their two Servant was oblige to Sleep on Shore last [night] which will take a few pence out of their pockets for I never was in So dear a place in all the course of my Life —— Majr. Ross came on board and Staid a few moment —— Mr. Consident came on board who with our Doctor went Soon after on Shore —— a Signal on the hill is out for a Sail —— hope it is a Ship from England and that I may have a letter by her —— about one o clock Saw the Sail coming round the point a Brig and by the coulours that She has up one of the Eastindias packetts —— She came close to use and Saw on her Stairn the Ranger of London —— oh my God how my hart goes pitte patty —— about 1/2 after one Capt. M: Mr. F and the doctor came on board and inform me that She was from Falmouth in 12 weeks —— almost half mad —— then a few moment after they come a Gentleman came on board with a letter for Arundell and Says that was the the only letter except one for Mr. Bradly on board of the Sirius that She had brought out —— oh my God how I am disapointed has my Alicia entirly forgott her fond Clark —— people in the Ship to Receive letters and not I —— shall goe on board after dinner —— Lieut Johnstone and Timmins came on board to Tea —— went on board the Lady Penrhyn for Wm. Collery to on board the Packett but found no letters nor had the[y] brought any but the above two —— She will Sail in a few days for Bengall wher She is bound —— I am Quit down to think that all my hopes are over in not been abl to get a letter for this Year and a half —— on my Returnd found Lieut Davey and Mr. Consident who Staid a half hour with use —— Shall goe to Bed and See if I can get any ease on My Pillow and endeavour to think that my beloved has not Quite forgott her Clark her most Sinceer Clark So God Bless her and my Boy again Bless them

Friday the 2d.

could not Sleep all night with thinking and dreaming about my Lovely Alicia —— oh that I could have had only a Line from her by this Ship to Say that She is well then then I should be most happy —— the doctor and Mr. Faddy went on Shore after Breakfast —— Mr. F Returnd to dinner but the doctor Staid untill Eveng and was very much in for it —— went on board Scarborought to Speak to Davey and returnd and Soon went to bed —— the Ship not come in
Saterday the 3

the Strang Sail not come in Yet —— dreamt about Mr. Daw Some thing —— went on Shore with Mr. Arundel and Mr. consident —— cald at Capt. Campble Lodgins —— Saw a great number of our lads on Shore —— came of to dinner with Mr. Arundell, Mr. Consident and Lieut Timmins —— the Strang Sail come to ane Anchor and Saluted the dutch commondore with 13 Guns Which he Returnd with the Same number of Guns —— Faddy went on board of her and found that She Was a Portegues Eastindiaman from Bengall bound to Lisbon —— after dinner the doctor, Mr. F, Mr. Consident and Timmins went on Shore again

Sunday the 4

Mr. Faddy and the doctor come on board last a little after 8 —— dreamt of Being with Hobbs and Coll. Hughes —— this being Sunday took my Belovd Alicia Pitour out of its prison and kist it I Believe a thousand times could not help craying over it dear Sweet Woman —— after Breackfast went on board the Packett with Arundell and cald in our Way back on board the Alexander Wher we Staid a few Minuets —— Capt. M and Arundell went on board the Portegues that came in yesterday —— Lieut Long came on board with orders for which See the orderly Book —— wrot a letter to Majr. Ross for which See the letter Book’ —— a very fine day —— expect the parson on board after dinner as he has been on board the Lady Penrhyn —— this forenoon Capt. M. and Arundell went on Shore —— Mr. Johnston came on board and gave us a very good Sermon —— Satt down and wrot part of a letter to my Betsey my Beloved Woman the most Tendrest of wives —— also wrote a letter to Kempster which I sent a way

Munday the 5

Capt. M. and the doctor went on Shore early this Morning and came of to dinner —— Mr. F. went ashore after Breakfast and came also of to dinner —— the doctor went on Shore after dinner again —— Lieut Long came on board to Speak to Capt. M —— he again came on board to Capt. M who went with him to Majr. Ross on board the Sirius —— a little after four the Ranger Packet got under Way She cheered the comr. the Same as when She came it which the comr. Answerd —— Capt. M and the doctor Arundell came on board a little after Seven —— will sit down and writ my Alicia to morrow So I wish her a good night
Tuesday the 6

went on board the Danish Eastindiaman with Capt. M. and Arundell from that I went on Shore with them and bought two china Basins for one English Shilling which is the only thing that I have Seen that is cheap —— came on board to dinner with them that I went on Shore with —— a french Ship came in but don't know wher she if from —— Mr. F went on board the Danish Eastindiaman —— a nother Sail coming in —— Sail a dutch Ship for Batavia this day —— 30 Sheep came on board this day and wair put in the Place where the women convicts Were —— I think we will find much more Agreeable Ship mates than they were

Wednesday the 7

Capt. M. the doctor and Self went first on board a french Ship from that went on board a dutch Ship with Some letter wher I Saw a boy cald Burnet whose father I know in Holland —— from ther went on board a danish Eastindiaman then on board the Small Sail that came in Yesterday a Portigue from the Brazil which Sail the 1st. of Sept. 4 day before we and has been at Sea ever Since —— from ther we went on board the French Ship that came in Yesterday and found her to be a Packet from Bourdoux bound to the Island of Burbon —— The[y] would not tell use any news only that the[y] Believe it will be a War —— we bought nothing on board any of the Ships —— return on board to dinner —— Mr. F was obliged to Sleep on board the danish Eastindiaman it Blow So hard that we could Send no boat for him —— he went on board the Portigues Eastindiaman —— the doctor and I went on board the Scarborought wher no body was on board but Kellow who with two other Gentlemen were very drunk —— did not Stay long for the[y] were not very agreable company —— So ends this day

Thursday the 8

it blow very hard all night and dose at this Present moment harder than it has done Since I have been in the Ship —— dreamt a bout my Mother god Bless her —— I hope She is well —— the poor convicts nether the Marines have had nor the convicts any thing to eat to day —— it Blows to hard for a Boat to live to Send for any Beef and Soft Bread and ther is no order to give
them any Salt provisions —— a little after 4 the Boroughdales boat brock loos and is gone to Sea —— it Still blows very hard —— I am glad that we are not at Sea now —— wrot a letter to my dear Alicia and one to Kempster which I hope the[y] will Receive

Friday the 9

Capt. M and Mr. F went on Shore in the Morning and came of to dinner —— William my Servant went on Shore and it came on to Blow that he was oblige to Sleep on Shore —— So ends this day —— I went on board with Arundell this Evening the Danish Eastindiaman Wher I bought a piece of Nankeen very fine for 4 Shillings —— got very wett

Saterday the 10

Mr. F: went on Shore in the Beef Boat —— the doctor and Self went on Shore with my letters which I gave to Capt. Davies 23 Regt —— returnd to dinner —— one of the Government Sheep brought forth two Lams this Morning —— hope the[y] will live —— after dinner the doctor and I went on board a portigue Eastindiaman from ther on board the Charlott, from that on board a portigue Brig wher the mate made me a present of a little gare of Sweet Meats —— from ther went on board a french Ship wher the Capt. made me a present a pice of Ebonay and Some Indian corn to Sow at Botany —— I think the[y] are very Kind to me all to give me these thing for nothing —— from ther put Mr. Consident on board his own Ship the Scarborough then Return on board wher Capt. M. and the doctor got to very hight words about nonsence —— Capt. M was in the wrong and not a little gave —— how disagreeable it is for two friends to fall out when the[y] are in Liquor & when the[y] are Sober the[y] are very sorry for it —— the comr. made the Signal for Sailing to day

Sunday the 11

could not Sleep from what past last night —— the Signal made for Sailing but the wind is against use So that we cannot get out —— Some of the Ships got under way as did we to get out of other Ship way when the[y] got under way —— Arndell and Mr. F. went on board the Alexander Soon after Breackfast —— the[y] Soon after Return and Mr. Consident with them who came on board to draw Several mens teeth which he did with the greatest ease and with very little pain to the men —— wanted
him to Stay dinner but he would not —— Mr. Arndell went on board the Charlott and Return with Majr. Ross and the Surgeon Genl. wher the differance which happend last night was Settled but Majr. Ross made use of Landguage to Capt. M: which in My oppinion was not proper for ane officer to make to a nother and desiring him to take cear of himself if the commanding officer had any thing to Say of the above nature it ought to be as privat as possible without it was a publick mater —— went after Tea on board the Scarborought with Arndell from whence I went on board the Alexander to get a little oil which I did from Ballmain who with Sharp came on board this afternoon before Tea but would not Stay to have any —— this been Sunday kist my Beloved as usale on this day —— read the lessens and Spalms of the day —— the Comr. Ship dropt out the Same as we did —— hope that we will get away early in the morning So god Bless and preserve my Alicia and our Sweet Boy —— my God out of his great goodness take cear of them both is my wish of R. Clark

Munday the 12

dreamt last night about Miss Turner —— no wind hardly and that from the Sea —— at 7 oClock a Signal was made from the Sugar loaf for a Sail coming in —— at 1/2 after 9 oClock the dutch Comr. Ship Saluted him he going in Shore which is the custom here —— at 10 oClock Saw the straing Sail coming in which came to ane Anchor at 12 oClock ane American Ship but dont know wher She is from —— the comr. made the Signal to get under Wight —— he made the Signal for his boat to come on board with a white [flag] at the Ensing Staff and fired a Gun —— got under way and Stood out to Sea with the comr. and the whole fleet —— Still a Signal up on the Sugar loaf for a nother Sail —— Should wish to know wher She is from perhaps She has got a letter for me from my dearly beloved Alicia —— god Bless her and our Boy —— god Send use a good passage and a Quick one is my Sinceer wish —— past the other Sail a larg e dutch Ship —— thank God we have got clear of the land —— 4 oClock the comr. made the Signal for the fleet to come into his wak —— about 6 oClock Spoke the Ship Kent of London a Whealer out four months and has got a bout 40 Tuns of oil bound to the eastward of the cape on a Cruse he wanted to know what ship Mr. Watts is on board told him the Lady Penrhyn —— the Land Still in Sight

Tuesday the 13

dreamt of being at Mr. Hartwells to get money —— it blow very hard last night and a great Sea —— it now blows very hard —— have being very Sea Sick all this day —— Capt. M and the doctor and Self got very wett with the Sea Breaking over use
could eat no Breakfast or dinner being so sick —— at 4 oClock the comr. made the Signal for the fleet in come in to his Weak —— Latt. obs. in 34–14S

Wednesday the 14

got no Sleep all last night for the wind and the Sea would not let me Sleep —— dreamt of being in bed with my dear beloved Alicia and that She told me to get up and Shut the room dore as ther was Some body coming up Stairs in the Barracks —— dream also that I had my left arm brock and that lost a Tooth which is all bad dreams my betsey has often told me but I trust in god there is nothing the matter with her or our boy —— also dreamt much about the Barracks and Adjt. Martin —— not So Sea Sick as I was Yesterday —— ther been not so much wind and the Sea is much more gone do wn —— Latte in to day 35–7 South —— the comr. made the Signal for the fleet to come into his weak —— at 3 oClock the Scarborough Spok use to know from wher that Ship was from which we Spok the day that we came out

Thursday the 15

was disturb out of my sleep by the Sergt. of the Guard coming down to Acquaint Capt. M: that the[y] had found Bennet one of the convicts a Sleep in the Long Boat wher he had gone and stole all the convicts Provision that have the liberty of walking the deck wher the[y] put it for Safty —— this Young Rascall had come on deck about 10 oClock to make water and had while the centinell back was turnd Slipt into the long boat wher he had eat So much that he could not Stir and feld a Sleep untill about 2 oClock in the morning when he was found ther —— a bout 9 the comr. made the Signal to tack and the whole fleet Tackt accordingly —— I wish the wind would come a little more fair —— Latte. in to day 35.27 South —— had a salt Beef dinner to [day] will have maney of them befor I get to Botany —— at 1/2 after 5 PM. the comr. made the Signal to Tack again —— put Jno. Bennet both legs in Irons for Sealing the Bread in the Long boat last night —— mark my words that we will not have been at Botany above Six months befor this Young Vilian Bennet comes to the Gallows —— have not been able to get my Alicia a Single moment out of my thoughts but thinking that ther is something the matter with her or our Sweet Boy —— hope in God that there is not —— So I wish them both a good night

Friday the 16
dreamt of walking with my beloved Alicia in dock and the dock Yard and that we went to the Guard room and that Ackney had the Guard —— oh my God my God that I could but only here of her been well —— I would goe without meat for two days and would let the doctor cut of any two of my fingers with pleasure to hear from her —— god Bless her my dear wife the best of woman kind —— little wind and that agains use —— read one of my dear womans letters of Apl. the 27 wher in She tell me to love her She need not have done that for I cannot help loving her and that tenderly too —— if I read any more of her letter I shall goe Quit mad —— Latte. in to day 35:45 South —— God Send use a fair wind —— the comr. made the Supply's Signal to Speak him —— Soon after he made the Agents Signal to Speak him —— Sent his boat on board the Agent who went on board of him —— the Boroghdale came under our stairn and ask use how we did —— told him all well as they were the Same on board of them —— the[y] Say that they have lost a great number of ther fowls as has captain Walton on board here —— thank God that mine (two) are still a live and hope that they will Remain for that is all my stock to begin farming at Botany —— nasty drisling rain to day hope it will bring a change of wind

Saterday the 17

dreamt that my Mother and Beloved Alicia were dead —— oh my God what a dream oh how much did cry in the night in my Sleep also I inquird about the money that my Mother left in Mrs. Humes hands for my Brother and me I hope that Mrs. Hume is dead and that my Beloved Alicia has got the money that Mrs. Stuart left me in her will if So how happy I shall be —— got a nother increas to the number on board one of the Publick Sheep brought forth two fine lams this morning —— the Weather has been very cold for these Several days past —— all the Ship in company —— thank God no Sick on board —— hope that our Gracious God will befriend use as he had done all along in keeping us So healthy —— wish to christ that the wind would change —— Latte in to day 36..30 South —— Lieut Ball of the Supply came on board with or ders from the comr. and Majr. Ross for which See the orderly Book and took away two convict s Thos. Yardsley a Gardner and Will Haynes a Cabinet Maker for which I am very Sorry for as I am affraid that I shall not be able to get my Tea Caddy done which I intended to have made —— Ball informs use that the comr. Majr. Ross Lieuts. King and Daw are going he believes in his Brigg and leave the fleet to follow them to Botany —— the comr. means to take Scarborough and Alexander with [him] also —— that is the reason that he is taking all the carpenters and Gardeners that are in the fleet on board the Supply to have Some houses and Some Ground turned over agains the arriv[al] at Botany —— I wish that the comr. would take our little Ship with him as She Sails So well ——
— the Agent made the Boroughdales and Alexanders Signal to Speak him —— have got a great pain in my Breast —— hope in
god it will Soon leave me —— I wish it was gone for it hurts me very much

Sunday the 18

dreamt again of being with my beloved wife and that you dear woman appeard big with child —— gracious God I hope that
there is nothing the matter with her —— kist her dear Pictour as usual on this day —— put on a flannel Waiscoat for the pain in
my breast which thank God is not So bad as it was last night —— at 8 oClock the comr. made the Signal for the fleet to Tack
and stand the other way —— about 9 oClock he made the Signal again for the fleet to Tack and Stand the Same way that we
were before as we shall be able to lay better up on this tack —— a cold nasty day with drisling rain —— wish to god that the
wind would come fair —— read the Spalms and lessons for the day and offerd up prayers more than daily for the health and
well fare of my dear Tender and most Beautiful Alicia and Son —— God I hope has heard me —— Latte. in to day 37.9 South

Munday the 19

little wind —— the comr. made the Signal for the fleet to Bring too —— Lieut King came on board about 8 oClock with
orders for which See the orderly Book who inform use that the comr. intends to goe in the Brigg when we get to E.Ward of the
cape & that he intend taking the Scarborough and Alexr. with him and make the best of his way for Botany —— hoisted out our
boat and the Master of the Ship went on board the Scarborough the boat Soon after Return —— the comr. boat came on board
for the Master of the Ship who went on board and Soon after Return with orders to Send three sheep and hay on board the Lady
Pernhyn as the horses on board of her will not eat Bran so the[y] are affraid that the[y] will not have hay to Serve them. Jane
Parkenson one of the convict women that was sent from this Ship on board the Lady Penrhyn died a few days Since —— I
thought She would not live long —— I am Exceeding happy to find that we are going with the Comr. when he goes in the
Supply —— I am Sorry though that the orders that came on board to day is to put use to 3 pints a water in the 24 hours which is
too little 2 Quarts we can doe with but 3 pints is too little —— thank God I have a little by me of my own —— the Longe. by
the comr. time pice is 10–19 East So that we have lost by this bad wind near 300 miles —— I wish that it would come fair but I
am affraid that it will come from the old Quarter —— a great number whials came very near the Ship —— I never Saw So
many at once —— Several boat going from Ship to Ships —— Latte in to day by ob [*] On of the Sheep beloning to
Government brought forth a lamb —— I think that if the[y] come as fast a Botany as the[y] have Since the[y] came on board her we will Soon have a good Stock

**Tuesday the 20**

the Ship rold very much all last night ther being no wind to keep her steeddy —— was oblige to get out in the night to put my dressing box in the cubbord which had tumbled out and was all most brock to pices —— no wind —— all the Ships in company with ther heads different Ways —— a great number of Whials a bout the Ship —— thank God that ther is a little wind come and that fair —— hope ther will be more of it and remain in the Same Quarter —— another of the Government Sheep brought forth a lamb to night which is the 6th. Since the[y] came on board —— Spoke the Fisbourn and ask use if we wair going with the Supply when She left the remander of the fleet —— told them Yes —— the agent is Removed from the Fisbourn on board the Alexr. he made the Boroughdales Signal to Speak him —— latt in 37.37 S —— 4 P.M a very fine Breeze going 5 Knots —— dreamt last night that I was going down to Tregadock to take leave of them befor I went to Botany but was assaulted by a great Mob whome I was obliged to handle reather rufly with my Sword befor the[y] would let me pass

**Wednesday the 21**

a very fine Breeze —— all the Ship in company going 8 Knots ane hour which that we continue this for a month then I think Shall not be a great way from Botany Bay —— Latt in to day 38.37 S

**Thursday the 22**

it Blous very hard but it is fair and a great Sea follows us —— all the Ships in Sight —— the fleet is obliged to Shorten Sail for the Supply who is not able to keep up with the fleet it blows too fresh and a great Sea running —— Latte. in to day 39.0 South —— went by the Log Since Yesterday Noon untill to day dito 166 miles not bad going for the little friendship —— a few of them will bring use Soon to Botany —— 6 PM. not So much wind as ther was in the Morning

**Friday the 23**
dreamt that I had Recieved 40 Pounds Prize money from Geoe. Groves hope that my dear Alicia has Recieved that which Government kept back from use —— the Ship rold very much all last night —— very little wind —— all the Ships in company —— the Sea is much gone down by what it was Yesterday —— went by the log Since Yesterday 12 oClock untill to day dito 123 miles —— latte. in to da y by obs. 39.3 South —— Saw Several flying fish to day the first that I have Seen Since I left Rio de Janario —— draw this day a Quart of Rum in part of that which is due me from my allowance —— the wind begines to head use

Saterday the 24

the wind has much head it* use in the night —— a nasty Squaly day —— the wind blows fresh —— all the Ship in company —— Latt 39 South —— gave this afternoon a Quart of Rum to the Boatswain and Carpenter of the Ship for things that the[y] have done for me

Sunday the 25

dreamt of being with my Betsey and that I took Mr. Price home to See my Beloved Alicia and my Pictour which we had done by a limner —— what things I dream of but I wonder if Mr. Price ever goes near my dear woman or to See my Boy —— I thought that he had sent a Bag of Potatoes to Betsey I wish that he may —— kist my beloveds Pictour as usual on this day —— there has been very little wind all this night and morning 8 oClock but it begins to freshing up and it is [my] night of —— all the Ship in company —— have not had any body Sick Since we have been out thank God for it —— to day for the first time in my life drank my tea without Sugar which I intend to doe all the Voyage as my Sugar begins to grou Short therfor will only drink tea and Sugar now and after we get on Shore on certaintd days —— at 9 the comr. made the Supplys Signal to Speak him Soon after he made the Alexanders, Scarborough and our for the Same purpose —— at 10 hoisted out our boat and the master of the Ship went on board the Sirius —— Saw Majr. Ross and Long and theres things going on board the Scarborough Wher the [y] intend to remain untill we get to Botany —— at 11 the comr. Sent his things from the Sirius on board the Supply and Soon after he went himself —— the Sirius cheerd him with three cheers which he and the Boat crew returnd our boat Return with orders to follow the Supply and also not to have any conversation with the Natives when we get to Botany —— Seald orders came on board from Majr. Ross to Capt. Meridith which he is not to oppen unless we Seppereat from the Ships —— 1/2 after
twelf the Supply made Sail as did the alexander Scarborough and use and parted with the rest of the fleet —— god Send use a Quick and Save passaged —— Loge, by the comr. time pice Yesterday 20–48 East —— had no obers. to day —— we have got a fine fair wind wish that it may continue for this month to come —— read the lessons and Spalms for the day of the month —— the Supply has left use and is making the best of her way for Botany So that we are now under the charge of the Agent of Transports

**Munday the 26**

dreamt last night that I had Stole from me my Beloved Alicia old stript cotten gown which I had tied up in a bundle —— the Sirius and remainder of the fleet in Sight but a great Way a stairn —— the Supply a great way a head almost out of Sight —— the Alexander and Scarborough and Self close together —— little wind and that little heading use —— Latt in to day by ob 38.11 South —— went by the last 24 hours 130 miles —— 1 oClock PM the Supply out of Sight —— at 5 ocklock PM very little wind

**Tuesday the 27**

dreamt much about my Betsey, old Mrs. Kempster, Kempster, Mrs. Hume and Mrs. Stuart —— I thought that old Mrs. Kempster came to drink Tea with my Beloved and brought a news paper with her —— god grant that the[y] may be all well —— a bout 4 oClock the Alexander made the Signal for to Tack as the wind has come quit agains use —— I am affraid that we Shall make a long Passaged —— the Sirius and the other Ships out of Sight —— the two Ship in company close to use —— Satt down and mended a few hool in my table cloath of No. 1 —— a fine day very little wind fould against use as it can blow —— hope that it will com round again to its old Quarter So that we may push on —— Latte in to day 38.10 South —— Several Small birds cald by the Seamen Mother carreys chickens which Sea faring people in General Say when the[y] are Seen is a Sure omen that ther is going to be blowing Wether and at present it has all the appearence if it would blow hard to night —— have had my old green coat cut Taild again which is now the third time Since I have been on board —— I am affraid that it will not allow to be piece[d] any more when it wants it again for it is now not much longer than a large waiscoat —— it has been a good Servant
**Wednesday the 28**

it blows So hard that I cannot Sit to write Thursday the 30*  

it blow much harder Yesterday than it has Since I have left england was exceedingly Sea Sick much more So than Since I have been in the Ship the Ship rold her sides under water and the Sea boke over use almost every moment the two Ships in company had no observation Yesterday dreamt last night that I was I thought in Huntsingshire and that Miss Jane Sedgwick was ther and that I kist her Reynolds was ther also I hope he has not been fool enuff to marry her I never was in a Ship that rold So much as this Ship dose I could hardly Sleep last night for it it is quite a calm not a breath of wind from the heavens what a difference between Yesterday and to day ther is still a great Sea up if my dear woman had been on board heer yesterday She would have been pretty frightend Latt in to day 39–40 South 1 oClock god send ther was a little wind to keep the Ship Steeddy 5 oClock thank god that ther is a little wind come hope to be able to have a little ease for befor we had non I have been doing nothing but thinking but a bout home god grant that the[y] may be all in health

**Friday the 30**

the little wind that came last Evening So died away and it was Quit calm about 12 oClock at night but thank God that Since ther has a very fine breeze Spring up and the Ship goes between 4 and 5 knots dreamt of been with Price who I thought was playing cards with Several more a very fine day and a likely hood of the winds continues the two Ship in company Latte. in 39–40 South the Same as Yesterday So that the little we have gone is all Longe. and a Stright line to Botany this is St andrews day Mrs. Stuarts birth day good woman I hope that She is now in heaven I wish her Sister was as good as She was then every body would have had thier own

* See page 256 infra.

* Clark might have meant “it hindered us in the night”.

* Clark undoubtedly means Thursday 29th.
DEC 1787

Saterday December the 1st.

dreamt of being with my beloved Alicia on board Ship —— God out of his great goodness that I could but only here from her to Say that She and our dear Sweet Boy are well —— I would be much more easier than I am —— a very fine day and a good fair wind —— went by the log last 24 hours three degrees of Longatude —— Latt in to day 39–52 South —— 1 oClock Scarborough haild use to Send a line a Stairn which we did and the[y] Sent a fine hind Qr. of Mutton on board for Capt. Walton —— I Should not no objections to cut a few slices from it for I am Quite Sick of Salt Beef and Salt Pork but I must make the best of it I have nothing els in the Mess —— I never lived So poor Since I was born —— drew this afternoon three Quarts of Rum from the Stuart being part of my Allowance

Sunday the 2d.

kist my Alicia Pictour as usual on this day —— gracious God how much I doe love and adore her —— bless her and preserve her is my constant prayer. —— a very fine day and fair wind —— read the lessons and Spalms for the day of the month —— a great number of Porpoises a bout the Ship also Several albitrosses flying a bout —— on of the last born lams died this morning —— a bout 1/2 after 10 the Scarborough came along Side and haild use /to know by Majr. Ross orders/ of Capt. Meridith if the mens Jackets wair all finished answered not Quite —— they are all well as are we —— thank god having nobody Sick on board —— Latt in to day 40–0 South

Munday the 3th.

a very fine Breeze all night —— the two Ships a great way a head of use we have got more Sail Set to day than we have had at any one time Since I have been in the Ship —— Latt in to day 40–38 South —— went by the Log last 24 hours 164 miles —— thirty Such runs as this I think that we shall not be a great Way from Botany —— I wish it was to Plymouth dear Sweet place wher all my happiness my Soul and tendrest Love is centerd —— 1 oClock it blows pretty fresh —— 4 oClock I think
that it will from apperance blow fresh if not hard to night —— Several of Mother carrys chickins flying a bout —— gave 1/2 Pint of Rum to the Ships cook.

**Tuesday the 4**

it blow as I thought would very hard in the night much harder than Since it has done Since we have been from England —— Several heavy Seas brock over use in the night —— I could not Sleep not a wink —— it now blows very hard and the wind has come round to the other Qr. and a very great Sea running —— this is a nasty dirty day it is Exceedingly cold what must it be in the winter if it is so cold now the middle of Summer —— both Ships in Company —— had no observation to day but went by the Log the last twenty four hour 168 miles —— it has turned out a fine afternoon but remarkably cold —— I have hardly found it So cold in England at this time of the Year as it is heer at present —— 5 PM the Agent haild use and told use that his Long was 46–2 East and askd use what we wair in —— told him 46–0 —— all well on board the Alexander —— the Scarborough haild use also and Said that the[y] wair in 45 odd —— all well on board ther

**Wednesday the 5**

lay a Weak the greatest part of the night and did nothing but think a bout home god bless them both —— Quite a calm not a Single breath of wind —— Latt in to day 40.39 S —— much warmer than Yesterday but Still it is very cold —— this afternoon one of the Sheep brought forth a lam the Smallest of the whole that has been lamd Yet

**Thursday the 6**

a great fog cannot See neather of our consorts —— at 8 oClock herd a Gun close too use —— Suppose it to be from the Alexander also ringing of Bells —— at 10 oClock the fog cleard away and the two Ships close to use —— latte. in to day 41–14 South

**Friday the 7**
a very fine breeze and that fair —— have done nothing all this day but thinking about my beloved Alicia and what has affected me so much is that I Sat down and read part of the Play of Jane Gray —— oh what a deep Tragedy it is —— poor Lady I believe She knew that She must died if She accepted the crown —— She did love her husband but not half So much as I love my adorable Alicia —— god only knows how much that I love her I from the bottom of my Soul I love and would Give up life to make her happy —— I wish to christ that I was but once got back to her again —— not all the promotion Should make me part from her again —— Latt 41–21 South —— I cannot rest I wish that it was bed time that I might have a hearty cry that would ease the hevy load that at present is round my heart —— Saw to day a great dele of Sea weed and Several porpuses came about the Ship different from the common Sort —— Mr. Laurance Struck one of them with the harpon but he got away again

Saterday the 8

Still a fair wind hope to God that it will continue for this Month to come —— read the remainder of Lady Jane Gray —— could not help Sheding Tears for So good a Young Lady to come with her fond husband to So untimly ane end as She did —— could not think what makes me So unhappy for these two days past my heart is very hevey and every moment my Alicia comes in to my thoughts that their must be Some thing the matter with her and my Son —— my Alicia my dear woman I hope to God that it may be only conjetor in me from Reading the above Play —— the doctor Pigg has brought forth 5 Young once of which the doctor has given me one for which I am much oblige to him —— Latt in to day 41–7 South —— on of the Sheep brought for a nother Lam this afternoon

Sunday the 9

Dreamt that I was with my beloved Alicia and I thought that I put my hand in her breast —— dear Sweet dream it was honey to my Soul athOUGH in a dream to be with You my adorable woman —— I wish to dream of You and to be You every night —— how I long to be with You again believe me Betsey I never will goe from you again —— have got a great pain in my head and Breast if it is not better to morrow Shall have a little Blood taking from me —— this being Sunday kist your pictour my tender wife the mother of our dear Boy as usual on this day —— I could not help Saying to myself this morning when I was looking on it how good the Almighty has been to me to gi ve So Beautiful So good So Vertious a woman to wi fe as you are Betsey —— I want word to praise your Vertious your are Surly ane Angle and not a woman —— Read the lessons and Spalms
for the day —— had no observation to day —— thick nasty Weather by the wind is fair thank God —— went by the Log last 24 hours 148 miles —— our consorts a bout a mile a head of use —— thank heaven no Sick on board —— the Young lams and Piggs all well —— 3 oClock PM. it blows and rain very hard —— gave the Seamen a bottle of Rum for the[y] are very wett and cold and a Glas wont doe them any harm

**Munday the 10**

Dreamt that I was at Aunt Hawkings last night also that I was at the Governors and he had a letter and Some thing in it about my beloved Alicia —— God bless her and my dr. heavenly Boy —— this is a fine day the wind Shifted on the other Quarter about 12 oClock last night from the N:W: to S:W —— Seems to be the prevailin wind heer —— the pain in my breast and head not so bad as the[y] were Yesterday —— the two Ships in Compy. —— how I am affected with Poor Lady Jane Gray —— I should like to See it acted —— Please God when I Return You and I Betsey will often goe to the Play for You are as fond to See a good Play actd as I am —— Latte. in to day 41–39 South and I Suppose that we are in 60 East Longe. by this time —— went by the Log 132 miles for the last 24 hours —— gave Jno. Best one of the convicts a Glass of Rum he appeard to be very cold

**Tuesday the 11**

My God how the Ship did roul last —— did not close my Eyes the whole there being a great Sea and little wind —— if my dear Betsey had been here how She would have been frightend for her Clark her Son and Self —— Sat down and wrot a few lines on her Vertues which I intend to Send home to you in my first letter —— I have Said nothing but what is Your due Betsey my Belovd Woman —— Latt in to day 41–21 South —— Wind S:W: —— the Scarborough haild use and asked use how we are —— told use that they are all very well —— the pain in my head Quit gone but the pain in my breast much the Same —— I wish to God that it was gone also no body that can be cald Sick on board —— what a Great Blessing

**Wednesdady the 12**

dreamt that I was with You my dear Betsey and that You Said Some thing to me a bout going to Exeter which I don't
Recollect now what it was besides some thing informs me that you are going to live there my wife — the pain in my breast the same I wish to God that it was gone — sleep much better than I did the night before — this is a fine day and good fair breeze — our two consort in company — the wind is N:W: our course S.E. and by E. — latte in 41–18 south Tuesday the 13

dreamt about Mrs. Creswell that I saw her walking with her husband — a fine breeze it shifted from the NW: to S:W: at 8 o’clock — it rained a good deal in the night and this morning — it is now a fine day — went the last 24 hours 163 miles — latte in to day 41–46 south — we are now a breast of Kergullins land on the Island of Desolation where Capt. Cook put in to on Christmas day and called the harbor Christmas harbor from the day — he found it remarkable could there although it was the height of summer and if we were a few degrees more to the souther than we are at present we would so also the Island of Desolation lies in the latte 48 south long 67–odd east — by the ships reconing we are in long 67–30 east — I hope to God that we will be at Botany about the middle of January — gave some rum to Duhagen one of the seamen

Friday the 14

dreamt that I was in the barracks with you my belovd Betsey and that I saw our dear sweet boy running back and forward a cross the room — God out of his great goodness pocket him and you my tender wife — I dreamt a great deal more about you also about Lt. & Adjt. Martin and Reynolds then fell — little wind in the night as there is still but that little is right aft — our two consorts in compy. — put Robt. Sidaway in a pair of leg irons for being impertinent to Mr. Faddy — this is the fellow that the doctor of the Mercury shot through the arm when they rose and took the ship — he is a dashing valinous fellow I should have flogged him if I had been commanding officer for his behavior — drew this day 3 pints of rum from the Stuart of the ship being part of my allowance — lat in to day 41–40 south — at 4 P:M the Scarborough hailed use to asked use how we all did — asked them the same and found them the same as we very well — Capt. M inform Majr. Ross that he could not go on with the mens clothing as the tayler had lost his sheers overboard — Majr. Ross inform Capt. M to go to the Alexr. and Mr. Fuzer would give use a pair — a 5 o’clock hailed the Alexr. and informed Mr. Fuzer what Majr. Ross had desired use — Mr. Fuzer inform use that they were all on board the Scarborough amongst the stores — Lieut J. Johnstone and Sharp asked me how I did told him very well — this afternoon a little hawk came on board and one of the men caught it — found that it belonged to some body on board the Scarborough when he let it fly away for its nastyness — the man that
caught it let it fly away again and Poor little thing in Endeavering to reach the Alexr. it fell in the water —— I Suppose must be drownd —— Sat down and wrot out a Memd. of every thing that I have got as I dont know what things I have and have not —— Shall not be able to Get an Account of every thing untill I get to Botany —— So God Bless you my dear Betsey I also dreamt last night Betsey that X —— this Evening on of the Sheep brought forth a nother lam

Saterday 15th.

a good Breeze Sprung up in the Middle watch —— dreamt that I had Sh . . . my Breechess last night —— my Dear Betsey I think if you was here Betsey and I telling you So you would call me nasty fellow —— this is a very fine day and a good wind thank God for it and for keeping use So healthy as we are —— our two consorts in in company —— Latt in to day 41–30 South —— the Sea the Same if it was all Blood from the Spor of Whale —— Several Large ones about the Way call this the read Sea

Sunday the 16

dreamt last night that I was again with You my Alicia and I thought that You was going to take Some bodys child to nurse who had Sore Eyes and I was much against —— I hope to god that our dear Boy has not got Sore Eyes Betsey —— Kist your dear image this day as usual —— read the the Prayer lessons and Spalms for the Day —— a very fine wind —— run the last 24 hours 172 miles which is delightful going —— latt in 24–9 South —— 4 oClock PM it blows fresh I think it will blow hard from appearances and ther is also a great number of Mother Carrys chickens flying a bout —— our Consorts in Compy.

Munday the 17

it came on to blow and rain very hard last night —— gave the Seamen a glass of Rum each as the[y] are very wett —— dreamt that I Saw Kempster and White walking and that Kempster Shook me by the hand very kindly I wish that I could —— I should not be a great way from you my Beloved Betsey & Should Soon Shak you by the hand also —— Quit calm almost —— our two consort in compy. —— a great many porpossesses came about the Ship —— had no observation to day the Sun not being out —— wrot a few lines to You my beloved Alicia
Tuesday the 18

in the Night the wind Sprung up from S by W: wher it now remains and blows fresh and cold —— dreamt that I was with you my Betsey and that I put you on horsback but you could not ride on Account as you informed me that your X bad —— I then rode away and left You and return and mett You in the road —— Some body els with you Singing —— I dreamt also my beloved wife about Lieut Wade —— I thought that he came on board this Ship and that we were on our passagd to England —— I wish to God that it was true then I Should I hope soon be able to clasp you My Tender woman in my fond Arms and hugg you to death with Love and Kind kisses —— it is very cold to day we are now going to dinner 1/2 after one oClock —— the difference of time is so great that I dont Suppose you have got your Breackfast yet it not being much after Eight oClock you have got milk to Your Tea —— I drink mine without that or Sugar as I am obliged as of the former I have non and of the later very little but I dont begrudge you my lovely woman if it was ten times bitter —— Latt in to day 42–00 South —— our Two consorts in Compy.

Wednesday the 19

dreamt again of my beloved Alicia —— oh my God I hope that there is nothing the matter with you my tender woman or that of our dear Boy but I suppose my dreaming of you last night was that of my reading Some of your dear tender letter Yesterday —— oh what Sweet languaged your letters contain my only friend —— I wish to God that I had inform you all after our Marriaged then as You Say we Should not have been obliged to this long Seperration but it is Gods will only I trust in him that you will only Keep up you Spirrits for your fond husband Sake and our dear little Engagin boy —— the day Betsey is Remarkable cold and blows fresh —— our consorts in Compy. —— Latt in 41–59 South —— dreamt also of Mr. Bedlake with whome I was and I thought that he had a wigg on —— I hope he and his good woman are well

Thursday the 20

the Alexander carried away her F T S Yard in the Slings and are oblige to goe under ane Easy Sail untill the[y] get up a nother —— a very cold day but a fine fair wind —— latt in 42–01 South —— we are now much about half way from the Cape to Botany being to day in Longe. 83–odd East —— botany is in Longe. 152 odd East —— it haild and Snowd to day it being So
cold that I have been obliged to put on a flannel Waiscoat and place of one pair of stockings two pair and obliged to keep my great coat constantly all day

Friday the 21

dreamt again last night of my beloved Betsey you dear woman in constant thought whether Sleeping or a wake —— dreamt also of Mr. Price I should be glad to know if ever he gives himself the trouble to See you or our boy —— Alicia Some thing tells me that he dose not if So I am not much disapointed if he dose call on you and take notice of Ralph I am only a little * —— it is much warmer to day if Yesterday —— This is the Shortest day with you Betsey and it is the Longest here with use —— our two Consorts in Compy. —— little wind but that thank God fair —— Latt in 42–01 South the Same as Yesterday —— wrot a prayer for the health and welfare of you my dear wife and Sweet Son which I should with the assistance of God repeat Morning and Evening before my Rising from Bed and going to it and hope in Almighty God that he will here me

Saterday the 22

dreamt my beloved woman I thought that I was at the Barracks and that Poor Budd (who is now I hope with God) and Geo. Foster was with me —— a fine fair wind but the old Agent will not make the most of it by Setting more Sail —— Latt in to day 42–22 South —— 3 oClock PM: it blows pretty fresh and a great Manny of Mother Carry's Daughters flying about which is in general a certain omen that it will blow hard which we may expect as the Sun leaves to morrow and Returns to the nortward

Sunday the 23

kist your Pictour as usual on this day and Read the Prayers lessons and Spalm for the day —— Wm. Evans and Jno. Patrick tuo of the Prisoner made a complaint that the rest of the Prisoners constantly detaind ther allowance from them and gave them what the[y] Pleased of it —— the[y] also informd that the[y] had Stole a great dele of wood and Beef which the[y] Said had been handed out of the hole at different times —— I went down in the Fore Prisen and found the Beef and 29 large Billits of wood —— on Examing we found that Heny. Lovell and Heny. Cable two of the Prisoner who have the liberty of going about the Ship had Stole the Beef and wood out of the Fore when they had gone down to pump water —— ther never were Such D . . .
. . . Rascals collected together as there is on board this Ship —— I will keep a sharp look after them when at Botany otherwise the[y] will take the teeth out of my head —— Latt in to day 42–31 South —— went by the Log last 24 hours 135 miles

**Munday the 24**

a very fine day —— Capt Walton kild one of his Sheep to day —— went down to the Scarborough and haild him that if he would Send a line on board we would Send him a Qtr. of Mutton —— he informd use that he had kild a Sheep so that he has plenty —— found them all well —— the[y] informd use that he was Yesterday in 100–19 East Longe. and Capt Walton only in 96–22 East —— thank God that we are So much father a head than what I thought we were —— Longe. in to day 42–49 South —— a great Whale under the Stairn and followd the Ship for Some time —— Capt. Walton Sent of a leg of Mutton —— if it had not been for that I doe not know what I Should have gave them for dinner to Morrow Except Salt Beef or Pork which is all that I have to give them otherwise for dinner but if I was with You Betsey at home I know what you would give your fond Clark Tuesday *

this been Christmas day kist your dr Image as usual on Sundays —— God I wish You Betsey my dr. Beloved wife and Sweet Boy both a Merry Christmas & happy New Year and many many of them —— O God Grant that I was at home with you to eat of your Goose and Apple Piy for I shall have only a Poor dinner here —— never Betsey did your Poor Ralph live So ill as I doe at Present —— never will I goe to Sea without laying in Some Sea Stock —— if my Mess Mates will not I will drink Both your health as I doe every day although only in Water but it is with a Sincere wish —— So God Bless you —— Latt in 42–51 South —— run last 24 hours 160 miles

**Wednesday the 26**

Several of the Marines got much in Liquor Yesterday —— a very fine breeze —— went by the Log last 24 hours 172 miles —— had no observation to day it been thick rainy wether —— our consorts in compy. —— it has turned out a fine afternoon but very little wind

**Thursday the 27**
dreamt about Kempster I thought Betsey that him and I was in a Strange place —— I hop that nothing is the matter with him or family —— in the night the wind freshend up —— a dirty day had no observation to day —— I wish to God that we had got to Botany that I might be able to get Som Greens or other for I am much affraid that I shall get the Scurvy —— oh that I was onc[e] got home to you my beloved Betsey how I would kiss and presse you to my Bosom

**Friday the 28**

dreamt my Beloved that I was at home with you and that I wanted you and you would not let me —— a very fine day —— our two consorts in company —— went by the log last 24 hours 152 miles —— Latt in to day 43–57 South —— how thankful we ought to be to God for the fair wind that we have had for these Six weeks past —— if it contunious 14 days more I hope to be at Botany for never was any body So Sick of the Sea as I am —— if I could heer or See or [have] You to be with me it would not be So long as it is my beloved wife and Tender Alicia

**Saterday the 29**

dreamt that you and I was walking in a Strange Place my Beloved woman and it was raining very hard and you had nothing on You but a white bed Gown and black handkerchiff and I wanted to goe back for your Cloak but you would not let me —— I hope in God my beloved Betsey that you and Ralph are Both in health and welfare —— what would I give my God my God to here from you —— it will be a long long time before I can —— a very fine day and have a most charmin run last 24 hours went 181 miles —— Latt in 43–56 South So that it is all Longe. that we have made

**Sunday the 30**

Kist your dr. Pictour as usual on this day and God Bless you my Betsey —— read the Prayers and lessons of the day —— the Scarborough a little befor 8 haild use and ask how we all did —— told them very well as the[y] wair also the[y] informed use that the[y] were in Longd. 123–4 East —— Capt. Walton informd them that he was in 119 odd —— a bout 10 oClock the Alexander haild use and informd use that they was by a luniar observation this Morning in Longe. 125–2 East told use also that the[y] wair all very well on board —— Latt in to day 43–49 South
Munday the 31

a fine day and good Breeze and that fair thank God — this is the last day of the Year 1787 — I hope for your Sake my beloved Alicia that before this time twelf months to be a first Lieut — to Morrow is New Years day — hope you and our dr. Sweet Boy will have a happy one and a great many of them is your fond Clark constant Prayer and wish — went by the log last 24 hours 170 miles — Latt 43–50 South

* Clark means Thursday 13th.
* MS damaged.
* No date given in MS.
JAN 1788

1788 Tuesday the 1

This being New Years day my beloved Alicia I wish You and our dr. boy maney maney happy Returns of the day — trust in God that he will defend you my Sinceer friend and Amiable wife from all Perils and dangers Preserve You in health and welfare and that of our dear Ralph who is Sweet as the Bloom of Spring is the most Sinceer wish of your dr. and fond husband —— this is the first new Year that I have been away from You hope it will be the last but why doe I hope So when I am certain I must be two or three a way longer —— oh I wish I had never come —— it blows very hard and the wind has headed use very much —— went by the log last 24 hours 168 miles —— Latt in 44–00 South —— it is now 1 oClock and I am going to sit down to the Poorest dinner that ever I Sat down too on a New Years day a pice of hard Salt Beef and a few musty Pancakes and You my Beloved wife wont be out of Bed these 3 hours it not being 5 oClock in the morning in England yet there being more than Eight hours difference —— gave to the men one Quart one pint and a half Pint of Rum it being New Years day to drink your and Ralphes health

Wednesday the 2

Sleep remarkable well I had clean Sheets put on last night —— the wind came aft again in the night ther is now very little of it —— our two consorts in company —— at 11 oClock the Alexander made our Signal to Speak him —— he haild use and informed use that he would his boat on board for a cask of oatmeal which the[y] Soon after did —— I ask the people in the Boat how all the Gentlemen did on board —— the[y] told me very well —— also asked them if the[y] had Buried any body Since the [y] left the cape —— the[y] answerd two convicts but that the[y] were now very healthy only one marine Sick on board —— haild the Alexander and informed them that our oatmeal was very Sower answerd use to Send them the best that we had —— fine mild day —— hope to See the land of New holland by friday or Saterday next —— was obliged to Send the boat away without the Oatmeal found that there was non in the Ship —— haild the Alexander to Know of the Commissary what we was to have in the room of the Oatmeal answerd Pease —— haild the Scarborough and asked them how the[y] all did found them the Same as on board here very well ——
Thursday the 3

dreamt that I was with my Mother and also with Poor Mrs. Stuart good woman — I hope She is in heaven — a very fine Breeze — went by the log last 24 hours 156 miles — Latt in 43–54 South — had a very good Lunar observation and they find them Selfs in 141–odd East Longe. So if the Breeze continues we will See the land to Morrow — Scully Island as Capt. Furneaux call it after his Brother Place now Parson Furneaux near the mile house — [bound?] the cables to the Anchors — our two Consorts in Company — I was affraid that Capt M and Mr. F would have Quarled to day — I never came across Such a Selfish fellow in all my life as he is — I hope that he will not give me cause to Quarle with him for the Short time that we are to be together

Friday 4

dreamt by beloved Alicia again that I was with Mrs. Stuart and that She gave me Some Gold and a Diamond Breast Pine — dreamt also that Your Brother Mattw. was chasing me on a white horse but I got away from him then I was at Kempsters and was handing Mrs. Kempster in a coach drawn by Six Black horses and that She was going a long Journey — I hope that nothing is the Matter with Kempster or his family — a very fine Breeze and as fair as it can blow — went by the log last 24 hours 191 miles not bad going — hope to See the land this Evening — the Mess drew for Some thing that could not be divided there was three prizes and a Blank and I was the most luckily I drawd the Filtrin Stone, the doctor the Mustard Pott and Mr. Faddy a rotten Pumpkin Capt. M the Blank — Capt. M and Mr. F had Some words again — Mr. F is the most Selfish grumbling and bad hearted Man I was ever Mess mates with — I am glad that he is going to leave our Mess when we get to Botany — I wish that we were there I hope it will not be long — it came on to blow fresh — carried away the F T M Studding Sail Boom and rent the sail to pices — at Six PM: could See no land as was Expected — at 7 PM the Agent made the Signal for the Ships to Bring too — I am very glad that he has made that Signal not having had any observations to day we might perhaps run on board of it before we knew that we was near it —

Saterday 5

Lay Too untill 3 oClock this morning — it blows very hard with Rain 8 oClock not land in Sight — at 11 oClock Capt
Walton and I thought that we Saw the land and So it was for Soon after the man at the Mast Head cald out that he Saw the land to windward —— made the Signal to the Agent that we Saw the land by hoisting the Ensing which the[y] Answerd —— it is very hight land —— I am Glad that we have Seen the land —— I wish that I was going from as I am going to Stay on it for Some time —— it is a great Way to Botany near Eight hunder miles Yet and the wind is a foul as it can blow —— the land Bears from use NNE —— had no observation —— I wish to god that we were got to ane Anchor at Botany Bay as well for my self as for the Poor Sheep on Board —— the[y] have hardly hay Sufficient to keep life in them if we Should be oblig to Stay out much longer the[y] must all die and we be obliged to Eat our Provision without cooking it as there will be no firing in the Ship —— the wood has been out these 3 weekes past and the[y] Say ther is not a weeks coals in the Ship a poor look out for them that had the fitting the Ships out —— what would we have done if we had not had Such fair winds as we have been Blest with Since we left the other Ships we must all have Starved —— one of the Lams died in the night —— 3 oClock it blous very hard —— Stood from the land the[y] brought too under close reeft T Sails —— poor things one of the Sheep died this afternoon and Several more will goe the Same way in a few days —— kild one of the Young Pigs this afte rnoon how I shall feast to morrow —— Please God I wish that you were here my beloved Betsey to have a pice of it for I know that you are as Remarkably fond of Pig as I am ——

Sunday 6

could not get to Sleep untill 3 oClock this morning and did nothing all the time but think about You and our dr. Sweet Boy —— it blow very hard in the night —— it been Sunday Kist Your dr. image as usual on this day and read the Prayers Lesson and Spalms for the day —— thank God this is a fine day and Standing in for the Land —— the Scarborought made the Signal at 11 oClock for Seing the land —— Saw the land Soon after from the deck it appears very hight the Same as the land that we Saw Yesterday but it cannot be the Same as we run a great way to the Southward and Eastward —— Latt in to day 44–01 South —— this being old Christmas day I wish you mannny happy Returns of the day my dear Woman God preserve you in health and welfare is your Clark constant Prayer —— the land bears from use NN:W: about 5 or 6 Leagues —— made a most excelent dinner —— a 4 PM the Scarborough haild use and asked use how all did —— told them very well as we found them —— another of the Sheep died this afternoon poor things I am affraid the[y] will all died if we dont get in Soon a 6 the Agent made the Signal to Speak the Scarborough ——
Munday 7th.

very little wind and much warmer than we have had it Since we left the Cape —— the land not in Sight —— Served the Mens Necessaries —— made a twelf [night] cake and it is very good but not So good as if You had made it Alicia —— I wish that it was of your making —— Latt in 43–46 South —— had two pair of Breechess made of the pice of Nankeen which I bought at the cape and was obliged to cut up one of my Shirts for Pockits and linning —— I could not wear it any longer it been So torn and gone Bad ——

Tuesday 8th.

dreamt again my beloved Alicia that I Saw You big with child my dr. woman I wish that I was at home we would See what we could doe and get a little Alicia to be the image of your self —— I also dreamt Some thing about Kempster but I doe not Recollect what it was —— this is a foggy day and the wind Quite against use —— 1/2 past 8 the agent made the Scarborough Signal to Speak him —— at 10 the Scarborough haild use and told use to keep near the Agent as it is foggy wether and that if the wether continued So that when he made the Signal to Tack if he could not See use or the other Ship he would fire 2 Guns which was to be Answerd by one from use and the Scarborough —— Majr. Ross askd Capt. M if the Marine Cloothing was done and to get the Mens Arms and Accoutrement ready for landing —— drew a Quart of Rum to give the Tayler and the man that cut my hair a Glass of Grog each —— Latt in 43–06 South —— at 5 PM the Alexr. made the Signal for the land —— Saw the land a few Minuets after very plain —— the Scarborough haild use again and told use that Majr. Ross desired use to give the Sheep anything that the[y] would eat as the hay was all out and the corn did not agree with them and desired use to hail the Alexr. and See if the[y] had any hay which we Soon after did but the[y] have got non —— the Land is St. Marias Island distance 4 or 5 Leagues and the land to Leeward of use is Cald Tasmans head distance between 6 or 7 Leagues —— at 1/2 past Six the Agent made the Signal for the Ships to Tack —— answerd it and Soon after Tacked —— Saw a great many Seals about the Ship —— Saw also the Trees on the Shore after the fogs clearing away —— it looks if it would blow hard to night ——

Wednesday 9
it blow in the night and dose still very hard —— Split our FTM Stay Sail in the night and carry away our peak haillaird this forenoon —— our consorts in Sight —— the wind as foull as it can blow —— I wish that it would come fair —— Latte 43–17 South —— lost 11 miles Since Yesterday —— 2 oClock PM almost Quite calm I hope that we are going to have a fair wind my dear Betsey my Beautiful fair one —— 1/2 past 3 thank God the wind is come Quite fair —— I hope it will remain So it has been a Terrible night and day for the poor Sheep and Young Lambs I wish the[y] were all at Botany ——

Thursday 10

dreamt that I was with Kempster Smugellin —— it blows very hard —— another of the Sheep died this morning She was big with Lamb and Several more are lickly to goe the Same way —— Saw Several Seals about the Ship —— Latt in 42–09 South —— less wind than there was in the morning —— 4 oClock Quite Moderat —— caught what the[y] call in England a Horse Sting Some a Kingsfisher fly —— it must have been blown of from the land —— this is a hard harted wind I wish that it would change and come fair ——

Friday 11

in the middle watch it was Quite calm and Soon after it came to blow very hard as it dose at this present —— oh my dear woman if you was on board how Sea Sick you would be but I wish to God that You was I should be much happier than I am at present for then I should be able to have You in my arms and attend You if You was Sick wher I am oblige to be content with huggin your dear Pictour to my fond Bosom —— oh my God when shall I here from You how long will it before —— oh I pray constantly for them to goe that I might again pres You to this fond Breast of mine your tender husbands —— God out of his goodness bless and preserve You and that of our dear Son —— 12 oClock it Still blows very hard —— Latt in 42–07 South —— a great many Albertrosses flying about ——

Saterday 12

It blow in the Night Remarkable hard —— Split to pices our main Stay Sail —— dreamt that Majr. Foster was dead and that Mrs. F was going to be married to Capt. Cumings —— that God the wind is much more favourable and it dont blow to So hard
nor So great a Sea —— could hardly Sleep for the Ships rolling for she did roll most Tremendously —— it is Quite a fine day got up our TG Yards which we were oblige to get down Yesterday —— the Scarborough haild use and askd use how we all did and found them the Same as we very well —— hope to be at Botany bay by Tuesday next if the wind Stands —— Latt in to day 39–14 South ——

**Sunday 13**

For these Several day past have been all over Small pimples which Ich very much have taking a dose of Physick to day for it —— hope that will doe me good —— there have been but little wind these last 24 hours —— this being Sunday Kist Your dear Pictour as Usual on this day —— Read the Prayers lesson and Spalms for the day —— I wish that a fair wind would come for I long much to get ashore my beloved Betsey to have Some fish or anything fresh for I cannot eat the Salt Beef and Pork I am Quite Sick of them —— a good wind would carry use there in two days it not being above 260 miles from use now —— Latt in to day 38.22 South —— our consorts in Compy ——

**Munday 14**

dreamt My Beloved Betsey that I was Made a First Lieut and when I told it you, you Cryd on which I took You in my fond arms and gave you a fond kiss —— Geo Ventor was who inform me that he had Received a letter from Mr. Martine where he informed him that I and two more were made first Lieuts. —— I wish to God that it was so my Tender woman for Your Sake and that of our dear Boy's —— dreamt also Something about Capt. O'Dotherty but dont Recollect what it is —— it has fell Quit Calm Since four oClock this morning —— I was in hopes that we would have been able to have Seen the land this Evening but Since the wind has left use we will not —— drew Yesterday one Gallen and a half of Rum from the Stewart being part of my Allowance which I have Bottled up and will draw the remainder what is due to me to Morrow —— thank God (10 oClock) there is a little Breeze come hope it will help use along although it is not So fair as it was Yesterday afternoon —— it is very warm to day —— Latt in to day 36–41 South So that we have only 161 miles of Latt to goe to Botany and a few of Longd. —— this Breeze which we have got from the Eastward would Just carry use in to the Bay or harbour being a fair wind in —— the Physick which I took Yesterday has done me a great dele of good —— I wish that I had a pice of a goose I would much reather Sitt down to it than the dinner which I am going to partake of today Pease Soup and Pork and Rice puddon —— I am Quite
Tuesday 15

dreamt last Night My Beloved Alicia that I was with You in strange Place and that I long for a Goose but could not get any but You Sent my dr. woman and got me Some Mutton chops —— I hope to God that you or our dear Boy are not ill for if you Recollect You often told me that dreaming of Meat or Eating was a Sign of Sickness —— I hope to God that it may not be So —— a fine day got up early but no land in Sight and have Stood the Same way —— 10 oClock the agent made the Signal for Seeing the land —— Saw it Soon after from the deck right a head —— it appears very high land —— 12 oClock close in with the land by the charts it is Cape Dromadary about 138 miles to the Southward from Botany Bay —— can See the Trees very plain on the Shore —— I wish it was Botany —— Latt in 36–18 South —— have gone only 23 miles last twenty four hours to the Northward the wind being So much against use it cannot be worse —— 1 oClock the Agent made the Signal for the Ships to Tack —— Tacked and hove too to Sound and found the depth of Water 30 fathom fine Sandy Bottem with Shells and Small Stones —— got my camp Table finished this afternoon for which I am very Glad —— gave one of the Marines a Glass of Grog for Eight half pennys to make me Som hingens for my Tea caddy's —— two of Seamen Sick being the only that may be cald Sick and they are not very bad thank God we have been Remarkably lucky having been So healthy he has been very good to use —— at 6 PM the Agent made the Signal for the Ships to keep near hi m —— a great manney Porpoises a long Side the Ship hope it will be a Sign to that the wind is going to change ——

Wednesday 16

Sleep remarkably bad from the Ships picthing So much —— dreamt that Poor Reynolds was dead —— I hope that there is nothing going a miss with him Poor fellow —— dreamt also that I Saw Mr. Hartwell who also told me that Reynolds was dieng at Sallys at the Coffy house —— little wind and that as bad a wind as blows —— at 9 the Signal made to Tack Ship and Stand in shore —— at 10 the Signal made to Tack Ship again for the wind heads use on this Tackd —— at 12 the Signal for Tack Ship again the wind is it Seems to be against use let use Stand on what Tack we will —— I wish to God my lovely woman we had got to Botany we dont lay Better upon this Tack than NW and be W: the wind cannot be worse than it is at present —— it
being cloudy had no observ. to day it is become Quite a Calm ——

Thursday 17

it thundered an Lightning very much last night and never Saw So havey rain —— it began at 6 oClock in the Evening & continued untill 11 the fell calm from blowing almost a hurrican —— dreamt that Your Sister Mary and I were at the Prince George in Plymh. but I dont know how She or I come there but She was drest like a Servent Girl —— I hope Poor Girl she is as well as I wish her —— then She wont be bad of my dear Betsey —— it is quit a calm and the Sun is Remarkable hott —— I wish to God that a fair wind would come for 12 hours then we would be at Botany —— we have been Sett away to the Southward Since the day befor Yesterday 15 miles So that we are that much father from Botany than we was then —— Latt in to day 36–33 South —— Got a dale box made to hold my Butter flys for you my dear woman —— thank God that we have got a fair wind —— hope it will remain So Untill the day after to morrow ——

Friday 18

dreamt by beloved Alicia that I was walking with You and that you was in Your Riding habit then Mrs. and Mr. Kempster was with use but I Soon after lost You and So I did them —— oh my dr. woman when Shall I be able to here from You —— oh my Tender Betsey what would Your fond Ralph give for a letter from You my dear Beloved wife I must not think too much about it otherwise I Shall be besides myself —— fine Breeze and that as fair as it can blow and the day not So very hott as it was Yesterday and the day before —— Latt in 35–34 —— The Scarborough haild use and askd use how we all did told them as Usual all well —— at Six oClock P.M. the man at the Mast head cald out for Seing the land on the L.Bow —— made the Signal to the other Ships which they Answerd —— Saw the land Soon after from the deck but not very plain —— one of the Sheep poor thing is So Wek that She c ould not bring forth her lamb So that they were oblige to take them away by force and the[y] were both dead —— I am Surprize that any of the Sheep are alive for the[y] have had nothing for these Several days past but water and flouer —— I hope we will get in to morrow as much for my own as there Sakes poor things —— 1p[m] the Agent made our Signal to Speak use —— Soon after 2 haild use to know how the land Bore Answerd W:N:W: —— Spoke to Balmain and Sharp and found them all well ——
**Saterday 19**

Got up very Early to See the Land which was very near use —— thank God that there was a fine Breeze —— 9 oClock Saw the Supply Brigg in Botany Bay at Anchor —— Saw at 10 oClock a great maney of Natives of Point Solander as it is cald to which we went very near which is the South Point as we goe in to the Bay —— Saw also a great manny on the North Shore —— at 1/2 past ten came to ane Anchor and found riding heer the Supply Who only had got in Yesterday at 2 oClock —— the Supplys Boat came on board with Some hay for the Sheep which I am very Glad of for the Poor Sheep that had her Lambs taking from her died in the night —— the Supply Boat has been on Shore often had intercourse with the Natives who the[y] Say are very friendly but I will not trust them —— thanks to my good and Gracious God for his kindness to your Ralph in preserving me in health and welfare and from the dangers of the Sea and has brought me Save to the place of our destination —— oh my Beloved Betsey return thanks and Prayers to him for his kindness to me and I hope that he will be —— friend me still —— I cannot Say from the appearence of the Shore that I will like it the only thing I ask is that it may be a healthy place —— Capt M went on board the Scarborough where he Staid all day —— Lieut J Johnstone came on board to See me and Staid to Tea —— caught a great manny fish ——

**Sunday 20**

Kist Your dear Imaged as Usual on this day and read the Prayers as usual on dito —— Sent a Copl. and four men on shore on duty and Capt. M and the doctor return long after I was in bed and Capt. M a little gone —— he informed me that it was Majr. Ross orders that ane officer Should constanty be on deck Day and night which will be hard duty for Faddy and me but Since it is So I will doe it with the greater Pleasure —— at 9 oClock the Supply made the Signal for the fleet —— Soon after Saw them in the offing coming in which the[y] did —— Soon after all the Ships which beloning to the fleet which we parted compy. —— thank God the[y] are all come Save —— haild the P. of Wales and Charlott and ask the Lads on board how the[y] did answerd all well —— I also haild the Lady Penryn and found them on board there well —— a very fine day —— it is not resolved on what Side we Shall Settle Yet —— I wish the[y] were a little quick about it —— Robt. Sidaway was put out of Irons this day

**Munday 21**
a very fine day —— Capt M and Mr. F went fishing at day light and Staid all day —— Lieut J Johnstone came on board with order for me to goe on Shore with a Party of Men consisting of ten and Sergt. and brought with him four tents which I am to pitch by day light and to See the orders put in force for which See the orderly Book —— caught but very little fish —— it is remarkably hott what must it be on Shore if it is So here

Tuesday 22

Lieut Long come on board with orders from Majr. Ross to countermand the orders of my going on Shore this morning According to the orders of Yesterday —— a very hott day —— Mr. F went on Shore with Lieut King of the Sirius to Show him the place wher Capt M and him Yesterday —— Capt. M. went out of the Ship Early this morning and dined out —— orders came on board for to hold the men beloning to Capts. Campbells and Tench's companies to hold themselfs in readyness to Land to Morrow Morning Early —— the Commodore went out Yesterday to Brooking Bay about 6 Leagues to the northward to See if there is a better place for use to Settle and more water than there is here —— he is not Yet Returnd I Believe he will tonight —— the Doctor went on board the Scarborought and Alexr. and I am left here by my self to think the more over your Virtueus my dear Betsey may the great God Bless you ——

Wednesdadey 23

went on board the Scarborough with Arendell to Breakfast there —— from that went on Shore with him and Davey to the South Shore where the[y] intend to make the Settlement where we Saw Majr. Ross —— Walk a great way in the country use three and Willm.[?] but did not See any of the Natives —— after walking a great way Sat down to dinner with what we had brought with use when Arundell by Accident run the Kniff throu his hand —— I bound it up & Stoped the Blood —— I hope that the Comr. will find out a better place at Port Jackson for use to Settle for if we are oblige to Settle here at the Place they intend there will not a Soul be a life in the course of a Year —— the Comr. is Returnd as the Boats are comming in —— returned on board the Scarborough where we Staid Supper then Returned on board —— thank God that we are to Remove to port Jackson and not Stay here at Botany Bay —— the Comr. Says he would not wish for a better place to Settle at than at Port Jackson both healthy and a pleasent Spot —— I wish that we may find it So ——
Thursday 24

how I am disappointed for this morning the[y] Said that theer were two Ships or Supposed from England —— I was my beloved wife that the[y] were from England but the Comr. Says that the[y] are two French Ships on discoverys in the South Seas —— I thought to have had a letter before now from You —— this Morning the wind is against them the[y] will not be able to come in —— when will I my beloved Betsey be able to here from You I Sometimes think never —— oh Terrible thought Such thoughts will Soon bring me to my Grave —— Capt. Shea and Balmain dinned on board of use and Sharp came on board to Tea and Staid Supper —— orders came on board for which See the orderly Book

Friday 25

gott under way about 5 oClock in the morning but was obliged to bring too again as was the rest of the Ship could not get out of the Bay otherwise this would be a fine wind for use to Port Jackson we would get there in a few hours with this wind in 3 hours —— I am very happy my Betsey that we are not to Stay here and So near going for if we had staid here it would have been the Grave of all of use —— the Strang Sails not in Sight —— this is a fine wind if the[y] intend to come in here —— Sent two corporals away on board the Charlotte According to orders of Yesterday and 4 convicts on board the Sarborough by Majr. Ross's orders who came on board after we had gott all in ' —— for that purpose was obliged to come to an Anchor as was all the rest of the Ships the wind blowing So hard that we cannot get out —— the Comr. in the Supply gott under way again this forenoon and got out —— it blows very hard and a great Sea rolling into the Bay ——

Saterday 26

had the first and Morning watch last night —— Since it is Majr. Ross's orders that the officers Shall keep watch I am resolved to keep it —— let others doe as they think proper for I should not wish to get into any Scrape which I otherwise Should if I did not keep watch according to orders —— at 6 in the morning Saw the two Strange Ships comming but find that there are french by there coulours but cannot Say Where from the[y] were last or where the[y] are bound too but Suppose that the[y] are the Ships that Saild on discoverys from france —— at 8 oClock gott under way as did all the Ships and the two french Ships came to an Anchor —— the[y] are much larger than any of our[s] —— both kings Ships the one having a broad pennent and the other
a comon at the M T G M H —— little wind in the narrows going out there being little wind and the place very narrow and the wind Quite against use —— the Prince of Wales and us got foul of each other they carried away our Jibb Boom but what dammadge we did her I cannot Say as I did not lick it I was affraid that we would both have being driven on Shore as the blow fresh —— Soon after the Charlotte ran foul of use and Shooke use very much —— I was more frightend than I was When the prince of Wales was foul of use —— if it had not being by the greatest good luck we Should have been both on Shore on the rocks and the Ships must have been all lost and the greater part if not the whole on board drownd for we Should have gone to pices in less than a half of an hour but how good the Almighty is to use —— I return him my most Sincer prayers for his Kindness to use —— thank god we have got clear out as hav all the Ships and hope to be in the course of a few hours at Port Jackson as it is a fine fair Breeze —— as we run along the Shore Saw a great number of fires and a few Natives —— blessed be to God that we have got Save to ane Anchor in one of the finest harbours in the world —— I never Saw any like it —— the River Thames is not to be mentioned to it and that I thought was the finest in the world —— this Said port Jackson is the most beautiful place —— I cannot compair any think to come nearer to it than about 3 miles above Saltash to the Wair —— here we make the Ships fast to the Trees on Shore both sides of Governours Cove —— we are about 5 miles from the entrance —— found all the Ships here at anchor

Sunday 27

Kist your dear Pictour as Usual on this day and read the lessons for the day —— order came on board for which See the orderly Book —— my dear wife —— Sent the men beloning to Capt. Tench Company on board the Charlotte to be landed from ther —— dinned by myself all the rest dinned out —— I am Quite charmed with the place —— oh that if you was only here and our dear Boy my Alicia I Should not wish to come home if the place agreed with our health but without you I would not Stay if it was the best place under the face of heaven no that I would not my dear Beloved wife for without you I cannot live. The Tents look a prety amonst the Trees —— I hope to be on Shore to morrow if Please good

Munday 28

Got up early this morning and Sent all the Convicts on Shore except them that were Sick —— thank God that the[y] are all out of the Ship hope in God that I will have nothing to doe with them any more —— at 10 Debarkt with all the [other?] Marines
and there Baggage Except my own —— I never Saw So much confusion in all the course of my life as there was in the three compys. disembark —— after I had Pitchd it twice but thank God I Sleect very well but reather cold —— I and Tom davy are in a Markee —— we let Lieut Timming lay his cott down and Sleep with use as he had not his gott up*

**Tuesday 29**

... got early this morning and had nothing for Breakfast Except a Pice of Biscuit and a drink of cool water —— remarkably hott

**Wednesday 30**

... Employd in getting my things on shore gott all but my Box of Shot —— remarkably hott here —— I am my Beloved Alicia with all my farm Stock consisting of 2 hens and one Piggs hope that it will multiply fast with the Assistance of God —— I hope that I will doe very well —— I am for Guard to morrow

**Thursday 31**

... what a Terrible night it was last of thunder lighting and Rain —— was obliged to get out of my tent with nothing one but my shirt to Slacking the tent Poles —— dreamt of You my dear Sweet woman and that I was in bed with you and that I dreamt also that I was very Angry with You and that I wanted to run Kempster throu for a Breach of Friendship — remarkably hott have nothing to Sleep but a Poor Tent and a little grass to Sleep on —— Several of the convicts have Run away —— one or two of them have Come back having been to Botany Bay to See if the French Ships which we left there would take them but the[y] would [not] —— I hope the Governon will make ane Example of Some of them —— Sent for Stephen Mullot and gave him a glass of Rum and water on our dear Aunt Hawkings Sake —— my Belove Betsey gave also one Smith what I left at dinner because he came from dock and Know Aunt Hawkings —— Meridith came over and Staid with me and then Sent me my dinner —— the[y] are getting up the Govenours House as fast as the[y] can——

* Looks like “Bid” or “Hid”.
Clark seems to have become infected by the confusion of which he writes.
FEB 1788

Feby. Friday 1st.

Capt. Meridith and Davey came over last night and Staid Supper with me — Meridith Sent me some fish which I had boil'd — — in all the course of my life I never Slept worse my dear wife than I did [last] night —— what with the hard cold ground Spiders ants and every vermin that you can think of was crawling over me I was glad when the morning came —— my poor Poutch was my Pillow —— dreamt that I was in the dockyard and that a Gentleman a stranger told me that the things that I Saw were Kempsters which he had bought as a Saile —— went out with my Gun and Kild only one Parrot —— the[y] are the most beatifulless birds that I ever Saw —— when it is please god that I am to Return to you my dear woman I will bring Some of them home for you

Saterday 2d.

got up at day light and order the men of the company to Strick there tents and pitch them about 20 Yards from the ground where the[y] first Stoode which was done in a Quarter of an hour —— Davey and Meridith and I went to dine at the hospital and had a good dinner of fish —— dreamt Saterday night as usual ——

Sunday 3

Kist your dear Beloved Image a thousand time as being your Birth day oh my God my God Send my dear wife your Servant maney Many happy Returns of this day —— oh my dear Betsey the Almighty I trust in his goodness will Take care of you to make your fond Ralph the most happy and Blest man on the face of the earth —— oh Spear her good Lord —— I have ask Tom Davey and Meridith come and drink a Glass of Punch in honour of your Birth day my heavenly woman we are to have Prayers to day on the grass when I will call on my God to protect you more and more —— Wm. Collings Breackfast with me to day — — I brock one of my Goblets Yesterday which I am very Sory for but it is gone and I can not help it —— had a very Good Sermon —— Prayed for You and our dr. Boy my beloved Alicia god Send you your health is your affectioned Ralphies Wish
Munday 4

made Capt. M, Wm. Colling Tom davey and Tom Timins more than half and the[y] drunk health and long life you and our Boy —— the convicts employed in clearing the Ground of the Trees ——

Tuesday 5

Nothing Exstrordinary my dr. wife —— the[y] are clearing the ground as fast as they can ——

Wednesdady 6

went out a Shooting with J Johnstone and I kild a duck, a few Small birds which with the duck I Sent to M Ross where I went to Supper being ask ——

Thursday 7

my God how it did thunder and Lighting —— was very much frightened for the Centinell before Majr. Ross markee while we were at Supper was knock down with it —— I thought at first that he had been Struck by the lighting as he came running and making a great noise and fell flat dount at my feett but he was not hurt but I am Sorry to find that by the very hard clap of Thunder the lightning Struck one of the Trees near where we were at Supper and Kild Six Sheep 2 Labms and one Pigg belonging to Major Ross —— my 2 two Piggs were not above Two Yards from the place —— above all the Places in the world this is the most terrible for thunder and lightening —— there has not a day gone over our heads but ther has been Seveer thunder and Lighting —— got up very early to dress as the Govenours Commissions and the other officers were read to day —— all the Battalion were under arms and all the convicts attended —— I never herd of any one Single Person having So great a Power in Vested in him as the Govenour has by his commission —— all the officers dinned with him on a cold collation but the Mutten which had been kild yesterday morning was full of maggots nothing will keep 24 hours in this country I find ——
Friday 8

Capt. Shea Kild to day one of the Kankeroos it is the most curiest of annimals that I ever Saw —— confined one of the convicts for Stricking John West one of the drummers and abusing the Drum Major —— the Same weather thunder and lightening ——

Saterday 9

Satt my dear wife as one of Members of the court Martial to troy Prisoners when Brimage was Sentanced to Receive 200 lashes on his bare back for stricking one of the convict women because She would not goe up in the woods with him and to X —— also Sentanced Green both marines one hunder lashes for been drunk on Guard but recommend him to the commanding officer [for mercy?]*

Sunday 10

mounted the Govenours Guard to day by which I could not attend prayers but kist your dear Pictour as Usual on this day —— was very much frightened by the Lightening as it brock very near my as I was Sitting in my tent on Guard —— it is nothing else but the Lightening that has burnt all the trees but it —— my dear woman I return my God thanks that You did not come out for I should have gone mad if you for fear that the lightening would have hurted you or our dear boy —— I could not Stay longer than the three Years for the world —— I wish that I could get home now I should goe mad for you would be so frightened with the thunder and Lightening ——

Munday 11

Several of the convicts were married Yesterday and amonst them that were have left wives and familes at home —— a good God what a Seen of Whordome is going on there in the womans camp —— no Sooner has one man gone in with a woman but a nother goes in with her —— I hope the Almighty will keep me free from them as he has heather to done but I need not be affraid as I promised you my Tender Betsey I will keep my word with you —— I never will have any thing [to do with]† any
woman what ever except your Self my dear wife I will be true to my Betsey my love for you will keep me So —— was Summonds to attend the criminal court to day as being an Evidence against the Man whom I confined on the 8 inst for Stricking the drumr. —— to day was the first time that I ever took ane Oath —— the court was composed of Capt. Colling a Judge Advocate Capt. Hunter Lieuts. Ball and Bradly Navy Capts Shea and Meridith and Lieut Creswell marines —— I dont know what the centance is —— the Same weather as before fine Morning but terrible Evening ——

**Tuesday 12**

went to here the Sentence read over the Prisoner —— the man that I confined was found Guilty of the whole charge and Sentance to Receive 150 lashes on his bare back —— the other for Stealing (Hill that came out in our Ship) a little Bread to be send to a Small Island at the mouth of the harbour in Irons for Eight days on bread and water —— the other for Given —— the man Received his punishment accordent to his centance and the marines were punished last Evening Accordent to theres but Green was forgiven —— the Patroles caught 3 Seamen and a Boy in the womens camp and the[y] were drumd out of our the male convicts and woman camps —— the Boy was the handsomest that I ever Saw Except our dear Boys —— the Majr. Sent for one of the womens peticoats and put it on the Boy who cut the droles appearents that I ever Saw —— I hope this will be a warning to them from coming into the whore camp —— I would call it by the Name of Sodem for ther is more Sin committed in it than in any other part of the world ——

**Wednesday 13**

dreamt my Belovd Betsey that I was with you and that I thought I was going to be arrested and that You was in the greatest concern for me that could be —— I also after dreamt that I thought that you was Sitting on a Stool and that I did [X with] your my dear wife —— I also Saw old Nanny I hope in the great God that there is nothing the matter with you my Tender Alicia or that of our dear Boy —— oh how long will it be before I Shall here from you —— Whome I only breath for —— may our Gracious God Protect you and Preserve is my Sinceer wish —— all the officers went and herd the Govenours and Judge Advt. commissions read —— I never herd So great a power in vested in any man as there is in the Govr. —— Capt. Tench Spoke to the Govr. by the disire of all the Officers consering the different duties that has been put on use and hope that he would Back our representation to the King of being payd for the Exstra duties that in which he said he would with all his intrust after which
Pouldon and Collins and Self went out a Shooting —— lost Pouldon in the woods and fell in with J: Johnston —— I did not burn powder although I Saw a great many Kangaroos —— Returnd and William Collins and Self Satt down to dinner —— drumd out to day four more Seamen beloning to the Transports the Same as the others —— it Rained very hard for about 1/2 ane hour this afternoon —— Pouldon at last found his way after much diffictulty and Quite [wet through]†

Thursday 14

very cold this last night —— I wish that it would Remain So my dear Beloved Alicia then we would not have So much thunder and Lightening as we have had when the wind comes from the Northward —— I wish that it would remain as it is at Present to the Southward —— this morning Early Saild His Majs. Brig Supply with Several Male and famele convicts to Norfolk Island Under Lieut King of the Navy to Settle there —— Lieut King is appointd Govenour of the Same Island —— there are no Inhabitance on the Island —— Mounted Guard (the Rear) —— a fine day —— Gave Stephen Mullot Some Grogg and Meat on our dear Aunt Hawkings Account —— God Bless her dear woman because She is So like our dear Sweet heavenly Mother whome there is not the least manner of doubt but that She is now in heaven —— if ever ther was a good woman She was one ——

Friday 15

very much fatigued was up late and again at three oClock to goe the Rounds —— Supped with Majr. Ross —— the Governor is gone father up the Harbour and a party of men with him with two days provisions —— Capt. Shea Shot a nother Kangaroo which had a Young one which he has also brought in —— the[y] are the most Exstradinory animal that I ever Saw for the[y] have a Pocket at the bottom of ther Belly where the[y] carry ther Young in case of danger wher the ’Tites’ comes —— the first I Kill I will have it Stouft and Sent home to You my dr. Beloved Alicia —— one of the convict women was floggd at the carts Tail for Stealing from a nother convict woman —— also Bennet that came out on our Ship was flogd for the Same crime —— Pouldon Servant who went out a Shooting with Creswell yesterday Morning and lost himself he is not Yet come in —— You cannot conceive my dear woman what a woody country this is and all the Trees are burn —— Everybody Supposes it is from the Lightening which now begin to think my Self —— I hope that the Almighty will preserve use from it and restore my to you my dear beloved and heavenly woman is my constant wish ——
Saterday 16

went out a Shooting Soon after Breackfast and Took Copl. Goff with me who was very near blowing his hand of as I gave him my Fuze to Shoot with —— in firring at a Cocka Too it burst in the Barral but thank God it did not hurt him —— I only Shot one Cocka Too —— the[y] are most beautiful bird —— I hope to God to be able to get Some alive to carry home with me for you my dear wife —— after dinner went in the boat with Meridith up the harbour and Shot a few Parrokits —— went to bed Early ——

Sunday 17

this being the Lords day Got up early and kist your dear Sweet Image as usual on this day —— Major Ross Send down to ask me I would be so good as to let the Govenour have our Markee to Take Scacierment in which I could not refuse and I am happy that it is to be in my Markee —— never did it Receive So much honour —— oh my God my God I wish that I was fit to take the Lords Supper —— when it Pleases him that I return home the first thing that I will doe Shall be it with you my dear Betsey —— I will keep this Table also as long as I live for it is the first Table that ever the Lords Supper was eat of in this country —— Pouldons Servant is this fore noon come in after wandring the country up and down —— my Tooth Pains me very much ——

Munday 18

was very ill with the Tooth eack all last night —— got up early and went to the Hospital and had it puld out Buy Mr. Consident —— oh my God what pain it was it was So fast in and the Jaw bone very fast to one of the prongs the Tooth would not come out without breacking the Jaw bone which he did —— I thought that half of my head would have come off —— there is a piece of the Jaw bone remaining to the Tooth —— the Pain was So great my dear wife that I fainted away and was very ill the remainder of the day but I could not let Consident report to Majr. Ross that I was ill but would goe on Picket —— my gum Keep Bleeding all the day ——

Tuesday 19
having the Picket lay with my cloaths on and had but little Sleep as my Jaw paind me very much but in the course of the little I did Sleep I dreamt that I was with you my Tender woman and I thought that I Saw Your head was drest out and Small Sparks of fire in your hair that you often told me was Malice — I hope to god that you are only well and that of our dear Boy and I don't cear for any bodys Malice — went on Guard over the Governors to day whe I have done nothing but thinking of You and our dear Son — oh my beloved Betsey oh my dr. woman how tenderly I love you both — my face very much Sweld and the Pain at times very great — the Govr. told me that the indians had gone to the number of 20 over to the Island wher the Sirius Gardian and where there is only 3 men and the half had come up and were very Kind to the three men while the others Stole what the[y] could lay there hands on but one of the men Seing them carring of ane Axe and Spade he fired at the man that had the Spade with small Shot and struck him about the legs when the[y] dropt the spade but the[y] carried of the other things — they are the Greatest thefs that ever lived — I think that we are in a fine stat we brought nothing but thefs out with use to find nothing but thefs

**Wednesday 20**

got but little Sleep on Guard my Jaw paind and dose now very much and Bleeds every now and then a fresh — the Governor askd Me to Breackfast but my face is so much Sweld that I would not goe — was in a great passion with Ellis a bout his Stupidness — he is the most Stuppid Mortal that I ever Saw but I believe him to be honest which is a great thing and am much attached to him for being So tender to our little Boy dear Sweet fellow when he was at home with him — I wish that I was now with you and him my adorable Alicia I Should be the most happiest man living on the face of the earth — three of our Men were Punished about going to these d . . . . . B . . . . . . of convict women they will bring our men into manny Such Troubles — Green that was forgiven the other day was one of them who Received a 100 Lashess and McDonal and Godfray 50 each — the two last came out with me — one Male and one Famele Convict died at the hospital — the French Abby came from Botany Bay and three other Frenchmen to the Govenors —

**Thursday 21**

my Face Still very much Sweld and at times Bleeds very much — the French Aby came and lookd at my Betseys Butter flys and other insext and he admirers them very much — went out with Capt. Tench and Meridith in his boat up the harbour a
Shooting and it came on to blow pretty hard which made it late before we Returned —

**Friday 22**

the French Men went to Botany this morning he wished much one of my Grass hoppers but I could not think of Parting with any thing that belongs to you my dear Alicia — Remarkably warm to day and hardly any wind — it looks much if it would thunder to day I hope not — my hands very Soor from rowing which I never did before last Saterday

**Saterday 23**

Nothing Extrodinary to day — Employed in writing out the orders Since we came on Shore

**Sunday 24**

dreamt that I was with Kempster at a Sale last night my beloved — this being Sunday Kist your dear Pictour as Usual on the Lords day — Sleep in my coaths all night as having the Picket and have mounted the Qr. Guard this morning So that I shall be obliged to Sleep in my cloaths to night again — it reather hard duty thank God I am very well So I dont much care it will prevent me from running a bout Some — by being on Guard to day prevented attending Divine Service but I will all the Same call on our God for his protection Still and Return him my thanks for his Kindness —

**Munday 25**

dreamt that I was with You my beloved Alicia and that you not very well — to day two of the women Shot at to day by the Centinells because the[y] would not come back when the[y] cald to them but nether of them I am Sorry to Say are hurt — having not had my cloaths of for these 48 ho urs I shall goe to Bed Soon to night as I have taking Pouldons Guard who is going to Botany Bay and it look very Awfull — I never Saw a Skiy look So revengful as it dose now — I am affraid that we will have a Terrible night of Thunder and Lightening as it begines to thunder and Lightening arready — Several of the convicts wair Punished and two Seamen beloning to the Transport for given Rum to the convicts —
Tuesday 26

it came on to blow Remarkable hard Soon after I went to bed — I was very much frightened from the wind thrhou the hollow Trees and thunder it made a Terrible Sound close to our Markee — there was a most darring Robbery comitted by taking away 18 Bottles of wine out of a Tent beloning to the Contractor — this day the comisary commences to Serve his Provisions which is as follows Rations for 7 days for each Marine and Male Convict Seven Pounds of Bread or in lieu ther of 7 Pounds of Flour — Seven Pounds of Beef or in Lieu ther of 4 lb of Pork — three Pounds of Pease — Six Ounces of Butter — one Pound of flouer or in Lieu ther of half a Pound of Rice — 2/3 of the above for the women but no Spirrits —

Wednesday 27

a Criminal court Sits to day for the Trayer of Such Prisoners as may be brought befor them — amons the Number to be tryd is two that came out of the Ship with me Heny. Lovell and one Ryan — at 1 oClock there Centance was read the charge being clearly Proven of their Stealing Butter Pease and Pork — Thomas Barrit Heny. Lovell Josh. hall and Ryan the three former Received Centance of death and the Latter to Receive 300 Lashes — at 5 oClock PM the Battalion was order under arms for the centance of the Land to be put into Excution and soon after we mach to the place of Execution which was a Tree between the male and female convicts Camp — at a Quarter after 5 the Unhappy men wair brought to the place of Where the[y] were to Suffer when after the Parson had done prayers with them — the Provos Martial put the halter a bout the neck Thos. Barret and he mounted the Ladder — from his going I dont think that he had the least thought that was to Suffer but when the Provos Martial put a handkerchiff a bout his head he turned as white as a sheet — when Soon after the Ladder was puld from under him and he Lanchted into the other world without a gron — from every Account he was a great Ras call — the other two Lovell and Hall wair Respited Untill to Morrow — after Barret had hung the usuall time he was cut down and put into a Grave near the Tree by Some of the convicts — am to Mount the Picket to night and to Morrow for Guard — So God Bless you my Alicia —

Thursday 28

My God what a Terrible day this has been of Rain — I never Saw that I Recollect it Rain harder — at three oClock the Battalion as Under Arms for to put the Centance of the Law into Execution of Hall and Lovell who wair Respited by the
Governor Yesterday Untill to day — at 4 oClock I brought them with the Gd. to the place wher the[y] wair to Suffer the Same wher ther companion did Yesterday — after the Prayers the Judg. Advocate brought a pardon from the Governor to the Majr. for them on Conditiones of their Being Banished Which they Accepted of and the other that was to Received the 300 Lashes was also forgiven — the whole of the Convicts Sent a petition to the Governor beggins that the[y] might be forgive and not to Suffer death — the[y] also promised that not one amongst them he would have reason to find fatal with — the Governor on which he Pardond them — all the time it rained if heaven and earth was coming together — Ryan his Irons was taking of and dismissed to his work again but Lovell and Hall wair taking with me to the Guard — Hall on his way back told me what the man had Sworn too was nothing but the truth — poor Wm. Collins Still very ill have attended him ever Since he has been ill My Beloved Alicia for he is a great favourite of mine and I think Betsey I am endebted to him from the [illegible] we Received from his father while in the Barracks — dined with Majr. Ross to day who also behaves very Kind to me — have not had my cloaths of Since last Saterday have eather had the Gd. or the Picket

Friday 29

the Criminal Court Still Sitting Since Wednesday and trying the 3 three men for Stealing the wine Munday* and two others for Stealing 15 allowances of flour — Geoe. Wittiker, Danl. Gordon and Jno. Williams two black men — the former wair aquited of the charge about the wine but the two later Received Centance of death and to Suffer at four oClock this Evening — one Shearman and one Freeman wair found Guilty the former in part and to Receive corporal Punishment but the latter found Guilty of the whole for which he is to Suffer death at the Same time — the Battalion was order under Arms at a Quarter befor four oClock and we Marchd to the place of Execution — Soon after the four Unhappy men brought down by the Guard and with halters about their Neck when the Parson had done with them Majr. Ross told them from the Petition of Yesterday that the Governor had also Pardond Gordon on his Condition of being Banishd which you may think Accepted and the other Black who was concerned with Gordon was also Pardond on the Same Conditions and Freeman was also Pardond on Condition of his becoming the common hangman which he accepted — Shearman who was concernd with freeman was also forgiven his corporal punishment but the whole of the convicts wair told that the Governor would never Pardon or Receive any more Petitions from them — I think after his goodness the[y] ought to behave now well but I am almost certain that befor I am a fortnight older Some of them will be brought to tryal for Capital offences — My dr. Betsey Poor Colling is Still very ill as
dangerously ill as he can be

* Illegible —— but see entry of Tuesday 12th opposite.

† MS damaged.

* MS damaged —— note ‘X’ in the margin.

† Ms damaged.

* Probably “teats”.

MARCH 1788

Saterday March 1st.

I Supped with Mr. White the Surgeon and Capt. Collins who is very kind to your Clark Betsey — White made me drink Several Glasses of good old Port after Supper as I complained to him that I had a great Pain in my Bowells and that I was affraid that I was going to have the Same disorder that Poor Colling has the Flux but thank god I am much better and Collings is the Same which I am very Glad — I had a good nights Rest last night which I can Say that I have not had Since last Saterday not having Sleep out of my cloaths before I intend going Soon to Bed to night as I am again for Gd. to Morrow — Several of our Men taking bad with the Flux which is from the Rainey weather we had the other day and if we dont get hutted Soon we will all be in our Graves befor we think of hutting — this is a very fine day — Removed my Markee to another place dont like the Ground it appears to me if it was damp — I am glad to See in to days orders that the Battalion is orderd to be hutted as soon as possible — I wish it was already done — Capt. M and Arundell went a Shooting up the habour this Morning and the[y] are not Yet Returnd —

Sunday 2d.

Kist your dear Pictour as usual on this day — the Man that went with Capt. M and Arrundell Yesterday Returnd late last night without Capt. M or A and Says that he did not See or heer of them after they landed and that he Staid untill 9 oClock at night before he came away — Majr. Ross Sent for me at day light to goe and See if I could See or heer any thing of M and A — he orderd one of the Transports Boats to attend me — I went to the place wher the[y] landed wher the fire is Still Burning that the man Said the[y] made at this landing — I went a little way in the wood and Blow the Buggal horn but could heer nothing of them So I Returnd to the camp a bout one oClock wher I found that the[y] had come in — the[y] had lost ther way in the woods and could not find wher the place was again so that [they had to stay there]∗ all night — the[y] are both much [fatigued and at the time were]∗ very much frightend — Poor Collins very ill he has beg of me to Change Tents with Maxwell Untill he gets well for he cannot bear me to be away from him a Moment which I have agread to — I am not well my Self to day my dear Alicia hope I will be better to Morrow —
Munday 3

went on the Govers. Guard to day — have got a little gripping hope it will goe of — the Govenr. Game or huntsman Shot a Remarkably large Bird to day as bigg as ane Ostrich — the Govenr. went away to Broking Bay Yesterday Morning he has taking 7 days Provisions with him and a party of men I Suppose to See if it will doe as a place of Banishment of them that are order from here as it is about 20 mile to the Northward of this

Tuesday 4

I am Much worse than I was Yesterday gripd very much — Poor Collings growing worse every day —

Thursday 6

Tuesday the moment almost that I was Returnd I was obliged to goe to bed I was so ill my dear wife and Yesterday I never was out of my bed — I was affraid that I Should have caught the disorder that Collings has got but thank God I am much better to day but I Shall take very great care of my Self — Collins is much better and is Removed on board the Sirius for the benifit of the Air and I am again Removing my own tent — I will not again Remove out from it for it was by that that I caught this illness — Still I have a great pain in my Bowels but I hope only for Your Sake and that of our Sweet Plege of our Love that I will in the course of three or four days be Quite well again — I ought never to be ill for my thinking makes me worse than my disease but it is impossible but to think of You dear heavenly woman and of our Dear Son dear woman and heavenly Boy —

Friday 7

a little better to day Arundell gave me Some Stuff which works me both ways but it has done me a great dele of good — every body tells me that I look very pale I think so my Self and that I am falling away but I trust to God that I Shall be able to make up for it in a few days my beloved woman — Capt. Shea went to Botany Bay Yesterday and is not Returnd — 5 oClock PM find my Self great Better hope it will Remain So my Alicia —
Saterday 8

almost Quite well hope in God I will be so to Morrow — herd from the Sirius that Collings much better — I am Glad for it — Capt. Shea Returnd late last night — Said that the french Ships are ready to Sail and will to Morrow or Next day — the french men Say that the[y] have often been obliged to fire on the Natives for that the[y] are become Most dearing and troublesome — I have not my dr. Alicia Seen one Yet — herd from Collins to day who is much better but weak that he cannot Sit up in bed Poor fellow

Sunday 9

dreamt a great dele about You my beloved Alicia and good Aunt Hawkings and Kempster — I hope to god that you are all well — Kist your dear Pictour as Usual on this day — Read the lessons and prayer for the day ther being No Church the Parson being ill — dinned at the Hospital with Arundell — this day 12 Months is the day that I Embark on board the Transport — my dear wife I wish to God that I never had how I long to be back again to You and our dr. Boy

Munday 10

dreamt that I was at the Barracks and that the room we had Betsey were all on fire and every in the great confusion — Quite well — have given in my name for duty So that I am for Guard to Morrow — Sat as a Member of the C M to Tray Davey and other Marine for bringing each a Convict woman in to ther tents in the camp and are Centenced to receive Each 150 Lashes — the Governour Returnd late last night and all the party in good health which I am very Glad of — 2 Convicts died at the Hospital

* MS damaged.
PART TWO 15 FEBRUARY 1790 – 17 JUNE 1792
FEB 1790

February 1790 Munday 15

Fine clear weather — went up the Harbour in my Boat and went into Lane Cove where I was Yesterday to See Dourrawan and Tirriwan the two Natives that I exchanged the hatchet with Yesterday for there two Spears — I had not gone far up the cove before I Saw the Smook of there fires for which I rowd not Seeing any thing of them — I Cald to them for I was certain that the [y] could not be a great way from me — the[y] Soon Answerd me I then got out of the Boat (Davis) my Convict Servant who was in the Boat with me begd of me not to goe on Shore — he is one of the greatest Cowards living — I cald to them again when I got to ther fire for the[y] had run into the bush on there Seing the Boat pulling towards them — the[y] could See me although I could See nothing of them — on there Seing that it was me who had given them the Hatchet Yesterday the[y] came down to me — the[y] had left Some Muscle on the fire to roast which the[y] both begd of me to eat Some of — before I left the Boat I disired Ellis and (Squirs) my other convict Servant that Should the[y] attempt to throu any of their Spears at me or them to fire without waiting for my Orders but when the[y] found that I had offerd them no harm yesterday the[y] came to me without any weapons — I made Ellis, Davis and Squirs come on Shore to them — Davis trembled the whole time — I herd the crying of children close to me — I asked them for to goe and bring me there (Dins) which is there woman and I would give there woman Some bits of different coulerd cloath which I had brought on purpose to give to them — the[y] made me to understand that there were no women there — I then asked them to goe and bring me down the [*] which is their name for child — Dourrawan went and brought a Boy a bout 3 Years old on his Shoulder — the child was as much frightend at use as Davis was at them — I then desired Tirriwan to goe and bring me down one of his children as Dourrawan informd me that he was the father of the Child he had brought down and that his woman the mother of his child was (poc) dead of the (mittayon) Small Pox — Tirriwan brought also down a Boy much a bout the same age as the other — Tirriwan child was not quite Recoverd from the Small Pox — I asked him for his (din) he Said that She was up in the wood given a Young child the (nipan) the Breast — I gave each of the children a bit of Red cloath — I asked them if the[y] would give me the children for my hatt which the[y] Seemd to wish most for but the[y] would not on any account part with there children which I liked them for — the Governour has often asked me as the Natives Seemd not So much affraid of me as the[y] are of every body else to take one of them and bring them in —
Yesterday and to day I might with great ease and without running any danger have taken these two men but as I told Ellis when he asked me if I did not intend to take them I told him that it would be very Ungenerous to take them for after the[y] had place Such confidence in use that I could not think of doing it for if I had taken them both what would have become of there young children the[y] must have Starved — after Staying with them for about two hours I got into the Boat and left them and went up the cove about Six miles — the[y] were much afraid of our Guns — I eat one of there Muscles which made me very Sick — in coming back the[y] cald to use to come on shore but it begining to grow dark I wished to get home — I therefore did not goe on Shore to them — the[y] are very fond of asking your names — I told them mine Yesterday which the[y] recollected and cald me by it to day — went and drank Tea with Majr. Ross and Capt. Campble —

Tuesday 16

Fine weather — after breackfast went up the Harbour in my Boat went a little way up Lane Cove — did not See the two Natives that I was with Yesterday — on my way home I Saw a Native on the Shore with two Spears and a throwing Stick in his hand — I cald to him and puld the Boat in towards him but the moment that he Saw that I was coming on Shore he Set of as if the Devil was after him — I land and took my Gun and made Ellis and my two Convict men doe the Same after making the Boat fast and we went a little way in the wood but could not See or heer any thing of the Native — on Returning back to the Boat I found the Skeleton of a man or Woman — the Skin was Still entire on the back part of the Head and the Hair Still adhering to it which was in colour of light Brown from which I was certain that it could be non of the natives but must belong to Some Unfortunate person that was Kild by the Natives or what is much more dreadful than been Kild by the Natives that of lossing one self and perishing with hunger — it Struck me as it did every body in the Boat that is must be the Skeleton of Mr. Hill a midshipman beloning to the Sirius who was either Kild by the Natives or lost in the woods — I brought the head home with me and Sent it to the Hospital to See if the[y] could inform me if it was a Natives or one of the people that has been missing when it proves to be the Head of one Hill a convict that was loss from Rose Hill near a twelf month Since — The Surgeons wanted for me to give them the Skull but I would not — I told them that I should carry it back and collect the rest of the Bons and Bury them and the Head —

Wednesday 17
Fine modrate Weather — mounted the Governours Guard to Day — no person dined at the Governours to day more than usual Viz the Governour, Mr. Miller, Capt. Collins and the officer of the Guard — about four oClock this afternoon Major Ross came over to the Guard Room to me when after a little conversation on different Subjects he put the following Questions to me Viz how I should like to goe to Norfolk Island — I made him for answer not at all — he then Said I am going — I said it is impossible — he Said it was very true and that there was two of the Companies to goe with him — if So I shall be very happy to goe with you or Captain Campble — he Said that he was much obliged to me and Should be very happy for me to goe with him — he Said that he would not take Captain Campbles companies with him he Should leave him to take the command and care of the Remainder of the detachment that would be left behind — You will not mention it to any body as I have not told it to any person except Capt. Campble and Your Self — he Said I shall take Meridiths and Johnstones Companies with me and I am thinking of taking Lieuts Shearp, Faddy, Ross and yourself and Creswell who is ther already for I will not take any of them that was in that Court Martial nor Shall I take Meridith with me — I would much reather that Some person else was going than Shearp for I doe not like him in Short he is a man that I detest from the bottom of my Soul — what can be the Reason of this Great Removal it was only a few days Since that the Governour informed use that he intended to Send the Sirius to China for Provisions if there was no Ships arrived befor the 3 of next month — I hope in God that Some Ship or Ships will arrive before our going to Norfolk

Thursday 18

Cloudy Weather — after I was Releved from Guard I went down to my Island to look at my Garden and found that Some Boat had landed Since I had been there last and taken away the Greatest part of a fine Bed of Onions — it is impossible for any body to attempt to raise any Gardin Stuff for before it comes to perfection the[y] will Steal it — I thought that having a Garden on an island it would be more Secure but I find that they even get at it — my corn comes on as well as corn can doe — I have that they will be so good as to let that Remain but I am much affraid that the[y] will not — Returnd to dinner at Majr. Ross's who Said I forgot yesterday when I mentioned Shearp that You and him were not on good terms for which Reason I Shall not take him with me but will askd J. Johnstone which he did in the Evening who Said that he Should be very happy to goe with him —

Friday 19
Cloudy weather — after Breakfast went up the harbour in my Boat and took the Skull with me and landed at the place where I found it — I collected the rest of the bones and made a grave and deposd them in it and got a Stone placed at the Head without any monumental inscription to denote to any person that may be Ranging this way whose Remains are interred under the Stone — all the flesh was not quite decayed particular about upper part of the thigh — as the place where I found the Skeleton and where I Buried it is a point of land in Lane Cove I have named it Skeleton point — intended to have Returnd to dinner at Majr. Ross's but the day turning out very fine I went father up the Cove and collected Sweet Tea to carry with me to Norfolk — Returnd home a little before Sun Sett — Shot a few Paroquet — Lieut Kellow came to my house Soon after my Return and said he would be glad to Speak a few words with me — he Said that I was not a Stranger to the disagreeable Situation that he has been laboring under for these 15 months past and I hope that you will not have any objections as I have asked Several of my Brother officers and who Say that the[y] have knon that of my going home Sick provisg Majr. Ross will give his consent and gives up the letter which you wrote to him in consequence of the late Captain Sheas representation and I will plege my word that the moment I arrive in England that I will goe on half Pay — I made him for Answer that I was not a Stranger to the disagreeable Situation that You have been in for these Several months past but you have no body to blame for brining you in that Situation but your Self and I assure you that any Service that I can be of to you I will doe it consisting with honour to myself for I doe not wish to take any mans Bread from him and if all my Brother officers will consent and Majr. Ross will give up the letter which we wrote in consequence of your conduct I have no objections — he then Said I am Sensible of your good intentions towards me and I am much oblige to you for them — went to Tea at Majr. Ross's — after Tea Capt. Campble asked me if Kellow had been at my house — I told him that he had and what his busines s was and what Answer I had given him — Capt. Campble Said that he had been Several times to him about the Same thing and I told him that if all his Brother Officers would consent to it and Majr. Ross's given up the letter which he had in his hands I had no objections — He was with me again to day and Said that he had Spoke to Tench, Poulden, Fuzer and Long — I asked him if he had Spoke to You — he Said not Yet, I then told him that he had better doe it as Soon as You Return for You now was out in your Boat — by the Genl. Order of this day I find that we are to hold our Self in readiness to Embark the 5 of next Month — See the orderly Book —

Saterday 20

Rainy weather — begun writing a letter to my Belovd to Send by the Sirius after She has landed use at Norfolk Island but I
hope the arrival of some Ship with provisions for use will prevent our going there as I find the reason of our being Sent there is that Norfolk has more Resourses in it than this place in fish and Birds for I find that there is not more from the first of next month than thirteen weeks provisions in Store — god help use if Some Ships dont arrive I dont know what will

**Sunday 21**

Fine weather — Soon after breackfast I went out in my Boat down to my Island to See my Garden and found that Some persons had been ther again and have taken away all my potatoes — however the[y] are I wish that the[y] were in hell for ther kindness — Returnd to dinner at Major Rosses

**Munday 22d.**

Fine moderate weather — after parade I mett with the rest of my Brother Officers at Lieut Kellows Hutt and Signd a letter to Majr. Ross the purport of which is that as Mr. Kellow Seems to be Sensible of his error and as he has given his word that the moment he Returns to England to goe on half Pay we therfor beg that he would be So good to take Suspension off under which Lieut Kellow has for Some time past labourd under and to Return the letter which was wrote by use in consequence of his conduct — dinned with a party at Majr. Rosses — after dinner Majr. Ross, Capt. Campble took a walk out in the country to the Banans and Returned to Tea

**Tuesday 23d.**

Fine weather — mounted the Governour Main Guard to day — no person dined at the Governors to day more than usual — in the afternoon Majr. Ross came over and walk with me for near two hours

**Wednesdady 24**

Fine weather — the day has been very warm — Soon after I was Relieved from Guard this morning I met with the Rest of my Brother officers at Capt. Tenchs hutt in consequence of a messaged from Majr. Ross acquainting use that he had Received our
letter Respecting Mr. Kellow but that he could not grant our Request on account of our laying a Restriction on Mr. Kellow to
goe on half Pay on his Return to England (for if he Majr. Ross was to grant our Request it would he Said bring him into a Scrap
with the Admiralty) we therefore agreed to take off the Said Restriction of obligin him to goe on H Pay on his arrival in England
in consequence of which Majr. Ross has given up the letter which we wrote to him and the Governor has also Returnd Majr.
Ross his letter which he wrote on his Receiving our letter — by that Lieut Kellow might not be permitted to doe duty with use
and by to days order in consequence of our Request the Suspention that Mr. Kellow has been under is taken off and is orderd to
Return to his duty in the Detachment — See the orderly Book — he may think himself as I doe a very lucky fellow but I am
affraid that he will not long keep his promise for if he can get any Liquor he will Soon get into the Same Scrap that he has this
day got out off — Spent the day at Majr. Rosses —

Thursday 25th

Fine clear weather but it will be very warm to day

Friday 26

Fine moderate weather — Yesterday after dinner I went up in my Boat to Rose Hill to See Timmins and Balmain — Davey
and Kellow went up also in (Kellows Boat) we Staid all night with them — I Sleep at Sergeant Stuards who made up a very
good Bed for me — Kellow came up to Timmins to get the letter Signed who Returnnd at Revelly — Davey and Self Staid till
after Breackfast who Returnnd with me to dinner at Majr. Ross's — in our passaged down we went on Shore at a figg Tree of
which we eat a great maney all of use in the Boat they being ripe but before we got home the[y] all gave use the grips — I felt it
remarkable Warm on the water — by the orders of Yesterday I See the officers that goes with Majr. Ross to Norfolk Island are
Viz Capt. Lieut Johnstone, 1st. Lieut Kellow, Johnstone & Clark 2d. Lieuts Faddy and Ross — See the orderly Book — and
Creswell is to Remain there So that there will be Seven of use beside Majr. Ross —

Saterday 27

Cloudy weather — it Raind a little in the night and seems inclined to Rain again — Sent Ellis and my two convict Servents
out in the Boat to get Sweet Tea for to carry with me to Norfolk and myself have been busie in packing up my things

Sunday 28th.

Fine Clear & Moderate weather — after Breakfast I went down to my Island to gather my indian corn but found the greatest part already gatherd to my hands — Some Boat must have landed yesterday or the day befor and taking the corn away — in the place of my having about Six Bushels of corn I have not now got a bove a Bushel — the[y] have Stole about fifteen hunderd Cobbs of corn — it is needless to vex one self about it it is gone past recovering — Return to dinner at Majr. Rosses — by the Genl. order of this day I find that the Governor has Remitted the Remainder of the Sentance of Transportation on John Irvin in Consequence of the unremitted good Conduct of the Said Irvin and is to be considered as Restord to all those rights and privelges which he had been Suspended In consequence of the Sentance of the Law and is appointed to be an assistant Surgeon at Norfolk Island — See the orderly Book — I am very glad that Irvin goes with use for I think the best Surgeon amongst them — by the Battn. order of this day I See on board what Ships we are to Embark for Norfok — on board the Sirius with the Commanding Officer 1st. Lieut Kellow, Johnstone & Clark and 2d. Lieut Ross — on board the Supply Lieut Johnstone and 2d. Lieut Faddy — Majr. Ross askd in what Ship I should wish to goe I told in that Ship he went in — he Said that is the Ship I should wish you to goe in

* Perhaps Clark means Bananas, a number of which were planted a little distance from the huts.
MAR 1790

March Munday 1st.

Fine clear weather — a fresh Sea Breeze — all of use going to Norfolk Island (Majr. Ross Excepted) dinned with the Govenor to day — by the Genl. order of this day the following order is out — No officer Soldier or other Persons (those who are to Embark Excepted) are to Kill Sell or otherwise dispose of any live Stock untill further orders as Some necessary regulation will take place in a few days — Sold my Boat to Davey for ten Guineas which is four less than what I gave for her and I think She is well Sold — as part of payment I am to have a large Sow which is what I want for I have not got such a thing

Tuesday 2d.

Moderate weather — Sent Some of my things on board of the Sirius this morning and after dinner went on board of the Sirius with Some more of my things — by the orders of to day we are to Embark to morrow afternoon half after three oClock — See the orderly Book — bought a nother Sow for which I gave two Guineas for — gave Davey four Guineas for the Sow which he let me have — She is big with Pigg.

Wednesday 3th.

Fine Moderate weather — after Breakfast Sent my Cott on board with the Remainder of my things — by the Orders of Yesterday the two Companies of use Embark According to the Arrangment of the 28 of Feby. — we have carried the colors with use — after having lodged them and Seen the Detachment in the place allotted for them on board I came on Shore again for the Night as Majr. Ross and Capt. Campble disired I would — paid Every body that I am endebted to in this part of the World — I wish I could Say all over the World but I hope that I Shall have that pleasure Soon —

Thursday 4th.
very fine clear weather — Captain Campble made up a Bed for me — after Breakfast Sent all my Stock on Board Consisting of two Sows one Cock and Six hens — I have left my house in the care of Sergeant Chapman with liberty to live in it untill my Return if ever I should wont it — at twelf oClock all of use that are going to Norfolk met at Majr. Ross's house and went with him to the Governors to take our leave of him after which I went on board to See my thing put to Right and order my Servant to put what things I may want on the passage to be nearest at hand in my Cabin — I have parted with Ellis having had Some words with him and he Answering Shorter than I think he Should have done I told him to goe to his duty — he is ane honest man for I never knew him wrong me of a Single thing in my life — I shall be Sorry for parting with him — dined at Majr. Ross and drank Tea after which Majr. Ross John and myself went on board as we Sail to Morrow as all the Convicts are come on board from Rose Hill that goes to Norfolk — the Bill which I had from Davey I have left it with Captain Campble to purchas me Some Tea and Sugar and Some Soap from the first Ships that may Arrive — Captain Campble has been very kind he askd me if I wanted anything that he had he would let me have it — I told him I was much obliged to him — he Said I no that You have not much Tea I have put up a caddy for you with Majr. Ross's — he also gave me half a dozen pair of Stocking which I want very much — the Sivility and friendship that Captain Campble has Shown to me I am affraid I never will have it in my power to make him a Sufficient Acknowlegement for his attention has been more like a father than a friend — his and Majr. Rosses friendship to me is what I call real and Sinceer

Friday 5th.

Cloudy weather — It Rain a little in the night — about Six oClock this morning we got under way — ther being little wind from the S:W: the Supply a little after use — Captain Campble came on board to take leave of use and to Breakfast with Majr. Ross and Captain Hunter — he left the Ship a little after Eight when we got as low down the Harbour as my farm Island — we were obliged to come to ane Anchor for the Sea Breess Set in very Strong and there was too much Sea in the mouth of the Harbour to attemp going out — Majr. Ross little John and Mr. Consident who goes with use to Norfolk as Surgeon Messes with Captain Hunter; Johnstone, Kellow and my Self Mess in the Gun Room with the officers of the Sirius — dined with Captain Hunter and after dinner went on Shore with Capt. Hunter, Majr. Ross, little John and Mr. Consident to the look out at the mouth or South Head of the Harbour — Returnd on board to Tea — did not Sleep well last night

Saterday 6th.
Fine Moderate weather little wind — about Six oClock got under way a great Swell Setting into the Harbour — just as we came abreast of the outer South Head it fell calm and the Swell was Setting us fast to leeward on the North Head which had not a puff of wind fill the Sails we should have been drove on Shore on the North Head and every body on board thought of no other but that we should — if we had the Ship would have been in pieces in a few minutes from the great Sea that was breaking on the Rocks and the most of use on board would have been lost but by great good fortune the puff of wind Shoved use clear out of the harbour as it did the Supply — when we had got a little from under the land we Soon got a fresh Breeze from the South Ward which is a fair wind — I have been very Sick all day; Sea Sick as was every body in the Ship for a few hours after we got out of the Harbour — about 12 oClock we were out of Sight of the Land of New Holland — could eat nothing all this day nor drink any thing except a little Tea — I am a poor Soul at Sea for I am mostly always Sea Sick — Majr. Ross and little John have been much worse than I am — I hope that it will have left me — Since we have got a fair wind and a nuff of it I hope that we will Soon be at Norfolk if this wind Remains we will be there by this day week — good Night my Love

Sunday 7th.

Fine weather and a good fair Breeze — went by the Log Since Yesterday noon untill to day 12 oClock 148 miles — Wind S:E:bS — have been very Sea Sick and between decks there Such a disagreeable Smell from the women that are Sea Sick that it is a nuff to Suffocate one — there is [*] convict women on board for Norfolk and there is not one but what is Sea Sick

Munday 8th.

Fresh Gales — Wind S:S:E: — the distance that we went Since Yesterday 148 miles — not So Sea Sick as I have been — I hope this wind will continue with use untill we get to norfolk for if it Should we will be there in a few days — expect to See Lord Hows Island to morrow — the Sow which I bought from Davey Pigg this morning ten fine Piggs — I hope that the[y] will all live

Tuesday 9th.

Fine clear weather with Light Breezes from the Southward — at 1/2 past 2 this morning came in Sight of Lord Hows Island
— Stood in for it — after Breakfast Lieut Ball of the Supply came on board for leave to Send a Boat on Shore to See if the[y] could get any Turtles which was granted him — the Land is very high but is a very Small Island not being more than [*] miles in circumference — the Pyramid we came also in Sight of about the Same time that we did the Island — the Pyramid is distance from Lord Hows Island about fifteen miles — it is the most Extrodinary pile of Rocks that I ever Saw or I may Say every was seen, it is very high — Mount Gower on Lord Hows Island is very high but the Pyramid is much higher — there was an innumerable number of different Sea Bird on the Pyramid as there is constantly — about Sun Set we past between the Pyramid and Lord Hows Island — the Supply was close in under the land — about 6 oClock this Evening the Breeze freshend — did not Speak the Supply to day there dont no if She has got any Turtle or not — got Quit well having got the Better of my Sea Sickness —

**Wednessday 10th.**

Fine weather with Moderate Breezes from the Northward which is Still a good wind — the Supply in company who haild use and informd use that She had got no Turtles — went the distance Since Yesterday noon 88 miles — a great number of Birds about the Ship particular the Tropical Bird

**Thursday 11**

Fine Moderate weather with the wind N:N:W: and W:S:W: which is as fine a wind as can blow for use for our course is N70 E — went Since Yesterday 133 miles — I shall be very happy when I get out of the Ship for the[y] are not the most pleasent Set that I ever Saw in a Ship the[y] are quit the contrary —

**Friday 12th.**

Cloudy weather with fresh gales from the S:W: — went Since Yesterday 144 — Expect to See the Land to morrow morning early — hope that there will be good landing — a great number of Tropical Birds about the Ship — the Supply in Company

**Saterday 13**
Moderate and Clear Weather — wind W:S:W: — about 1/2 past 2 this morning came in Sight of Norfolk Island — about Six Saw Phillipp Island and Nepean Island — Stood in for Sydney Bay — Saw the colours at the higher flag Staff but no flag at the lower flag Staf — from ther no flag flying there found that the Boats could not land — Lieut Ball came on Board from the Supply and asked leave to goe round to Balls Bay and he would Endeavour to land there or throw a letter on Shore to Mr. King which leave was granted — about Nine oClock the Supply made the Signal that there was good Landing in Cascade Bay — Made Sail and Stood away for Cascade Bay — about 1/2 past ten hoisted the Boats out and Sent as many of the male Convicts as the[y] would carry on shore with them — about 1/2 past one the Boats Returnd from Landing the convicts and informd use that there was very good landing on which Lieut Kellow and my Self with as many of the marines as the Boats would hold with what things they could take were orderd into them — got on Shore about half after two not without getting my feet wett — I never landed in Such a Bad place in my li fe — at the best of times it is very bad Landing for there is always a great Swell Round the Island and you are oblige to wait for a Smooth time to pull the Boat in to a Rock and you back the Boat in Stern formost and you are oblige to be very Quick to jump out one at a time and then the Boat puls off to Wait a nother Smooth for it is impossible for the Boat to lay along Side of the Rocks for Should a Swell come while the Boats there it would dash her to pices — every body in the Boats that came on Shore when I came landed very well — found on our landing Capt. Johnstone and Lieut Faddy with the party from the Supply who also got on Shore very well — I was directd to inform Capt. Johnstone from Majr. Ross that he and the detachment from the Supply were to goe on to the Town and that we that came from the Sirius Should Waite Majr. Rosses coming which would be in the first Boats on which Johnstone and his party went in for the Town — Soon after our landing a Boat load of Women and children came on Shore but while the[y] were landing them a Sea Brok into the Boat which frightend them very much — I wonder that the Boat not lost and every body in her for the women would not Sit Still but made a terrible noise both them and ther children but the[y] all got Save on Shore — after waiting Some time According to orders on the beach for Majr. Ross the Boat with Majr. Ross we Saw coming but when the Boat came near the Rock I cald to him that the tide was to hight for it had Surounded the Rock and that it would be impossible to get where we was on the beach without getting very wett on which he and a nother Boat full of women Returnd on board again — it been now near four oClock Kellow and my Self with the People that were Landed proceed to the Town as Quick as we could — the Town from Cascade is between four and five miles a very bad Road — we could not march fast as the Men were loaded with what things the[y] could bring with them on Shore — before we got up into the Road we had a Terrib le hight hill to get up almost perpendicula r — the country is much thicker of wood than at port Jackson — you can hardly get throu the wood it is so thick —
we got to the Town a little before Sun Set where in place of finding houses for the officers and Barracks for the Detachment & convicts as Governor Phillips Said that we would there is hardly places for the people that is here before use to put there heads in — I was Quarterd one a Mr. Jamison one of the Surgeons mates of the Sirius who was Sent here about two Years Since on the Islands first Setteling — Capt. Johnstone, Kellow & Faddy are distributed upon others the Same as I am — the Detachment amongst the party that we found here and the Convicts where they Could — found Creswell, King and every body very well — this is I am told is a very Remarkable healthy place there having not been a Natural Death Since the Islands first Settling

**Sunday 14**

Fine weather — after Breakfast Mr. Kellow and Self walkd to Cascade to meet Majr. Ross's coming on Shore — on the Road we met a great many of the Convicts both Men and Women Particular the women that have young children Who told me that the[y] have been obliged to Sleep in the woods all night for the[y] could not get into Town, poor Devils how they are Kick about from one place to a nother — we got to cascade about 11 oClock when Soon after Majr. Ross Came on Shore and Landed very well — Lieut. Johnstone, Mr. Consident and little John came in the Boat with Majr. Ross but I think Captain Hunter might have been more Civil in Sending Majr. Ross on Shore than in the manner he did for I think that had Majr. Ross been a Convict he could have been treated wors than he was to day by Capt. Hunter in the Manner he was Shoved out of the Ship by him into a boat Loaded full with Cotts, hamocks, Hoggs, Pigs, Geese, Turkeys, Fouls &c So much that he had not room for his feet and when he landed on the Rock he was So much crampt that he could hardly Stand — I Saw on Majr. Rosses Landing that he felt very much on the manner he was Sent out of the Ship but I hope Majr. Ross has too much good Sense to take any Notice of it — after we got all the things out of the Boat we walk toward the Camp (or Town) on Majr. Rosses entring it all the people were assembled and gave him three cheers — we all dined at Mr. Kings and after dinner we all walked out to the farm — Majr. Ross and Self had a little conversation about different things — He takes up his Quarters at Mr. Kings — Majr. Ross on his Landing took the Command of the Island — See the orderly Book

**Munday 15**

Fine weather — after dinner went over to Cascade to See if any of my things are Sent on Shore as I sent word on board by the Boat that Majr. Ross Came on Shore in for my Servant to Send my Bed on Shore as I dont feel myself comfortable where I have
Sleep these two night past — Majr. Ross has given the Convicts that came with use all this week to Errect themself hutts

**Tuesday 16**

Fine Weather — Still to much Surf on the Reef to permit the Boats to Land any thing from the Ships if the[y] were in the Bay — I told Major Ross that I wished to be Quartered Some where else than at the place where I am at present when he Said that I Should be removed from Mr. Jamisons and he would make up a Bed at Mr. Kings for me untill I got my own on Shore

**Wednesday 17**

Blows fresh — the Surf gone down much — Shall expect the Ships round tomorrow as there will be good landing — Sleep at Mr. Kings in the Same Room where Majr. Ross and little John — we all Sleep on the ground — walk after dinner over to Cascade Bay but the Ships not in Sight

**Thursday 18**

Blows fresh but very little Surf — I wish to god the Ships would come in Sight that I might get my things So that I might have a clean Shirt to put on for the Shirt and things which I have on now are as black as the back the chimney

**Friday 19**

this Morning about Seven oClock the Ships came in Sight — it blow fresh in the Morning but towards 9 oClock it became more Moderate — a little after ten the Supply came well into the Bay and Sent her Boats with the Baggagd of the Detachment and with what Stores, Provisions &c: for the Settlement that he has onboard on Shore — about 11 oClock the Sirius been well in the [bay] hoisted her Boats out and Sent them on shore with Provisions — at this time She was laying too under Nepean Island — Soon after She made Sail and was Endeavouring to get father out of the Bay, for She was too near the Shore, She was obliged to goe about for She could not weather the Reef of Point Ross but She mist Stays — every body thought She would have been on Shore on the Reef — when the[y] found that the Ship would not Stay — the[y] wore her which She did only a few
Yards from the Rock — from there been obliged to wair, it only brought them So much the nearer the Shore — the[y] could not Stand long this Way on account of the Reef which runs a long the Shore — about 12 oClock the[y] Endevoured to put her about but She would not Stay — She got in the trof of the Sea which forst her Stern formost on the Reef — as the Bell rung 12 oClock She Struck — when the[y] found that She Struck the[y] Cut a way all her mast — gracious god what will become of use all, the whole of our Provision in the Ship now a Wreck before use — I hope in god that we will be able to Save Some if not all but why doe I flatter myself with Such hopes — there is at present no prospect of it except that of Starving — what will become of the people that are on board for no boat can goe along Side for the Sea and her am I who has nothing more than what I stand in and not the Smales hope of my getting anything out of the Ship for every body expects that She will goe to pices when the tide comes in — Soon after the Ship Struck Major Ross proclaimed Martial Law for which See the orderly Book and the Remainder of what followd in the day for I am So low that I cannot hold the pincle to write in short my pocket Book is foul and will not hold any more

**Saterday 20**

have been up all night as has every body in the place — Soon after the Ship went on Shore trunks, Boxs beds &c what was nearest at hand was thrown over board in hopes it would float on Shore — a great dele has come on Shore but as Yet nothing of mine — Captain Hunter and between 30 and 40 of the people came on Shore on a graiting made fast to hauzher and the Remainder are coming on Shore as fast as the[y] can — as Yet there is nobody drownd or lost — I was very near been drownd Yesterday when I was going of on the Raft to assist the people that were coming on Shore — almost drownd on of the Convict who could not Swim, fell of the Raft and pushd me along with him, in which case we Should both have been drownd if I could not have Swimd — for the Raft went over use both and I was obligd to Swim back to the Shor with him holding fast to me by the waisband of my Trousers — when I got on Shore he was almost dead but he Soon Recoverd on which I took a Stick out of one of the Serjeants hands and gave him a damd thrashing for pulling me of the Raft with him — he better have been drown for I will give him the Same every day for this month to come that I meet him — for orders See the orderly Book

**Sunday 21**

every body got Save on Shore Yesterday — here there is above 500 hundred Souls and not above Six thousand wight of Flour
in the Island to feed use with — what will become of use god only knows — See the Council or orderly Book for the Resolution we have Judged Necessary for the Safety of the Colony and which will be Read to every body in the Island to Morrow —

Several of the things came on Shore from the Ship

Munday 22d.

a Eight oClock the Detachment got under arms and marchd down to the Beach where all the Seamen beloning to the Sirius and all the Convicts on the Island were Assembled according to orders when the Resolutions were Read for the Safety of the Island was Read to every body and as it would take up too much time to tender ane Oath to every body to bind them to the Resolutions it was therfore agreed passing Voluntary under the Kings Colours to be as binding in our present Situation as any Oath that Could be taking on the holy Evangelist which every body most cheerfully agreed too and every person man, woman & child in the Island did pass under the Colours — Several of the Seamen got on board of the wrec k who throu over board what things the[y] could get at — my Trunk came on Shore with the Bottom out and I am affr aid the greatest part of the things which were in it are lost as I have not as Yet got any of them except ane old Coat and four Shirts and I am affraid all my other things are gone the Same way as the people Say that went on board that everything that was in my Cabin the[y] throw over board — if So heer I am without five Shirts a Waiscoat a pair of trousers a pair of old shoes a hat or a Coat and Jacket and not a Single thing to dress me a Single bit of Vitals in nor a Single bit of Soap to was me a Shirt — nobody that came in the Ship has lost So many things as I have — the most of them have Saved the greatest part of there Coaths — al that I can Say I am a child of bad Luck — Majr. Ross has also lost all his things and what he thinks wors than his coaths he has lost most all his papers

Tuesday 23

Several of the Seamen Orderd to Port Jackson in the Supply — as there was to much Surf for the Boat to goe out the[y] were obliged to carry their things over to Cascade Bay to the Supply — Capt. Hunter gave two of the Convicts leave to Swim on board of the Sirius if the[y] could to throw the live Stock over board — the[y] got Save on board and throw a great number of Hogs, Goats, fouls over board — the greatest part of them got Save on Shore — amongst the number my two Sows but all the pigs were dead on board as wer my fouls except my Cocks who Swam on Shore — the two Convicts got drunk and Some how or other got a Light which been Seen from the Shore the[y] were desired to come on Shore Several times and the[y] answerd
that they could not — every one was afraid that they would set the Ship on fire — if so we would loose all the provisions which we are now in great hopes of saving as the Ship has held together so long ther is a great chance of her holding together much longer — finding that they did not intend coming on shore one of the convicts made an offer to endeavour to swim on board and stay there if he could not get them out of the Ship to prevent them doing any mischief to the Ship — he got save on board and finding them both drunk and that they had set fire to the Ship he made them assist him in putting the fire out which he at last effected after which he order them both on shore where they both got save — he stay there all night and said that he would come on shore in the morning — the reason of his staying was that for fear the fire might break out again — all the people could not get on board of the supply — ball sent use 5000 wight of flour which is all that he can spear

**Wednesday 24**

Askot the convict that swam on board last night of the Sirius and who put the fire out reported to Majr. Ross and to Captain Hunter that had he not got on board as he did there would not have been a piece of the ship but what would have been burnt as she was on fire in two places on which Majr. Ross ordered James Branigan and Wm. Dring in irons — Lieut King took leave of use and went to cascade to go on board the supply for Port Jackson — Waterhouse one of the lieut of the Sirius has been very kind to me finding that I had lost all my thing sent me six of his shirts as he has saved the most of his which I refused accepting as I did not see a probability of repaying him — it was very kind of him — he goes to Port Jackson and the letters which I have sent to Port Jackson and home I have sent by him — by the general order of this day Majr. Ross has given several of use brevet rank — amongst the number he has appointed me to act as quarter master general and keeper of the public stores during the continuation of the martial law or until His Excellency the Governor in chief and Captain Generals pleasure is known — see the orderly book — if I am paid for it it will be a good thing — I wish to God I may — it will help to pay for the things which I have lost in the Sirius

**Thursday 25**

Some of the officers and the seamen went on board who sent on shore some provision and what things they could get at — all the marines off duty employed as sentinel along the beach to prevent the people from embezzle things — all the convicts employed on the reef in hauling the casks on shore and other stores as they send them out of the ship — if it hold good
weather as I hope in god it will we will be able to Save all the provisions — one of the Convicts found my best Coat laying on the Reef which was brought me — I got a nother of my Shirts to day in the Same way as I did my Coat

Friday 26

   Every body Employd as Yesterday — one of the Seamen in coming on Shore from the Ship to day Mr. Walker the Captains Clerk Seing him with a White Shirt on over all his other cloaths which proved to be one of mine which I took from by which the [y] must have brock my trunk open and taking all my thing out of it and then throw the Trunk with the Bottom out empty — my Small Trunk came also to day on Shore without anything in it — I own that I never Shall be able to get the Quarter of my things in Short I now give them up for lost — I Represented of the Sailor having my Shirt on to Majr. Ross who in consequence cald the Council to gether who gave out a Proclamation for which See the Council Book — got Several Casks of Flour and Salt Provisions on Shore to day

Saterday 27

   Every body Employ as Yesterday — got Several Casks of Flour, Beef, Pork, Rice and Some Spirits on Shore to day — this been a fine day I orderd the Casks of Rice to be opend and dryd as the Salt water got into Some of the Casks

Sunday 28

   a Great Swell Rolling into the bay which must occation a Most dreadful Surf — every body Employd in assisting the People in getting on Shore from the wreck as the[y] Expect her to goe to Pices any moment — the[y] all got Save on Shore — in the afternoon She canted round

Munday 29th.

   Very Fine weather but a Terrible Surf — the People Employd in drying the Flour Rice Calavances that have got wet in Coming throu the Surf
**Tuesday 30th.**

Still fine weather — got Several Casks of different kinds of Provisions on Shore from the Wreck — this is my Birthday this is the Worst that I ever Saw from the dreadful prospect before me that of Starving if Some thing dont come to our Relief or if we dont all exert our Selfs in clearing Ground for to put Corn or potatoes in

**Wednesday 31st**

The people Employd as Yesterday
APR 1790

April Thursday 1st.

The people Employd as before —— got Yesterday and to day near thirty Casks of different kinds of Provisions on Shore

Friday 2d.

an order came out to day Respecting the People having ther Hogs Returnd to them —— See the orderly Book —— the people Empd. on the wreck as before

Saturday 3th.

Fine weather —— Still Every body Employd as Yesterday —— the most of the Sailors on board of the Ship in Sending what the[y] can get at on Shore —— the Remainder on the Reef with all the Convicts hauling it on Shore and rolling it up to the Store Yeard and all the Marines at Guard as Sentinels in Seing them bring it up

Sunday 4th.

Fine dry weather —— the people Employd as Yesterday Except a few men attending me in oppning and drying what Flour or Rice that has got wet —— little Surf

Munday 5th

the people Employd as Yesterday —— Little Surf

Tuesday 6th.
Fine weather —— got a good number of Casks and other Stores on Shore

**Wednesday 7th.**

the people Employd as before in getting what they can on Shore and drying what is wet —— have as Yet got not any more of my things —— little Surf on the Reef

**Thursday 8th.**

the people Employd the Same as Yesterday —— got but few thing from the Ship to day on Account of the Tide

**Friday 9th**

Fine weather —— the people Employd on the Reef and a party of the Sailors on the wreck —— the Surf they Say the people that have been here the longest is getting up —— if So and it comes to blow it will break the wreck to pices

**Saterday 10th**

Birds Kild
159
147
319
625
145
178
291
1239

Fine weather —— got a few Casks of different kinds of Provisions on Shore to day —— thank god we have had Such good
weather to enable use to get So much on Shore as we have done — the Surf is going down again — as the greatest part of
the Provision is now got Save on Shore only the Sailors and forty of the Convicts are to be Employd in getting the Remainder
on Shore — all the Rest of the Convicts are to be Employd the (Artificers Excepted) in Clearing ground for Corn potatoes &c
and if we get the Remainder of the provisions out and Save on Shore I hope that we will be able to hold out untill the potatoes
and Corn is ripe and before the potatoes and Corn is all gone — Since the Supply will have Returnd from where the
Governour may have Sent her or Some Ships arrived with Supplys and I hope the Relief —— Birds Kild by M.159, S.147,
C.319

**Sunday 11th.**

Fine weather — little Surf — the people permited to Rest while the Tide is to hight for them to work on the wreck ——
Birds M.145, S.178, C.291

**Munday 12**

all the Seamen and a Gang of Convicts Employd in getting from the Ship what the[y] can —— all the Rest of the Convicts
Employd in Clearing Ground Artificers Excepted —— the Carpenters Employd in Erecting ane addition to the Store house —
— the Sayers Employd in Cutting Boards &c —— the Smiths at different Iron work — a party in making Shingles — the
women Convicts in Brining in flax for thatch

**Tuesday 13th.**

Fine Weather — the people Employd as Yesterday — little Surf — wind from the East which is a good wind for the
Supply if She has not got to port Jackson before this

**Wednesdaysday 14th.**

Fine clear weather — the people Employd as Yesterday — very little Surf — Wind East to N:E:
Thursday 15th.

Cloudy Weather it Seems inclinable to Rain — the people Empd. as before — all the Provisions is now got out of the Ship for which thank God — the people that are Masons and Stone Cutters Empd. at the Quarry getting Stones to build ane Oven for the Settlement of which the Settlement is in great want as there is but one Small one on the Island — a good dele of Surf and Seems inclinable to Rise —— Birds M.183, S.165, C.418

Friday 16th

it Raind a little in the night and from the cloudfyness of the day it looks if it would Rain again before long and the Surf will get up from the Swell that is Rolling into the Bay —— Birds [*]

Saturday 17th.

Fine Moderate Weather and not much Surf on the Reef —— hope that we Shall now Since they have got all the Provisions out of the Sirius Send the Boat a fishing when the Surf and Weather will permit the Boat's going out without danger

Sunday 18th

Fine Clear weather although it blows fresh from the S:E: and there is a great dele of Surf on the Reef —— the patroles in going the Rounds last night took Jno. Lowal a Convict prisoner he being out of his hut after Tattoo beating, contr[ary] to orders and having a Sack with Birds in it —— on the patrol challengin him he attempted to make his excape by flight but the Corpl. of the Patroles was to nimble for him and before
he would Stop for him he was wounded in the head but not of any consequence —— the Haversack containd 68 of the Mount Pit Birds

Munday 19th

Fine Clear Weather —— Sent the Boat out a fishing although a great dele of Surf on the Reef —— the Boat Caught Sixteen fish Consisting of Snappers, Blue fish and one Rock Codd —— the people Empd. as last week

Tuesday 20th

Fine Moderate Weather and very little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Returnd about 11 oClock with only ten fish —— a Non Commissioned officer and four Privates Empd. in Cutting Picquetting for which See the orderly Book and the Store Keeper orderd by the Lieut Govr. and Council to Stop half a pound of meat from every person weekly on Account of the Privalige being granted to kill Birds the Restriction on birds being taking off and was impossible to prevent the Sailors and convicts from killing the Birds when the[y] pleased and the Stopping the half pound of meat weekly will give the Store a weeks meat out of every Seven as every man has only at present 31/2 lb of meat a week and in the room of the Said half pound of meat everybody will have a great aboundance of Birds —— one of the Seamen beloni ng to the Sirius Punished with one Dozen of Lashes for Disobedience of orders —— See the Council Book Respecting the order for Stopping of the 1/2lb of meat

Wednesday 21st.
Fine weather —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Returnd with 56 large Snappers and one white fish —— Distributed them amongst the officers of the Detachment and the officers belonging to the Sirius 13 the Non Commd. officers and the Privates of the Detachment got and the Remainder amongst the Sirius of. —— Majr. Ross Ordered me to give no Receipt but for things Actually Received into Store on Account of a Receipt been offerd to Mr. Morley the depute Store Keeper to Sign for more things than ther was Actually delivered into Store from the Sirius and further ordered me to direct that no Candles should be given out of the Store to the Siriusses for as there were Candles of the Pursers on Shore his depute in futher was to Supply them with that Article —— Some of the Seamen were Sent on board of the wreck who Sent on Shore a quantity of Lead —— neer three thousand Shingles was Set on fire and burnt Supposed the[y] Caught fire by Accident —— very little Surf on the Reef —— Birds M.431, S.511, C.634

Thursday 22d.

Fine Clear weather —— wind S:E: —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Caught 20 Snappers —— little Surf —— all the Marines of duty Empl. Rubbing out Indian Corn —— the Small Cutter of the Sirius went out a Sounding Round Nepean Island —— the Sirius erecting a Log Store House —— Birds kild by M:296, S:184, C:301.

Friday 23rd.

Clear weather but Blows fresh from the Eastward —— the Surf encreased to much in the night to Send the Boat out a fishing —— the Additional Store House finished and the Key given to Captain Hunter for him to put the Stores Save out of the wreck which are not intended to be left on the island —— Birds by M.234

Saturday 24th
a great Surf on the Reef —— Captain Hunter and Johnstone Lieuts Creswell and Johnstone went to Mount Pit to day —— Majr. Ross discovered that Captain Hunters Servants (and he beleves his own Servents has Some hand it) have drunk or made away with all his Rum which he has been able to Save out of the Sirius —— of all the places in the World this is the greatest nest for Rascals it is impossible to trust any one of our men hardly much more any of the Convicts in Short there is no difference between Soldier Sailor or Convicts there Six of the one and half a Dozen of the other —— old Elliock was a man Majr. Ross placed the greatest confidence in and he and Ancott have Repaid the Major for the Confidence he placed in them as all Rascals Repay good Masters —— he has turnd them both of as has Captain Hunter his black Villian† —— Birds M:409, S.374, C:814

Sunday 25th

a Fine day although it blows hard from the Eastward and a very great Surf on the Reef —— have Recommended Ellis as a Servant to Majr. Ross who has taking him on my Recomendation he is not the most brightest but I can Say truely honest —— Birds by M:218, S.179 by the Convicts dont know

Munday 26

Fine clear weather but Still a great Surf —— Captain Hunter Reported me a few days Since to Majr. Ross on my witholding bags from the Ships Steward when the[y] wanted to Secure the Slops Saved from the wreck of the Sirius belonging to the Purser which in my oppinion charges me with a neglect of duty and have therfore wrot to Majr. Ross to beg of him to be so good as to order a court Martial to enquir into my conduct Since the order of the 24 of March last as Qr. Mr. Genl. and keeper of the P

Tuesday 27th.
Fine Weather but Still a great Surf —— the Matter between Captain Hunter and myself Amicable Settled —— Punished Elizh. Breezes and Philbay Flattery to woman Convicts with 25 Lashes Each for Neglect of duty by Suffering the Hoggs to get into the Guarden —— Wm. McNamara was order to be Punished for disobedience of orders but when he was striping himself he attempted to Stab himself with a knife —— the knife being blunt he did not Effect it and in the Room of Receiving the 50 Lashess which he was orderd to Receive he is orderd to be chained to the Grind Stone —— Birds kild Yesterday and to day 2653 —— the people Empd. as last week

**Wednesday 28th.**

Fine Clear weather —— wind S:E: —— a great Surf —— Birds M.211, S:191

**Thursday 29th.**

a Fine day but blows very hard from the S:E: not So much Surf as Yesterday —— Birds Kild, M:313, S.480, C.505

**Friday 30th.**

much the Same weather as Yesterday except that there is but little Surf on the Reef —— Read the Articiles of War to the Detachment —— Birds kild by M:196, S:483, C:795 —— the[y] are coming in very fast about Sun Set the[y] come in So thick that they darken the place much Sooner than it otherwise would

* These figures add up to 6658.
† Clark appears to be alluding to the execution of the rum thieves: “he has turned them off” but “old Elliot” re-appears on p.147 infra.
MAY 1790

May Saturday 1st.

Blows hard and Squaly from the Eastward —— little Surf on the Reef —— a General order given out Respecting the Birds See the Orderly Book —— Punished W Raimor Convict for theft he was orderd to Recieve one hundred Lashes but was only able to bear Sixteen —— Birds brought in by M.743, S.901, C:1239*

Sunday 2d.

The wind has got a little more round to the Northward Still blows very hard and the Surf is getting up —— Lanchd the Small Coble which the Carpenters beloning to the Sirius have build in the Room of the one that was Stove to pices in assisting the people on the Reef when the[y] were getting the things from the wreck —— She is a very bad Boat good for nothing —— the Birds at Mount Pit last night were So thick that the[y] came down a little after Sun Set like a Shower of hail —— my Servent was there and kild himself 193 Birds —— it is a great Blessing that we have these Birds in Such aboundance —— Birds M:941, S.749, C:1579

Munday 3rd.
The wind changed in the Night to Southward from which it Blows fresh little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who caught only 12 Snappers I hope Since wind has changed to here from Port Jackson —— the people Empd. as last week Excep the Masons Empd. in building a chimney and ane oven for the Kitching —— Birds brought in Yesterday M.302

Tuesday 4th

Fine weather and little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who had but little Success to day again having Caught only 13 Snapper and Blue Fish —— the wind being S.W is fair for any thing which may be coming here from Port Jackson —— a Number of our men Sick as well as of the Seamen and Convicts, Birds M: 845, S.793

Wednesday 5th.

Blows very hard from the Southward and to much Surf to Send the Boat out a fishing —— begun Sowing Oats to day at the Government Farm —— Birds M.905, S.965, C.705

Thursday 6th
the Wind the Same as Yesterday and at times blows very hard not much Surf but too great to Send the Boat out with Safety —— Chas. McFarlain a Convict Boy in Cutting a pice of wood with ane Axe, the Axe Slipt in his hand and Rebounded back from the hardness of the wood against his forehead and fractered his Scull So much that there is a great chance if he will Recover —— Birds M:507, S:801, C:761

**Friday 7th**

Fine mild weather the wind has come Round to the Eastward again —— little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Caught 40 Snappers —— Served all the Officers with fish and the Remainder of the Sailors who had not fish the last time that there were any fish —— also Served Some of the Convicts —— the Sick getting better —— Birds M.501, S.991, C.1092

**Saterday 8th.**

Fine Moderate Weather —— little wind and no Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Returned about 12 oClock with 20 Snappers —— the Weather being Remarkable fine and no Surf Sent her out again and She Returnd at Sun Set with 60 Snappers —— Served all the Convicts who had no fish Yesterday and begun with the Marines there being more than would Serve the Convicts —— Birds M.796, S.1013, C.1890
Sunday 9th.

Fine Moderate weather little Surf on the Reef —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Caught 182 large Snappers —— Supplyd every on the Island with a great allowance of Fish —— the people brought in Birds last night to the amount of 4783 —— long may this Blessing Continue

Munday 10th.

Birds
31491
4783
4106
1292
41072

Fine Moderate weather no Surf on the Reef —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Returned about 12 oClock with 120 fine Snappers —— Supplyd all the officers Marines Sailors and the greatest part of the Convicts —— Sent the Boat out again who Returnd about Sun Set with 67 Snappers —— Supplyd the Remainder of the Convicts who had non this forenoon —— Punished Jeremy Thompson, Wm. Fisher, John Hall, George Wood and Thomas Watts (of the Boats Crue for Concealing fish) with 50 Lashes each —— also Punished Jas. Richardson with 50 Lashes for neglect of duty for not floggen the above five men as he ought to have done —— Punished also [*] Boyle for fighting with 50 Lashes (all Convicts) the people Empd. as last week —— a good number of our people getting on the Sick list as well as the Seamen and Convicts —— Birds M.410, S.903, C.2793

Tuesday 11th.

much the weather as Yesterday and no Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Caught 87 fish —— Served the Remainder of the Convicts who had no Yesterday —— very little wind and that against any thing that may be coming from Port Jackson for the Relief of this Settlement all the Marines at duty Empd. in making a Trench to bring the water more Nearer to the Town —— the Navel Corps Empd in bringing in flax to thach there Barrack except a few in drying the Powder which the[y] have
Saved from the wreck —— Sent the Boat out again after dinner to fish who returnd at Sun Set with 50 fish —— Supplyd the Marines it being their turn as it begun with them —— the people in General begin to look very bad from the Shortness of the allowance and from all appearances it will be worse with use all before it is better I am affraid —— Birds M:304, S.687, C.301*

**Wednesday 12th.**

it Raind the greatest part of all last night but it is a fine day —— little wind —— Sent the Boat out a Fishing although a good dele of Surf —— the Boat Returnd about 12 oClock with 67 Fish —— Servd them to the Convicts and Sailers —— Sent the Boat again after dinner who Returnd about Sun Set with 30 Fish —— Servd them to the people whose turn it was —— the Marines Empd. as Yesterday which work the[y] finished —— Punished [*] Usher a Convict with 50 Lashes for theft —— Birds Marines 398 Sailors 594 Convicts 1130

**Thursday 13th.**

Squaly with Rain wind from the Westward —— no So much Surf as Yesterday —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Returned with 30 fish only —— Served them to the Officers only —— Birds by Marines 403, Seamen 731, Convicts 391

**Friday 14th.**

41072
403
731
391
703
409
931
608
703
Squally weather not much Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing who Returned with 87 fish —— Served them out to the officers, Oversiers, Marines and the Sailors —— The Council mett to day According to the General Order of Yesterday to take into consideration the present Exhausted State of the Provisions in this Settlement when it was Unanimously agreed and ordered to take place to Morrow Viz. Flour 3 lb, Beef 11/2 lb, or 17 ozs of Pork and 1 lb of Rice to each person per week —— Children above twelve months old half the above Ration —— Children under twelve months 11/2 lb Flour and 1 lb of Rice Pr. week for which See the Council Book —— Took an acre of the Public Potatoes which Produced 167 Bushels —— Punished [*] Blunt a Convict for the old crime theft with 50 Lashes —— Birds By Marines 703, Sailers 409, Convict 931

Saterday 15th

Fine Moderate Weather wind S.W. —— Little Surf —— Sent the Boat out in the morning and again in the afternoon —— the [y] Caught in the morning 167 large Snappers in the afternoon 104 —— Served every body in the Settlement with a great aboundance of Fish man woman and child —— the Potatoes which were taking up Yesterday put into the Barn for [Seed?]’ —— according to the order of Council Issue the above Rations to day —— Jno. Robins and [*] Finnesy both Convicts ran away into the wood on account of theft the former for Stealing Calavances & the later for Stealing Cabbages for which they were to be punished —— Bird M.608, S.703, C:485†

Sunday 16th

Fine Moderate Weather and very little Surf —— Sent the Boat out in the morning and again in the afternoon a fishing and She brought in in the morning 87 in the Evening 59 Snappers —— the Convicts being the first to Serve Served them all fish every body were also Served Turnip in the Settlement from the Publick Guardan —— the little wind that there is being fair for any Ship that may be coming with Provision for the Relief of this Starved Island —— the Number of Birds brought in by Marines, Sailers and Convicts last night of which I have been able to get ane Account of Amounted to 4731

Munday 17th
Moderate Weather and little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing this morning —— She Returnd about 12 oClock with 183 fish —— Servd every body in the Settlement fish —— the Surf got up much Since the Morning and Seems inclinable to get up more on which Account dont think it Save to Send the Boat out again this afternoon for on her our great hopes for Substinance depends and Should any Accident happen to her we would Soon fine the great want of her —— Jno. Robins that went into the woods the [day] before Yesterday Returnd last night and gave himself up to one of the Overseers —— was Punished with 50 Lashes and ordered to be put on two Pounds of Flour only a week and to work in Irons —— the people Empd as before; all the Convicts/Carpenters, Smiths, Masons, Sawyers, Shinglers Excepted/ in clearing Ground for to put Potatoes, Corn &c in for use to live on —— the Carpenters in Sundrys the Smiths in making fishing hooks, the Masons in building an Oven the marines in bringing Timber to the Saw pits, the Sailors in brining in flax to thatch their Barrack, the female Convicts in brining in flax also to Thatch different Huts —— the Number of Bird brought in last night 4031

Tuesday 18th

Squaly weather wind S:W. and a great Surf —— every body Supplied with Turnips —— the two Armours of the Sirius Empd in making Hinges lock &c for Captain Hunter and the other officers of the Sirius, three of the Convicts Empd in making fishing lines out of Rope Yarns there not being a fishing line in Store all the lines which were in Store on Majr. Ross's taking the Command of the Island being all worn out —— Branagan and Dring the two Convicts Confined in the Guard House Some time past /for getting drunk on board of the Sirius when the[y] got leave to goe on board to throw the Remainder of the Stock that was a live on board over board to Save it from Starving in hopes that the Sea might throw Some of it Save on Shore /for Setting the Ship on fire are this afternoon Released from the Guard House and permittd to goe to there own Hutts but Still to Remain in Irons —— birds Marines 309, Sailers 437, Convicts 614*

Wednesday 19th
Still Squaly weather but the Surf being gone down much Sent the Boat out a fishing in the morning She Returnd about 12 oClock with 103 large Snappers and a large Black Cod —— Served fish to all the marines, the Sirius's Ships Company and the greatest part of the Convicts —— most of the Carpenters of the Sirius Employd in making Chest Boxes &c for Capt Hunter and the Rest of the Officers of the Sirius in the Room of there being Empd. in building houses for to Shelter them and there people from the weather —— the Boat was out in the afternoon and Return'd about Sun Set with only 8 fish —— Birds brought in last night 3081 —— the Boat that was build in the Room of the one that was Stove to pieces in assisten the people on the Reef when they were getting things from the Sirius is not worth the Nails that have been expended in making her for she is good for nothing and I think Majr. Ross is very much in the Right not to Suffer or Send any person out in her without the Reef for chances are against her if She would ever Return again —— She has got every bad Quality that a boat can have —— She is like the Rest of the Boats which the Carpenters of the Sirius have attempted to build —— a party intended to have gone to Mount Pit to day Consisting of Captains Hunter and Johnstone Lieuts Creswell and Kellow to S[p]end the day there and to have taking 16 men beloning to the Sirius Ships Company to have Cut down trees on Mount Pit which Major Ross very properly I think put a Stop too on account of there intending to have cut down trees there as he Said the greatest part of our present Subsistance we get from there from the Birds that Resort to that place and as the Cutting the trees down there might be the means of making them leave the Island much Sooner than the[y] otherwise would therfore desird that no tree there might be cut down without his permision on which the above party put off there Excurtion [to] the mount

Thursday 20th.

Cloudy weather and blows fresh from the Southward —— it Raind hard last night at times it also Lightened and Thundred a good dele in the begining of the Night —— not much Surf on the Reef —— Sent the Boat out this morning a fishing who caught 42 Snappers which were distrubed amongst the officers Non commd. officers &c —— the[y] Sowd two Bushell of Barly
at the Government Farm and also begun planting also potatoes at the Said Farm —— Birds 939

Friday 21st.

Moderate weather —— did not Send the Boat out this morning on Account of her wanting Some Repair but Sent her out in the afternoon when She Returnd at Sun Set with 98 Fish —— Servd the officers and then the Convicts it been there Turn but ther not being fish Sufficient to Supply all the Convicts —— little Surf —— the Seamen begun clearing ground for a Guarden also put Some more potatoes into the Ground at the Publicks Farm —— a Complaint was made to Major Ross to day that Some of the Convicts [go] * to Mount Pit only for the Sake of the Birds Eggs the[y] Catch the Birds and them that have no Eggs the[y] let goe again and them that are with Egg the[y] Cut the Egg out of them and then the[y] let the Poor Bird fly again which is one of the Crueles things which I think I Ever herd —— I hope that Some of them will be Caught at this Cruel work for the Sake of making ane example of them —— Birds kild last night by M.381, S.631, Convicts 839

Saterday 22

60578
1851
2052
5631
70112

Fresh Breezes and Cloudy the Wind N:ByW: —— no Surf —— Sent the Boat this morning and again in the afternoon —— She brought in, in the morning 110 and in the Evening 106 large Snappers —— Served fish to Every body in the Settlement Except the man that is Still absent in the woods /Tennesy/ a Convict —— ane order came out to day Respecting the people going to mount Pit and taking with them Dogs, tools or Implements and distroying the Birds there Cruely and Wantenly for which See the Orderly Book —— the Convicts were musterd to day and the order which came out to day Read to them —— Several of them were absent at muster for which there Provisions is order to be Stopt —— Birds 2052

Sunday 23rd
Munday 24

the Greatest Part of Last night it Thunderd Raind Lightend and Blow very hard and at present it blows a very hard gale of wind from the S.W: —— there is and has been all this day a great Surf on the Reef —— this morning died Ann Farmer a famele Convict which is the first Person that has died a natural death Since the Island has been first Settled —— She was better than half dead before the[y] Sent her from England —— by all accounts She was a most wicked woman having been the Occation of more than twenty men and women coming to untimly ends but She is now gone where She will be Rewarded According to her merrits —— the people Empd. as last week Viz. the marines in felling timber for the Saw pits and bringit to the Pits —— the Sirius Ships Companie Some in Clearing ground of a Gardin the Remainder bringit in Spars to a Saw pit which the[y] have made to be Cut by them in Oars —— the Ships Carpenters in making Box tables &c for the Ships officers —— the Ships armorous at diff. jobs for dito —— the Convicts that are not Smiths Carpenters Sawyers Masons &c Empd. in felling trees Clearing Ground &c for Corn —— the Smiths in making a Chain for the officers Mess Kitching Chimney and also making Fishing Hooks, the Carpenters Some in fitting up Capt Johnstones House others in putting up the Picketing round the Marines Encampment &c the Sawyers in Cutting Inch Half Quarter and feather edge Boards also Some Scantling for different purposes —— the female Convicts in picking up the Roots of the trees /where the male Convicts have grubed the Ground for Sowing/ and putting them in Small heaps for Burning —— very few Sick and none of them very bad the[y] having only Small Wounds —— Birds brought in last night 4354

Tuesday 25th.
Much the Same weather as Yesterday and Still a very great Surf —— the people that were at Mount Pit last Evening Say that the Birds there were thicker than the[y] ever Saw them —— it is a great Blessing that the Birds last So long for god knows what would become of use, if it was not for them being So plenty as the[y] are —— for these two days past the Boat has not been able to goe out a fishing on Account of the great Surf and to all appearence She will not for these Several days to come —— Birds last night 1839

**Wednesdjay 26th.**

The weather more moderate than what it has been these two days past the wind has come Round to the S:E: Still a great Surf —— Finnesy the Convict that went into the woods the 15 Inst on Account of theft was brought in to day by Saml. Husey a Convict who Caught him in his Guardin endeavouring to Steal his potatoes —— he is put into Irons and Confined into the Guard House for the present —— Birds last night 3113°

**Thursday 27th.**

Squaly weather wind S:E: a heavy Surf at times but it appears if it was going down —— Thos. Finnesy who was brought in Yesterday being brought before three members of the Council Viz. Captain Johnstone Lieut Johnstone and my Self when the whole charge being proved against him Viz: that he on the 15 Inst did take a Cabbage out of Lieut Creswells guardin and absented himself from all work from that time untill he was brought into Camp Yesterday by Saml. Husey for which we Sentenced him to have his allowance Stopt from the Public Store except 2 Pounds of Flour a week for the Space of ten weeks and to work in Irons during that time —— Birds last night 1811
Friday 28th.

Moderate weather and the Surf going down fast —— Empd. the marines Such of them as work as Carpenters at Port Jackson to get a place Erected for to put the hand mills up to grind the Corn as all the flour that is in Store will Soon be expended —— Birds 1393

Saturday 29th.

Moderate on Shore little Surf —— Sent the Boat out this morning a fishing but it blowd hard in the aftning which preventd her from Staying on the fishing ground and the[y] Caught only 10 Snappers which were Served to the officers —— Birds last night 2153

Sunday 30th.

Moderate weather and little Surf on the Reef —— Sent the Boat out in the morning and again in the afternoon —— She brought in, in the morning 59 and in the afternoon 17 Snappers —— Served them to the officers and the two first Messes of the marines —— Birds last night 4727

Munday 31st.

Fine moderate weather little wind from the Northward and Surf —— Sent the Boat out this morning and again in the afternoon —— She brought in, in the morning 101 and in the Evening 69 Snappers —— Served every body in the Town with fish —— the people Employd as last week —— Birds last night by Marines 913, by the Sailers 1101, by the Convicts 2743

* The grand total to date is 15,368.
* The grand total to date is 27,805.
* The grand total to date is 41,685.
* MS not clear but probably “Seed”. See entry for June 11. p. 140 infra.
† Clark has omitted the number of birds caught on May 12th from his calculations. The grand total to date is 49,171.

* The grand total to date is 59,293.

* The grand total to date is 63,313.

* MS reads “had”.

† The grand total to date is 72,847.

* The grand total to date is 82,153.
JUNE 1790

June Tuesday 1st.

Much the Same weather as Yesterday very little Surf —— the Boat went out this morning as did the Small Cutter of the Sirius —— the Coble or Island Boat brought in in the forenoon 120 large Snappers and the Cutter 86 dito —— being fine moderate weather and No Surf Sent them both out again after dinner & the[y] Returnd at Sun Set the Coble with 59 and the Cutter with 17 Snappers —— Served Every body with a great abundance of Fish —— long may this Fish Continue —— Birds last night 951* —— Punished [*] with 50 Lashes Convict for Neglect of duty

Wednesday 2d.

Fine weather —— Sent the Coble and Small Cutter out this Morning the[y] Both Returnd about 12 oClock the former with 59 and latter with 152 fine fish —— Served all the officers marines Seamen and and the Convicts Until the 59 Mess of them —— more Surf than ther was Yesterday and it appears if it was going to Rise which is the Reason that the Boats did not goe out again this afternoon —— Bird 3930
Thursday 3rd.

although the weather had not the most favourable appearance Sent the Boats out the Coble and Cutter this morning on Account that to Morrow is the Kings Birthday wished to be able to get every body in the Settlement a Mess of Fish but about 10 oClock the weather look very bad and the Surf getting up made the Signal for the Boats to come in which the[y] did —— the Coble with only 3 and the Cutter with 59 Snappers —— Served them out to the officers and the Remainder to the petty officers of the Sirius and non Commd. officers of the detachment —— little John and myself with three of the Servant went to Mount Pit last night to See them Catch the Birds —— we got to the mount a little before Sun Set —— at Sun Set the Air was as thick with them as knats are in a fine Summers Evening in England —— I Caught above two hundred of them but as I only wanted them that had Eggs I let them all goe Except 27 who were with Eggs goe again —— we Staid about one hour and a half for to get these Birds after which we lighted our Torches and and Came home about 1/2 after Eight —— Birds last night 1590

Friday 4th.

Blows hard from the N:W: and a great Surf —— this being his Majestys Birthday the people are on which Account allowd a holiday —— the Detachment in honour of the day fired three Vollies —— all the Gentlemen in the Island dinned with Major Ross as also Supped where the greatest good cheer and harmony subsisted amongst every one —— Every body Seemd to be happy —— Birds last night 4341

Saterday 5th.

Blows Still very hard and a most Tremendious Surf —— Majr. Ross order a party out to look at a place where he is informed
that there is about Sixty Acres of ground which might be easly Cleard —— Birds last night 6125*

Sunday 6th.

Clear weather and it dont Blow So hard as it did Yesterday but Still a great Surf —— the party that went out Yesterday morning Returnd last Evening and Reportd to Majr. Ross that the[y] had found the place and that there is near a hundred Acres which might be cleard in a much Shorter time than ten Acres wher the[y] are Clearing ground now —— Majr. Ross intend going to Look at the place before he intends Sending any people out ther to clear ground for Corn —— ther is also plenty of water —— Birds last night 5190

Munday 7th.

Dirty Rainy weather little wind from the North East and the Surf going down fast —— the People Empd. as last week —— Birds brought in last night by different people 5653

Tuesday 8th.

Nasty weather it Raind hard all last night as it has done all this day and it has blown fresh from the N:E: little Surf —— Birds last night 1213

Wednesaday 9th.

Much the Same Weather as Yesterday except that it blows harder from the Same Quarter and the Surf inclineable to Rise —— as the Boat cannot goe out a fishing the Boats Crew Employd in Splitting wood to make Charcoal —— Birds Kild last night 3515
Thursday 10th.

Squaly weather and a great Surf —— the Smiths Employd at Setting the Charcoal Kiln —— Birds 1591

Friday 11th.

Clear weather and blows fresh from the N:W: and a great dele of Surf —— Punished the following Convicts with 50 Lashes each Peter Creamer, [*] Clark, [*] Touso and Chas. Repeat for neglect of duty —— the[y] planted a half Acre of potatoes at the Public Farm to day —— Birds last night 1831

Saturday 12th.

More moderate than yesterday and the Surf gone down very much —— the[y] planted a nother half Acre of Potatoes for the Public to day —— Birds last night kild 1907*

Sunday 13th.

Birds last night kild 1907*
Fine Moderate weather and little Surf —— Sent the Cobal out a fishing as did Capt Hunter there Small Cutter also —— the Cobal Returned about 12 oClock with 27 Snappers and Sent her out again the moment that the fish was got out of her —— the Cutter Return about 3 oClock with 139 fish —— begun Serving the fish where I left of the first of this month at 59 Mess of the Convicts & Servd also all the officers the Detachment and the Ships Companies of the Sirius —— the Coble Returnd about Sun Set with 134 Snappers —— Served all the Convicts as also all the officers again —— this has been a glorious day for it has given every body and a great many times fish in the Settlement to day —— four Such days as this in the week untill the Ships arrive from England or the Return of the Supply from wher She may have been Sent for Provisions for use —— I think we will not Starve and also the other Blessing that of the Birds for there were kild last night 5709

Munday 14th.

Moderate weather and no Surf —— Sent the Coble out this morning as did the Cutter of the Sirius —— the[y] Both Returnd about 12 oClock the Coble with 30 and the Cutter with 66 Snappers —— Served all the officers after which begune where I left of it Yesterday at the 63 Mess of the Convicts —— Served them and all the Detachment and the four first Messes of the Sailers —— both Boat were Sent out again and the[y] Returnd about Sun Set the Coble with 18 and the Cutter with 26 fish —— Served the Boats Crews and as far as the Six Mess of the Sailers —— the People Empd. as follows 20 Privates of the Detachment with two Non Commd. officers to grub ground to plant Potatoes —— five of the marines went out by order of Majr. Ross to the place where the party went on the 5th. Inst and to clear ground in order to build Some hutts on —— it is about two miles on the left of the mount Pit Road —— Majr. Ross Captains Hunter and Johnstone and Lieut Creswell went out to look at it last Saterday and the[y] found it a very fine pice of Ground —— no Timber on it nothing but Vines —— Majr. Ross intends to make it the principa l place of Cultavation as the[y] Can Clear five Acres with less trouble there with the Same number of hands than the[y] can clear one Acre where the[y] are Clearing Ground at present which will be a great thing for the whole Settlement in our present Situation —— the Sawyers in Cutting half inch, inch and two inch Board for a house for Captain Hunter —— the Carpenter in putting the fraim together —— the Smiths in making hooks for Clearing the Vines at the now intended Settlement —— 4 four men at making Shingles —— Jas. Thomas a Convict tried to day for attempting to Steal flour from the Public Store last Saterday when the[y] were Serving out the Provisions to the people —— the crime being proved for which he is Sentenced to be put on two pounds of flour a week only for the Space of twelf weeks and to work in Irons during that time —— Elizh. Thomas trie d to day also for detaining to Kettle from one of the Seamen —— She was orderd to Return the Kettle to the Person —— Birds last night 4103’
Tuesday 15th.

It Blowd Remarkable hard last night from the Northward with hard Rain —– the was not much wind and little Surf In the morning —– Sent the Boat out in the morning but about 9 oClock it came on to blow a hard gale of wind from the Westward and the Boat being to Leward of the Bay She could not pull up for the great Sea and wind being against her —– She was obliged to goe to Ball Bay where the Sailers went to haul her up there being non of our men in Town Except the Guard and all the Convict being out of Town also at work —– about four oClock the people Returned from hauling the Boat up and left her Save above hight water mark in Ball Bay —– the[y] Caught only four fish of which number there was a large black fish which I gave to the people that went to haul the Boat up and the others to the Boats Crew —– the place where Majr. Ross intends making a Settlement was this day namd Charlots field in honour of her Majesty —– Good Woman —– planted an Acre and half of Potatoes more again to day —– Birds kild last night 2114

Wednesday 16th.

It has blown Remarkably hard all this day from the Southward —– five men Sent out to Charlot Field to make a Road down to the Run of water —– Birds last night 1320 —– the Surf getting up

Thursday 17th.

It Blowd very hard all last night and has done the Same the great part of this day from the South East and a great Surf on the Reef —– more Moderate this Evening —– Captain Johnstone with two Non Commd. officers and Six Privates with a gang of ten Convicts went out to Charlotts Field to day to build huts —– by to days order Captain Johnstons Companie is to hold themself in Readiness to march to Charlots Field when the huts are build for ther Reception for the purpose of Clearing Ground and the[y] will be paid with the other working parties in the Settlement in the Usuall manner as other working parties of his Majesty Troup —– Captain Johnstons Companie with ane officer to march tomorrow morning to Charlots field to assist the making the Huts for the Reception of the Companie —– directed Mr. Morley by Majr. Ross order to deliver to the Carpenter of the Sirius Eighteen Grubbing Hows for the Use of the Sirius Ships Company for the purpose of ther clearing Ground for a Guarden for them Self —– the[y] planted a nother Acre of Potatoes at the Public Farm to day —– Birds last night 307 by the
marines only —— See the orderly Book for the above order

**Friday 18th.**

Clear weather with a fresh Breeze from the South and a great Surf on the Reef —— I marched out with the Compy. this morning to Charlot Field Staid with them and the ten Convicts untill near Sun Set Errecting Huts for my Self and the Companie —— the[y] Sowd 2 Acres of Barley at the Public Farm to day —— Birds last night 410’

**Saterday 19th.**

Moderate Weather and the Surf going down —— Lieut Kellow march with the Companie to Charlotte Field on the Same duty as I did Yesterday —— Removed the Powder from the Lower Flag Staff to a place dugg in the Majr. Yard —— Continued planting potatoes to day —— Birds last night 519

**Sunday 20th.**

Fine Moderate weather wind East and not much Surf —— the Boat Still above hight water in Balls Bay where there is too much Surf to Launch her —— Birds last night by the Marines 734, by the Seamen 1137 by the Convicts 2341 —— walk with Majr. Ross to Charlott Field

**Munday 21st.**

Moderate weather but a great Surf it having got up much Since last night —— the peopel Employd as last week —— Oataway Engle a male Convict Tried to day for neglect of duty and Sentenced to have only a Quarter of a pound of Flour a day and that to be Served him daily for the Space of one Month and to work as the other people doe in the gangs —— very few Sick and only one of them in any Danger which is a woman Convict —— I wish that the almighty would be So Kind to use as to take a few of them for we could doe much better without them at present as we he So little to give them to eat now —— Birds last night 3464
Tuesday 22d.

Fine Moderate weather but a great Surf Still —— William Cool a Convict was tried to day for leaving his work Yesterday /when he went out to Charlot Field with me/ without Leave —— Sentenced to be put on two pounds of flour a week only for the Space of one month —— Birds last night 703

Wednesday 23rd.

Nasty disagreeable weather for it has blown and Raind the greatest part of all last night from the Nothward —— little Surf —— Sent the Boats Crue Round to Balls Bay to Varnish the Cobal —— the Small Cutter of the Sirius went out a fishing this morning and Caught only 20 fish —— the Cobal got Save Round —— Thomas Roudon one of the Detachment at work out a Charlot Field in building huts went out to Cutt a Cabbage and has not been herd of Since —— Birds last night 1149

Thursday 24th.

Blows fresh from the Westward and at Times Rain —— Roudon is Still Missing —— Birds last night 805 —— not much Surf on the Reef

Friday 25th.

Squaly weather from the S:W: —— Roudon Still absent —— Some of the Company Slept at Charlotte Field last night —— Birds 410’

Saterday 26th.

Clear weather but Still Blows fresh from the S:W: —— Capt. Johnstones Compy. empd in carrin out ther Bedding &c —— by to days orders all the Compy. is to be out there to morrow to be Ready to begin on Munday morning —— Birds 793

Sunday 27th.
Blows fresh in Squals from the S:E: —— the Coble went out this Morning and Returnd about one oClock with only 12 fish —— Thos. Roudon that went from Charlot Field on Tuesday afternoon Returnd this day allmost dead —— the Account that he gives of himself is that on his leaving Charlots field to goe for the Cabbaged that he Soon after met a Cabbagd Tree which he Cut down and after Cutting the Cabbaged out of it he did not know which way to Return as he did not take note which way he had come that he walked about a little and it groing dark he Sat down for the night —— the next day he walked about the whole day but could not find his way back or hier any body that towards night he got near the Sea Shore he then lay himself down again for the night —— in the morning he made towards the Sea Shore which he has keep all the way as he had no other chance of getting ever in again but by walking round the Shore —— he has not eat any thing Since he has been loss except the Cabbage which he cut down on the afternoon that he lost himself —— after dinner Capt Johnstone Lieut Kellow and myself walk out here to Stay while the Companie dose and to See that they dont leave there work —— Birds last night 5035

**Charlot Field Munday 28th.**

Remarkably Fine day —— the drum for work bete at Seven oClock —— 24 Privates 4 Non Commd. officers and 18 Convicts Set too with a good will to Clear the Ground for Cultivation According to the orders of the [*] Instant and we have in my oppinion done a good days work —— I hope the men will Continue working as the[y] have done to day then with the Blessing of God we will be past all danger of Starving untill Some Relief comes to use which I trust will not be long —— First Birds Kild by the people from here 4 of our men and three of the [Convicts brought in to] day 451*

**Charlot Field Tuesday 29th.**

Very fine weather —— the men have workd very well again to day —— went into Town to Majr. Ross who Sent for me to deliver out the Hammocks for the Men beloning to Capt. Merediths Companie —— the Cobal and Cutter went out to day but dont know what fish the[y] Caught —— Birds last night 343†

**Wednesday 30th.**

Fine Moderate weather but the wind has got Round to the Northward and Since I have been heer I have Remarked that when
the wind gets into that Quarter we alwayse brings Rain —— Capt. Hunter and Lieut Creswell came out to See how we goe on —— the men work with the Same Spirrit as when the[y] first begune —— the two Boats were out this morning and Caught a great number of fish —— Majr. Ross Sent 20 of them out here for use and the people that are here —— Bird last night 415

* The grand total to date is 97,945.
* The grand total to date is 113,931.
* The grand total to date is 134,831.
* The grand total to date is 144,643.
* The grand total to date is 148,794.
* The grand total to date is 160,056.
* Ms. not clear.
† The grand total to date is 166,678.
JULY 1790

July Thursday 1st.

It Raind hard all last night —— in the morning it Seemd if it would hold up —— the working drum beat at the usual hour and every body went to work with the Same good Spirrit as if it was fine weather for while we were in the Field it Raind a times very hard —— at 11 oClock was obliged to brake the men of from work for the Rain —— about 2 oClock it lookd Clear and the men went out but was again obliged to call them in in about half an hour after and it has Raind almost ever Since —— from the Setting of the Sun and the wind getting Round to the Westward I hope to morrow will be a good day —— Birds last night 241

Friday 2d.

Much the Same weather that we had Yesterday —— Between the Showrs got the people out and I must doe them credit that for the time the Rain would permit them the[y] have workd very hard by making up a good fence with the Vine roots &c on the Right Side as you goe down to the Water —— 21 fish came out for use —— Bird 213

Charlot Field Saterday 3th.

Fair weather —— Set the people to work to make a fence on the left hand Side of the Road down to the water as the[y] did Yesterday on the Right hand Side —— Capt Johnstone went in to Town after Breakfast and Returnd to dinner —— Lieuts Creswell and Johnstone came out to See how we go on —— the[y] Returnd to dinner —— Lieut Kellow went with them and Returnd in the Evening —— Majr. Ross Sent out 30 fish for Every body her by which I find that the Boats have been out to day —— Birds last night 439

Sunday 4th.
Blows fresh from the S.W with Showrs at times —— Capt Johnstone and Self went in to dinner and Return in the Evening —— hope to morrow will be a good day that we may be able to work in clearing as we have done this last week —— Birds 591*

**Munday 5th.**

Fine weather but Blows very hard from the S:W: —— the[y] went to work this morning at the usual time in clearing the Ground —— Lieut Timins came out to See use after dinner —— Birds last night 608

**Tuesday 6th.**

Squaly weather and at times it Blows very hard —— Lieut Johnstone came out to dine with use —— the people went to work at the usual hours and have work like men ever Since the[y] have begun —— Birds last night 313

**Wednessday 7th.**

Fine Moderate weather —— the people Empd. as before —— Lieut Johnstone came out to inform use that the two Convicts that had abconded the 28 of June from their work were brought in as also Josh Touso who had left his work on Saterday last and that he Supposed that the[y] would be tried to morrow or next day and that we all Should be Sent for —— Birds 443

**Thursday 8th.**

Cloudy Weather with drisling Rain —— the people Empd. as before —— have been very ill all last night and am not much better now —— before dinner a Non Commd. officer came out with order acquainting use that the Genl. Court Martial for the Tryal of Benjn. Ingrim, David Lonkey and Josh Touso was to Sit to morrow and that we three are Members of it —— Captain Johnstone went in before dinner by whom I Sent in word to Majr. Ross that if I was not better than I am at present that I should not be able to Sit —— Mr. Consident the Surgeon came out to See me if I Should not be able to sit to morrow —— Lieut Johnstone came also out in the Same purpose —— finding myself much Better than I was in the Morning I walk in to Town with them and Majr. Ross was very glad to See me who made up a Bed for me —— Birds last night 410*
**Friday 9th.**

Cloudy Weather — find myself much Better to day — the General Court Martial held this day for the tryal of Benjn. Ingram, David Lonkey and Josh Touso Convicts for different Crimes — the Court not been able to goe throu all the Evidences the Court adjournd untill to morrow morning 9 oClock — not much Surf

**Charlotts Field Saterday 10th.**

It Blowd Remarkable hard all last night and it dose now in Squals — a good dele of Surf — the Court having met According to adjournment when after going throu the different Evidences for and against the Priseners as also the Priseners defences the Court have found them all Guilty of the first Part of the Charge of Absenting themselves from the Public Work without Leave and doe Sentence them to Receive each 300 Lashes on there bare Backs — after Tea came out to Charlotts Field

**Sunday 11th.**

Blows fresh — far from being well — Mr. Shortland came out to Breakfast and Staid dinner with use — Majr. Ross and little John came out to See how we have been going on and is very much pleasd with use — in the afternoon Capt Hunter and Lieuts Creswell and Johnstone came out also to See use and to See what progress we have made Since the[y] were here last

**Charlotte Field Munday 12th.**

Fine Morning — the people went to work as Usual in clearing the Ground — Six Convicts came out to Build a Hogg Sty for the hoggs belonging to the Public — the[y] are to Remain here untill the[y] have finished them — the latter part of this day Squaly with Thunder Lightening and Rain — Birds last night 310

**Tuesday 13th.**

Fine weather — the people at work as before — Majr. Ross, Mr. Ross and little John came out and dinned with use —
old Elliot planted a bed of Potatoes here to Show use how we are to doe them without turning the ground up or howing it ——
the latter part of the afternoon Squaly with a little Rain and Thunder and Lightening —— Birds 409

**Wednesday 14th.**

Fine Weather —— the people in Getting the Roots of the ground —— Mr. Consident and Mr. Walker came out heer to day
before dinner —— Capt Johnst one walked in to Town after dinner and Returnd in the Evening again —— Birds 319

**Thursday 15th.**

Clear Moderate Weather —— the people Empd. as Yesterday —— Birds 441

**Friday 16th.**

Cloudy Weather —— old Elliot came out this morning and Sowd about two Acres of Wheat —— the people Empd. in
clearing the ground of the Rubish and in howing the Corn in the Ground —— Lieut Johnstone came out this afternoon to inform
Capt Johnstone that he and his companie will be Relievd part to Morrow and the Remainder the day following —— Birds last
night 354*

**Saterday 17**

Fine weather —— the people Empd. in carring in there things &c —— Sent in all mine in the afternoon —— Lieut Johnstone
came out and I gave him up the Charge of Charlotte Field —— Lieuts Creswell and Faddy will be out to Morrow with the
Remainder of Captain Merediths Company —— while we have been out at Charlott Field we have Cleard better than 4 Acres of
ground fit for Sowing or planting

**Sunday 18th.**

Moderate weather and little Surf —— the Cobal went out a fishing this morning as did the Cutter —— the[y] Both Returnd
about 12 oClock the former with 12 fish and the latter with 90 —— Sent them both out directly again and the[y] Return at Sun
Set the Cobal with 12 fish and the Cutter with 2 fish —— the Remainder of Capt Merediths Compy. went out to Charlotts Field
this afternoon —— Served the fish out to the marines and to Some of the Convicts

Munday 19th.

It Raind very hard all last night and the greatest part of this morning —— it Clear up about Nine oClock and little Surf ——
Sent the Cobal and Cutter for to get fish —— the[y] Return the former with [*] and the latter with [*] fish —— Served them out
to the Convicts who had non Yesterday —— Majr. Ross cald the Council together and we came to the following wise
Resolution, Viz:
The Lieutenant Governor and Council having Judged it absolutely Necessary that as long as the Birds at Mount Pit are to be
had in Such abundance and as the Season of the Year is approaching for the Boat to be Employd in fishing that there Should not
be any more Salt Beef or Pork Issued from the Store untill those most Valuable Resources fail us And as it is very possible that
for Some Months longer we may find ourselves disapointed of the Supplies we have So long Expected from Europe and to
prolong as much as possible Some Small proportion of Animal food to every body before it is entirely Exhausted we have there
orderd that the Rations of Beef and Pork Shall not be Issued Untill further Orders —— See the Council Book
Since I have been out to at Charlotte Field the Serjeants of the Guard have neglected taking ane Account of the Number of
Birds which the people have brought in So that I have no Account off them and as the people dont come to the Guard house as
before Shall not be able to get an Account —— the people Employd the greatest part of the Convicts in Clearing ground as
before —— the Carpenters in building a house for Captain Hunter —— the Ships Carpenters in building a Boat after the
Moddle of the Coble for the Settlement —— when Built I hope we will have good weather to Send her out with the other Boats
a fishing —— the Sawyers in Cutting Planks for the Boat &c —— the Smiths in making Charcoal —— the people begin to
grow very Sickly

Tuesday 20th.

Fine Calm weather and no Surf —— Sent the Coble out a fishing as did the Cutter —— the[y] Returnnd about two oClock the
Coble with 136 and the Cutter with 74 Snappers —— the moment that the fish was got out of the Boats Sent them Both out
again and the[y] Returnd about Sun Set the Coble with 18 the Cutter with 2 fish —— Served them to all the Sailors, the Marines in Town and the Marines out at Charlott Field the greatest part of the Convicts in Town and all the Convicts at Charlotte Field and them at Pillomans Farm and at Cascade Farm

**Wednesday 21st.**

It Blowd hard all last night with hard Rain and it has done the Same all this day —— too much Surf to Send the Boat out

**Thursday 22d.**

it has done nothing all this day but blow a gale with hard Rain —— a great Surf on the Reef

**Friday 23**

Dirty disagreable weather much the Same as Yesterday —— a great Surf on the Reef Occationed with a heavy Sea rolling into the Bay —— the men attend me to Sign there Account for last Quarter

**Saterday 24**

Blows very hard Still but it is more moderate than it has been for these three days past —— a very great Surf on the Reef

**Sunday 25**

Moderate weather and the Surf going down fast —— hope to morrow Shall be able to Send the Cobal out

**Munday 26th.**

Clear Moderate weather and not much Surf —— Sent the Coble out this morning —— She Returnd at Noon with only 10 fish —— the people Empd. as last week —— Lieut Faddy came in from Charlotte Field and dinned with use —— after we had broke
up he Staid to acquaint Majr. Ross with a Conversation that he and Mr. Kellow had Respecting a’ Majr. Ross then Sent for Mr. Kellow when Mr. Faddy Repeated the Same words before Mr. Kellow as he had done before he came into the Room and Mr. Faddy Said which Mr. Kellow cannot deny —— Mr. Kellow Said Majr. Ross it is no Such thing I never Said any Such a thing on which the Majr. Said I will here no more about the Matter Since you have made use of Such Language to each other you have given each other the Lie one of you must be in the wrong both of you cannot be Right —— untill I know which is in the wrong I will here no more about the Matter on which the[y] both went a way —— I being present the whole of the time Majr. Ross askd me if I ever herd any thing like it —— I made Answ er one of them has told a Lie but which of them is the father of it I cannot Say on which the Majr. Said untill this matter is Clear up I will not put my feet under the Same table with eather of them and I'll beg of you as being the person that takes care of the Mess to goe to Mr. K and Acquaint him that untill this matter is cleard up I am Resol ved Not to sit down to table with him —— on which I went to Mr. K. and Acquainted him with Majr. Ross's Resolutions —— he made me for answer that he could not help it but what Mr. F. had Said was not true —— he then askd me what he could doe —— I made him for Answer if you ask me as a friend although it is a Delicate point to give ones advice on —— he Said that he did askd me as a friend —— I then Said you have nothing left but to call Mr. Faddy out —— he answerd me I am getting my pistols Ready in Expectation of hearing from Mr. F —— I Said I did not think that Mr. F would Call on him as Mr. F has given You the Lie and as Such it is your provence to Call Mr. F. out —— on which he Said he is gone out of to Charlotte Field on which I Said I believe he is coming down to you and Mr. Kellow You have no time to loose if you are concious that you did not Say the words which Mr. F Accusses you of —— Mr. K Said he was Certain that he had not Said any Such a thing —— he then Said I will watch him as he goe out to Charlotte Field and will cary my pistols with me for him to give me a Meeting now or when he thinks proper, on which I left him —— I soon after met Faddy who Said Clark I declair to God the words which I mentioned to Major Ross and before you were the Words which Mr. Kellow made use of to me and which he denays —— all that I Said to him was that one of you must be in the wrong —— a little after dark Mr. K Sent his Servant to Say that he would be glad to Speak to me on which I went too his house —— he Said Clark I have Seen Mr. F on his going up the hill to goe to Charlotte Field I went after him and I Said to him you Sir have Accused me befor Majr. Ross and Mr. Clark of Saying words which I never did Say for which I am come now to demand Satisfaction —— he made me for Answer that he was now going out to Charlotte Field and that he could not Stop and that he would consult his Brother officers before he gave me any Answer on which he left me —— I told Mr. Kellow I Supposed if he consulted his Brother officers that you will here from him in the Morning on which I left Mr. K: my own private
Tuesday 27th.

Fine weather almost a Calm — not much Surf — Lieut Faddy came in from Charlotte Field before Breakfast — after Breakfast Mr. Kellow Sent to me Saying that he would be glad to Speak to me on which I went to his house when he inform me that Mr. F had cald on him to inform him that he had come in from Charlotte Field to meet him — Mr. Kellow told Mr. Faddy very well on which I have Sent to You Clark to know how I am to ask I cannot goe out of Camp to day as I am on duty having got the day — I made him for Answer, that need not prevent You from meeting him as I will take the day for you — on which he Said I wish you Clark to goe with me as my friend — I told him that I did not think I could with any degree of propriety goe as your Second Mr. Kellow for been present when first this affair happened and having Since (as doing the Camp duty as Adj.t.) carried messages from the Commanding Officer to You and from You to the Commanding officer I dont know how far with Safety to myself I can doe it but I will ask Captain Johnstone in your presence if he thinks I can goe out with you as your friend with any degree of Safety and if he Says I can, I will attend you with pleasure, on which I sent to Capt. Johnstone that I would be glad to Speak to him at Lieut Kellows Quarters on which I asked him the above Question if I could goe with Mr. K as his friend — Capt. Johnstone Said Clark you cannot attend Mr. K: with any degree of Safety nor doe I wish you So much as to think of it — You can take the day for him — on which Capt J. left us — I askd Mr. K who went out as Mr. F friend — he Answerd me that he had nobody — You can be the friend of use both — I answerd him, no Sir, that I will not although I might goe out the friend of one of you it is no Reason that I am to goe as the Second of both of you, You wish to bring me in as a principle by your ask me to goe as a Second to both of you for Should eather one of you fall I Should be the person the Law would lay hold of to Answer to the person that was kild — by your asking me to goe out in the manner you have, you have put it intirly out of my power to attend you as your friend — if I was ever So much at liberty I therfor tell you that Should you never be able to get any body to goe out with you I am Resolved not to goe from the Manner you wished me to goe — on which he askd me if I could tell him who to askd — what doe you think he Said if I was to ask Capt Johnstone do you think he would — I Said I dont know Mr. K but I will Still give you my oppinion although you did not intend to have acted generously by me I will goe and ask him now — on which he went — I Staid untill his Return and he
Said Capt Johnstone declines it —— I told him You are intimate with Mr. Shortland why dont you askd him —— on which he said So I will —— he then Sent for Shortland when I left him —— I Soon after walk down to the Vale and went into my Guardian when I Saw Mr. F in his Guardian wher a little after Mr. K and Mr. Shortland join'd him —— Mr. Altree came also in the Guardian to Mr. Faddy —— the[y] were all ta[ll]king together —— a little after Captain Johnstone Came past and Cald to me Saying Clark I wish to Speak to You —— he Said that Mr. Altree had Sent in a Messagd to him to inform him that Lieut Kellow and Faddy were going to fight and that the[y] had pistols with them and Mr. Faddy had cald on him (Mr. Altree) out of his Guardian Saying as a Medical man I wish you not to goe home as I shall perhaps have occasion for your assistance and Captain Johnstone Said Clark I wish you to goe along with me to orderd Mr. Kellow and Mr. Faddy into camp —— I went with Captain Johnstone who orderd them Both into Camp —— Capt. Johnstone and Self Returned to Camp also —— he went and acquainted Majr. Ross with the Messaged he had Received from Mr. Altree and what he had done in consequence —— Majr. Ross Sent for me and disired me to goe and put Lieut Kellow and Faddy under an Arest and with orders for them not to Stir out of there Quarters without leave until further orders —— which orders I delivered to them both and when I was coming a way from Kellows House Shortland being there I Said Shortland I wish to Speak to you when I Said to him there being put Under Arest is nothing it is not the first time that the Arest has been hack’ in a Matter of less consequence to Gentlemens Characters than this affair is of Mr. K and Mr. F and it is absolutely necessary for the Sake of them both that the matter is Settled and I futher Said to Shortland Mr. Altree is a D... Rascal for his pains in letting Capt Johnstone know any thing about the Matter and if I was in Faddys place I would Cut his throat or take a Stick and beet him like a post for his pains —— after dinner Lieuts Johnstone and Creswell came in from Charlotte Field Major Ross having Sent having Sent for them to inform them of the behaviour of Lieuts Kellow and Faddy Yesterday before him and to desir that (we) Captain Johnstone, Lieuts Creswell, Johnstone and Self would inquir in to the matter and Endeavour to find out which is the agressor and Report our oppinion of them to him —— on which we Said that we would and mett at Captain Johnstones Quarters for that purpose where we had both the above Gentlemen before use from whom we were not able to make any thing of it —— the[y] both persisted in their first assertion —— we therfore cannot at present determine which is in the wrong but from all that we are able to collect from them both truth inclines on Faddys Side —— we have therfore agreed to meet again to morrow to See if we can find out which is the agressor —— about four oClock in Returning from the farm to Town I herd the Report of a pistol or Gun and was told by my Servant that he had met Messrs Kellow, Faddy, Shortland and Donevon going to [Turtle?] Bay a little after Sun Set —— Shortland came up to me and Said that Mr. Kellow and Faddy had been out and had each fire a pistol without doing Execution and that he had gone as
Mr. K. and Mr. Donovan as Mr. F Second when after the firing of the pistols that Mr. Donevon and he had interferred and made them Repeat the conversation that passed Yesterday which has brought on this disagreeable affair —— when Mr. Faddy Repeated Some part of the Conversation which Mr. Kellow Said that he did not Recollect it until this moment You Mentioned it Mr. Faddy —— then Mr. Donevon and my Self Said to Mr. Kellow Since Mr. Faddy has brought part of the Conversation to Your Recollection it is very possible that you may have forgot the Remainder —— Mr. Kellow Said that it was very possible but he cald God to witness that he at present did not Recollect them on which I said to them you must Excuse me not permitting you at present firing any more on which Mr. Donevon and I left them and came in to Town —— the[y] followd use —— as I found that Mr. Faddy Still persisted in what he Related to Majr. Ross to be the words that Mr. Kellow had informed him and Mr. Kellow as firmly denied having Said any Such word to Mr. Faddy the[y] intend to goe out to morrow morning again at day brake —— I Said to Mr. Shortland, Shortland if you take my advice I would have no more to doe with for take my word you will gain no credit in this matter I find for between you and me the person whose friend you have gone out as this afternoon I firmly believe to be the agresser and he has now enterd So fare into it that he is ashamed to Acknowlege it —— that is my opinion also and I will take your advice and will tell him that he must Excuse me as I cannot think to attend him any more —— I had a better opinion of Mr. Kellow than to think he would ask in the manner he has done —— I wish to God Faddy had Shot him throu the Hart for he Richly deserves it

**Wednesday 28th.**

Fine weather —— after Breakfast Creswell and John Johnstone came in according to agreement and we met again at Captain Johnstones Quarters when we Sent for Mr. Shortland and Donevon who informd use that Lieuts Kellow and Faddy had met Yesterday Evening in Consequence of a Challange from Lieut Kellow —— when the dispute and words that had passed between them were again Mentioned and Mr. Faddy Repeating Some part of the Conversation Mr. Kellow Acknowledged that the words had been Said but untill that Instant it had Escaped his Memory but what Mr. Faddy had first Reported was not true they then Exchanged a Shot when we interferred and on talking the Business over again Mr. Kellow Said that as he had forgot Some part of the Convesation that passed between them that he might have Said the words Which Mr. Faddy Accused him of to Majr. Ross but Said he did not Recollect it —— we then Sent for Lieuts Kellow and Faddy when we went over the Same Business that the above Gentlemen have Mentioned Mr. Shortland and Donevon and Mr. Kellow Owned he had been to
precipitate in asserting before Majr. Ross that what Mr. Faddy had advanced was false and Still Said that he did not Recollect of his having Said the words which has been the Occation of this disagreeble affair —— after which We desired that Mr. Kellow and Faddy as also Mr. Shortland and Donevon would with draw and if we wantd them any more we would Send for them —— after Conversing the Matter over we were all of the Same opinion that we think Lieut Kellow the aggressor from what we can learn from them Selves and there tuo Seconds and our opinion of Mr. Kellow is that his conduct in the late affair to be Really infamous & derogatory to the Character of an officer and a Gentleman and have beg of Majr. Ross that he will not put us under the disagreeable Necessaty of doing duty any Longer with a man who we think a disgrace to the Corps he serves in and who we are determined never to Associate with —— Mr. Kellows conduct in the affair alluded to in my oppinion as it not only to distroy the Reputation of an officer (who to me appears to be innocent & who I think has conducted himself like a man) but to deprive him of his Life by obliging him to have Recourse to a Pistol when he Lieut Kellow must have known that what Mr. Faddy had advanced was true and that he himself was the aggressor —— we have Reported our opinion of this affair to Majr. Ross by Letter and who Sent me in conse quence to Acquaint Lieut Kello w that his Conduct in the opinion of all his Brother officers has of late been So very much Unbecoming the Character of the officer and Gentleman he therfor Suspended from all duties in the Detachment untill further orders and I was also futher directed to inform him that he is not to interfer with any thing that is going on in the Collony and that he will be Sent from the Island in the first Ship or Vessel that leaves the Island for Port Jackson or for England —— all the Answer he made was he Supposed his A rrest was the Same as at Port Jackson —— I told him I believe So —— he did not appear to be cast down at his Situation —— it was also given out in orders of his been Suspended See the orderly Book —— I am very happy that I did not goe out the Second of Mr. Kellow for his principle his Character in Short his every thing is bad

**Thursday 29th.**

Fine Weather —— the Boat went out this morning and Caught 44 fish —— no Surf on the Reef

**Friday 30th.**

Fine Moderate Weather —— the Cutter and Coble went out this morning and Returnd about noon the Cutter with 75 and the Coble with 13 fish —— little Surf on the Reef
Saterday 31st.

Moderate but Cloudy Weather —— the Coble and Cutter went out again and Return about 12 oClock the Coble with only 3 fish and the Cutter with 9 —— no Surf on the Reef —— I am affraid that the fish are leaving use

* The grand total to date is 168,577.
* The grand total to date is 170,351.
* The grand total to date is 172,184. Clark refers to the killing of mutton birds (as distinct from the Mount Pitt birds) in his letter to Kempster, p.285. Clark notes the fresh killings as commencing on 23 March 1791 (p.189).
* Ms. not clear.
* Hack is used in the sense of being partially at liberty (falconry).

AUG 1790

August Sunday 1st.

Blows fresh —— did not Send the Boats out to day —— not much Surf

Munday 2d.

Blows fresh from the N:west —— the Surf Rising

Tuesday 3rd.

Squaly and a great Sea from the S.W. —— a good dele of Surf

Wednesday 4th.
Squaly from the Southward —— about 12 oClock the whole Town was in an uproar with the News of a Ship in Sight ——
Capt. Johnstone and myself went on the top of Mount George to See if we could See her for we thought that it was all a fals
alarm but we were Soon convinced of the Truth of the Report for we Saw her a fine large Ship off Balls Bay with English
Colours flying —— I Returnd my prayers and thanks to the Almighty for delivery use from the dreadfull Situation that we have
had before use for these Some time past —— the people that were Sick with the Joy of the Ship being in Sight got out of ther
Beds and forgot there pains —— as the wind is against her and blowing fresh She will not be able to get in to this Bay to day
and the Surf is too great to Send the Boat out to her —— Captains Hunter, Johnstone and Some of the People went over to
Cascade Bay after dinner to See if they could make a Signal to her for her to Send her Boat on Shore ther to know where She
is from and if She has got any Provisions for use but how Shall I discribe the dreadful information when Capt. Johnstone
Returnd my poor pen is not able to paint the Melancholy and tremer that I was Sezed with when he informd use that he had
Stayd with Capt Hunter untill it was near dark and that they had made Signals to the Ship by fire &c. and that She was within	two miles of the Shore in Cascade Bay but that they took no notice of the Signals that they Sett there Studing Sails and went
a way to the Northward with a fair wind and that when they left Cascade Bay She was not in Sight from the highest ground
there —— oh my God what can all this be are we Still doom to Starve —— this is the most cruelest thing that ever happend to
any Set of people under heaven her appearing in Sight this Morning was to every body the Same as a reprive from death and
then to leave us I don't know what to make of it —— in Consequence of her appearing in Sight whome we flaterted ourselves was
brining use good News the Lieut Governor and Council has directed the Store Keeper to Issue half a weeks Ration of Salt
Provisions to Every Individual —— I who flaterted myself this forenoon when first I saw her that by this time I Should have had
Some letters from My belovd wife but no Such good fortune comes Yet to my lot I must wait with patience a little longer

Thursday 5th.

Much the Same weather as Yesterday —— no Ship in Sight from Mount Pit which is the highest Ground in the Island —— I
wish to God the Ship which we Saw Yesterday had never appeard in Sight for She has made every body almost dispond it has
made me almost Stupid —— the Surf gone down very much

Friday 6th.
Fine weather not much Surf but Still no Ship in Sight or any thing like a Ship —— I some times think that it was only a dream that the Ship was in Sight if there had not been more people besides myself that had Seen her I should not think other wise but that it was only a dream

Saterday 7th.

I was a waked a little after day light with the Noise of a Ship being in Sight —— I did not Remain long in bed —— after went up on the top of Mount George and Saw her a great way of to the Southward —— fine weather a little Surf —— Majr. Ross askd me when She came a little nearer in if I would goe out in the Boat and goe on Board of her and bring on Shore the despatches and the letters —— I told him I would with pleasure —— the wind being against her She did not come in much Nearer than when we first Saw her this morning —— about four oClock in the afternoon I went out in the Coble being Resolved to get on board of her if I could althought She then was not in Sight —— after I had got about two miles from the Shore in looking to the Windward I Saw a nother Ship within a few miles of us and She coming towards us Right before the Wind I order the Boat to goe for her —— a little after Sun Set I got on board of her and found her to be the Surprize of London, Captain Anstos from Port Jackson after getting [*] and Convicts for this Island and that the other Ship which was but just in Sight from the mast head of the Surprize was the Justinian Store Ship also with Provisions but no Convicts for this Island —— after getting all the letter that were on board I got into the Boat and Came Save on Shore again —— Anstos was first Mate of the Lady Penryn when he came out with us —— he was very glad to See me & I much more So him on Account of his brining use Some thing to eat —— on my Coming on Shore I gave all the letters &c. to Majr. Ross who delived them to the officers and people as the[y] were directed —— there was but very few for any body on Account that all the letters were on board of the other Ship as She had Saild from Port Jackson before the Surprize —— I hope She will be able to Send them on Shore to Morrow —— I am happy to heer that a Corps is come out for the Relief of use —— the Ship which we Saw on 4 of this month the[y] Say on board of the Surprize must be the Lady Juliana from Port Jackson bound to Chinia as the Captain of her Said that he would call here if he could —— all the harm that I wish him is that I hope that he will goe to Hell for not calling when he could with So little trouble to himself

Sunday 8th.
Fine weather and both Ships close in —— no Surf —— Sent the Boat out one to goe on board of the Justinian and the other to goe on board of the Surprize —— Sent the Boat full of Greens for the Ships —— the Boat from the Justinian Returnd Soon after with the letters and found amongst them four from my belovd wife and that She and my dear little fellow are well —— also Received one from Mr. Bar[*] —— Mr Creswell also gave me two which came inclosed in Mrs. Creswell from my Betsey —— Received also a kind letter from Kempster and one from Mr. Woolrige in Closing a letter of atory. for me to Sign at the Same time informing of the Death of Mr. Hartwell which I am very Sorry for —— I Return my Betsey a thousand thank for her Kind letters —— I find the things which I wrote for She Sent on board of the Guardian and I am affraid I Shall never be able to get them as all the private property which was on board that Ship is lost from the Accident which happend to that Ship —— the Boat Empd. in Getting what the[y] can from the Ship but not to bring any of the Convicts on Shore before there is more Provisions on Shore to give them to eat —— the letter from Mr. [*] is recommending a Mr. Murray Surgeon of the Justinian to my protection and to Show him any Sivility that may be in my powr —— I have Sent of a not for him to come on Shore to dinner which he did —— he appears to be a very Genteel young man —— Major Ross gave me a letter from Captain Campble what came inclosed from Captain Campble to him —— for the letters See the letter Book —— Captain Campble's letter is a very Kind one

Munday 9th.

Fine weather —— little Surf —— the Boats Empd. in Landing Provisions Stores &c. from the Ships

Tuesday 10th.

Much the Same weather as Yesterday —— the Ships did not come into the Bay before 10 oClock —— the Boats Empd. as Yesterday —— the Surf appears if it was going to get up

Wednesday 11th.

Blows fresh at times —— not So much Surf to prevent the Boats from going out —— Empd. as Yesterday —— the Governor has been pleased to appoint Mr. Freeman to be Depute Commissary for Norfolk Island —— as Such he Supperseeds me as
Keeper of the Public Stores and Majr. Ross has order him to be obeyd a Such and immediatly to take into his charge all the Stores & Provisions —— See the orderly Book where you will also See the Encouragment which is held out to the Non Commissioned officers and Private men of the Detachment of marines who wish to be come Settlers in this country or to incorporate themselves as Soldier in the New Raised Corps which is come out for the Service of this Colony

Thursday 12th.

Blows fresh — too much Surf to Send the Boats out with Safety —— The Ships are gone to the other Side of the Island to Cascade Bay where the[y] may lay the Same if in a Mill pond but the[y] cannot land any Provisions with Safety

Friday 13

Blows hard from the Southward —— the[y] Landed Some of People at Cascade Bay —— Captain Maitland of the Justinian came over from Cascade and Staid all night with use

Saterday 14th.

Fine clear weather & Blows hard from the Southward —— the[y] under the Land in Cascade Bay

Sunday 15th.

Fine Weather not So much wind as there was Yesterday —— a good dele of Surf on the Reef

Munday 16th.

Fine weather —— little wind and not much Surf —— the Ships came into the Bay about Seven oClock and the Boats went of to them and Brought on Shore Provisions Stores &c. and what was nearest at hand for the Island — the[y] also Brought Some men and women Convicts
Tuesday 17th.

Fine Moderate weather — the Ships came into the Bay about 8 oClock the Boats went of to them to Land the Provisions Stores people &c. — the Large cutter Beloning to the Sirius in coming on shore from the Surprize with 4 four casks of Salt Provisions Six women Convicts and a Young child beloning to one of the women Just as the Boat was coming into the passaged a Surf Struck the Boat and nearly filld her as well as forced the Boat on the Reef — the next Sea that came Struck the Boat again and She parted in the middle when every body in the Boat was floating about in the Surf in the Sight of near five hundred people within a few Yeards of use and we could give them very little assistance the Tide running too Strong — by which accident Jas. Coventry, David Bain, two Seamen beloning to the Sirius who were part of the Boats Crue, [*] Johnstone, [*] Caddy, [*] Chaffey and the child were all drowned as also Jno. Roberts a Convict who went in to assist them was also drowned — the mother of the child is one of the three women that are Saved — it was a Shocking Sight to See So many of our fellow creatures Strugling for life and we only able to give them very little Assistance and that little at the Risk of our own lives — I had my Coat of to goe in to there assistance and Should have gone if one of the Convicts had not advised me not to goe in and I am now very Glad that I did not for it is very likely but what I should have Shard the Same fate that Jno. Roberts did — the other boats have been Empd the Remainder of the day in Landing the People Provisions &c. — Mr. Murray came on Shore to Stay a few days with I must make him up a Bed on the floor

Wednesday 18th.

Fine weather little Surf — the People and Boats Empd as Yesterday getting what Provisions from the Ships that the[y] can

Thursday 19th.

Cloudy weather little Surf — the Boats Empd. as before — Punished [*] with 5 Lashes and put [*] Jones in Irons at the Grind Stone for going to Cascade without Leave and having the bed in there possesion beloning to one of the Women that Landed a Cascade last week which the Woman Said was Stole from her in the wood in the night as She was obligd to Sleep in the woods all that night that She Landed as She was not able to walk into town
Friday 20th.

Fine Moderate weather — the Boats Empd as before

Saturday 21st.

Fine Clear and Moderate weather — the Boats Empd. as Yesterday and the people Empd. in rolling the provisions up to the Store — [*] Jones that went to Cascade on wednesday night last without leave and was put in Irons for it at the Grind Stone picked the lock of the Irons last night and is gone into the woods

Sunday 22d.

Much the Same weather as Yesterday — the Ships came in to the Bay early — Sent the Boats of for Provisions and Stores — the[y] have been the Ships/most liberal Supplyd with all Kinds of Cabbage Turnips and all other Kinds of Guardin Stuf Since the[y] have been heer for ther has not a day gone past but what each Ship has had Sent them two Boats load of all Kinds of Greens &c.

Monday 23th.

Fine weather little Surf — the Boats Empd. in brining from the Ships what things the[y] have on board of the Settlement

Tuesday 24th.

Fine moderate weather — the Boats Empd. as before every thing will be out of the Ships in a day or two and they will Sail in day or two after So will begin to write my letters that I may want to Send by them

Wednesday 25th.

Fine weather and no Surf — the Ships in the Bay and the Boats have being going to and fro to them all day — Mr. Murray
and Self went out a Shooting this forenoon — he went on board after dinner and has Since come on Shore again as he promised he not been wanted on board — I like him very much — wrote a letter in answer to the one from Mr. Beveridge

**Thursday 26th.**

Moderate weather and no Surf — wrote a long letter to Geo. Kempster as also Sent him Coppies of of the different Resollutions which we enterd into for to Keep life and Soul together

**Friday 27th.**

Moderate weather little Surf — Wrote to Mr. Thos. Wolrige also inclosing the letter of Attorney which he Sent me to Sign on Account of the death of Mr. Hartwell witnessed and filld up according to desire — I am Sorry to find that the [Blight]' has taken hold of the Corn in Several places — I hope that it will not appear in more places than it has done hither to for I never Saw Corn look better than what it dose

**Saterday 28**

Fine Moderate weather little Surf — thank God we have got every thing now out of both Ships and the[y] intend to leave use to Morrow afternoon for China — Mr. Murray went on board for good this afternoon — I have Sent all my letter under his care as also a Box for my beloved woman Containing a [*] Skin, a pair of Pidgions of this Island, a Mount Pit Bird, a Mutten Bird, a Cock and Hen Robin, a quail, a white Breasted Bird all of this Island — I hope my betsey will Receive them Save — Sent also under his care a letter for Mr. Wolrige in case any Accident Should happen to the one which I sent Yesterday by the Surprize inclosing the letter of Attorney to enable him to Receive my Subsistance and to pay you my Alicia the Sum which Mr. Hartwell paid you — I wish to God that I was going with the Ships

**Sunday 29th.**

little wind — only one of the Ships in Sight the Surprize — She sent her Boat on Shore to get her Receipt and as She Believes
the Justinian is gone that She will make the Best of her way for China also — the Boat went on board a bout 12 oClock and She made Sail — I wish her a good Voyage

**Munday 30th.**

Blows fresh little Surf — the Justinian in Sight — Sent the Coble on board — She was all Yesterday becalmd which was the Reason She could not come into the Bay — She only Waits for the Return of the Coble when She will make Sail to See if She can over take the Surprize — at 11 oClock our Coble got on board of her when Soon after She made Sail and I wish them with all my heart a Save and good Voyage to China and from that to England with my dear beloved Alicia letter — Mr. Murray Sent my on Shore by the Return of the Coble a little Soap for which I am very much oblige to him for as all mine is out — I was glad when the Boat got in again for the Surf got up and it Blew hard from the S:W: which is a fair wind for the Ships

**Tuesday 31**

Blows fresh and a good dele of Surf — the people Empd. as befor the Ships arrived in clearing Ground &c. about 35 men and about the Same number of women in Cutting the flax to endeavour to bring it to perfection at Cascade Farm under a (Mr. Hume) who was Sent her in one of the Ships that came here last by the Govenour who Says that he understands it but for my own part I doe not think that it will ever answer the expectations of Goverment I am no Judge therfor cannot Say they will or they will not

* Possibly Beveridge. See entry for Sept 1st. P160 infra

* MS reads “Blith”.
SEPT 1790

September Wednesday 1st.

Blows hard and a great Surf — a fine wind for the two Ships

Thursday 2d.

Still Blows fresh and a very great Surf — it is well that we got the things out of the two Ships So Soon as we did otherwise we should not have been able to have done any thing with them for these two days past on Account of the Surf and ther being too much wind

Friday 3rd.

not much wind but a good dele of Surf — I shall look out with longing Eyes for the Gorgon Untill She comes to take me a way to every thing that is dear to me on earth

Saterday 4

little wind and little Surf — Thos. Streets one of the convicts that was out at work at Charlotte Field has left his work and gone into the wood to live with Gray and Jones the other Runaway Convicts

Sunday 5th.

Moderate Weather — little Surf

Munday 6th.
Fine calm weather little Surf — I wish that the fish were come in that the Boat might goe out and get Some for Salt Beef to
day and Salt Beef to Morrow and Salt Beef every day dose not agree with me for I have not been very well for these three
weeks past

**Tuesday 7th.**

Squaly weather — wind S:W: little Surf on the Reef

**Wednesday 8th.**

Blows fresh from the S:W: and a good dele of Surf on the Reef

**Thursday 9th.**

Clear weather with a Strong breeze from the Southward and the Surf getting up — very unwell have been taking doctors Stuff
for these Several days past and find no Relief by it

**Friday 10th.**

Moderate weather but a great Surf on the Reef — doe come good Gorgon for I wish to be a way

**Saterday 11th.**

Moderate weather the Surf going down fast — have been very ill have kept my bed all this day and am just got up — hope I
will find my self better to morrow

**Sunday 12th.**

Fine pleasant Weather — not much Surf — a little Better
Munday 13

Fine weather little Surf — the people Empd. in planting Indian Corn on the hights Round Arthurs Vale and at Charlotte Field

Tuesday 14th.

Cloudy weather has had the appearence if it would Rain all this day — little Surf

Wednesday 15th.

Cloudy dull weather — little Surf

Thursday 16th.

Clear weather & no Surf but no Gorgon — I wish to be away from this place for the place begins to be disagreeable for a great manny of my Brother officers if not all are jealous of me because I am greatly in favour with Majr. Ross — if it is So the[y] have no Occation for if I could I would not doe them an injury although manny of them would me if the[y] had it in there power but I am Concious of having al along acted like ane honest man and a man of honour to my friend and them and all this is because Majr. Ross pays more attention to me than he dose to any of the Rest

Friday 17th.

Cloudy weather — little Surf

Saterday 18th.

Moderate weather inclinable to Rain — No Surf on the Reef

Sunday 19th.
Clear weather almost a Calm — no Surf on the Reef — the Blight has got in a mongst the corn very much — the[y] will be obliged to pull up a great dele when it is Quit blasted

**Munday 20th.**

Fine Moderate Weather no wind and no Surf — the people Empd. in planting Indian Corn wher the Ground is cleard for it and the others in clearing Ground — the Women in pulling up the patches where the Blight is amongst the Corn and Replacing it with indian Corn

**Tuesday 21st.**

Fine weather with a Gentle Breeze from the Eastward — little Surf on the Reef

**Wednesday 22d.**

Cloudy and inclinable to Rain — not much Surf on the Reef

**Thursday 23rd.**

Very Cloudy with Gentle Showrs at times — no Surf on the Reef — walk to Charlotte Field

**Friday 24th.**

Blows fresh from the the S:W in Squals — the Surf getting up

**Saterday 25th.**

a Fresh Breeze from the Southward and a Great Surf on the Reef
Sunday 26

little wind and Fine Weather but a Great Surf Breaking on the Reef — not manny Sick

Munday 27th.

Fine Calm Weather — Still a Great Surf on the Reef

Tuesday 28th.

Fine Moderate weather and the Surf going down — went out a Shooting this afternoon to Charlotte Field

Wednesday 29th.

Blows fresh from the Eastward and little Surf

Thursday 30th.

Fine weather and no Surf — here is a nother month gone and no Gorgon come Yet — I hope She will be heer before the next is gone
OCT 1790

October Friday 1st.

Fine Clear weather — no Surf

Saturday 2d.

Fine weather little wind almost a Calm — no Surf on the Reef

Sunday 3rd.

Moderate weather — little or no Surf — walk out to Charlotte Field after dinner — very fey Sick

Munday 4th.

Blows Strong from the Eastward — no Surf

Tuesday 5th.

Cloudy Weather — it has been inclinable to Rain all this day — no Surf — walk out to Cascady farm

Wednesday 6th.

Squaly weather and at times Blows hard from the S:W: — the Surf getting up — Phoebe Flatterty a Female Convict Punished at Charlotte Field with 26 Lashes for coming into town from there Repeatly without Leave — She was orderd 50 but on her promise of not to doe the like again the Remainder were forgiven her
Thursday 7th.
Blows hard from the Southward and a great Surf

Friday 8th.
little wind and clear weather but a great Surf

Saturday 9th.
Moderate Weather — the wind East — the Surf going down

Sunday 10th.
Fine moderate weather — not much Surf — walk out to Charlotte Field after Breakfast and Return to dinner — [*] Price a male Convict died to day which is the first man that has died a natural on this Island

Monday 11th.
Clear weather almost a Calm — no Surf — went a Shooting after breakfast kild a fine pidgeon

Tuesday 12th.
Moderate weather little Surf — walk out to Charlotte Field after breakfast and Returnd to dinner

Wednesday 13th.
Cloudy weather and inclinable to Rain — not much Surf
Thursday 14th.

Cloudy weather and gentle Shows at times — not much Surf

Friday 15th.

Squaly weather and blows hard at times — the Surf getting up fast

Saturday 16th.

Cloudy Weather and hard Shows at times — a great Sea Rolling into the Bay with a great Surf on the Reef

Sunday 17th.

Squaly Weather — Still a great Surf on the Reef — wind S:W a good wind for the Gorgan or any thing that is coming here from Port Jackson

Monday 18th.

Fair weather wind S: — Still a very great Surf — walkd out to Charlotte Field after dinner — Serjt. Smyths Indian Corn full of the Catterpillars as also all the wheat beloning to the Crown next his Corn which they will Quite destroy

Tuesday 19th.

Fine Moderate Weather — the Surf going down

Wednesday 20

Clear Moderate Weather with little Surf — walk out to Charlotte Field after Breakfast and Returnd to dinner — Punished
Chale. White a Famele Convict for telling a Liy to the Centinell — a good looking woman but a great thief — She Received only 6 Lashes

**Thursday 21st.**

Clear Moderate weather little Surf — walked out to Charlotte Field before dinner

**Friday 22d.**

Fine Weather and no Surf

**Saterday 23rd.**

Fine weather little wind and no Surf — I wish the Fish would come in for I am Quite Sick of Salt Beef and Salt Pork I cannot eat — doe come good Gorgon

**Sunday 24th.**

Fine weather — little or no Surf

**Munday 25th.**

Cloudy Weather no Surf — a good number of the Convicts Sick Supposed from the Copper Kettles in which they dress there Meat in

**Tuesday 26**

Moderate Weather and no Surf
**Wednesday 27th.**

Cloudy weather very much inclinable to Rain to day — no Surf on the Reef

**Thursday 28th.**

Moderate weather no Surf on the Reef — I never Saw any thing like the Catter pillars so thick as the[y] are on Serjt. Smyths Corn and on the Pease and Beans beloning to Government — I am affraid that the[y] will distroy all the Corn on the Island if the[y] goe on as the[y] have done Since the 18th. of this month

**Friday 29th.**

Moderate weather and no Surf but thousands and thousands of Catter pillards the ground is Cover with them

**Saterday 30th.**

Moderate weather — not much Surf

**Sunday 31st.**

Fine moderate weather not much Surf — a nother month gone over our heads and no Gorgon — I am affraid Some thing has happend to her or She must not have left England when the Governour Says he Expected She would — if She dont come Soon it will be very late in the Season to Send use a Way from this Country
NOV 1790

Noverr. Munday 1st.

Fine weather with little Surf — the People Empd. as last month in clearing Ground &c.

Tuesday 2d.

Clear moderate weather and no Surf

Wednesday 3rd.

Cloudy weather no Surf — it Raind a little in the night — walk out to Cascady Farm before dinner

Thursday 4th.

Cloudy weather and inclinable to Rain — no Surf on the Reef — Walkd out to Charlottes Field after dinner

Friday 5th.

Moderate Weather and no Surf

Saterday 6th.

Fine Moderate weather little Surf — Sent the Boat over to Phillip Island and land my Servant and one of the Boats Crew to Endeavour to get Tropic Birds and the Remainder to goe a Fishing — She Returnd about half after twelf with 23 fish and 4 Tropic Birds
Sunday 7th.

Fine Weather and little Surf — Sent the Boat out a fishing and to Endeavour to get Birds on Phillip Island the Same as Yesterday — the Boat Returned about one oClock with 21 fish and five Tropic Birds and a Young one

Monday 8th.

Fine Weather in the Morning and little Surf — Sent the Boat out a fishing and for Birds the Same as before — She had hardly got well over to the Island when it came on to blow which obliged them to disist going on the Island and as it had the appearence if it would blow very hard the[y] made the best of ther way back and the[y] got Save in when it came on to blow very hard and the Surf Rising very fast — the[y] Brought in with them 17 fine Salmon fish which were distributed amongst the officers — by one of the Men Burning the wood of the Ground which he was clearing for a Guardin for himself at Charlottes Field the blaze caught one of the hedges/which divides the fields beloning to the Public and Private individuals ground/and distroyd a good dele of Corn — Majr. Ross begd. of me to goe out and See what damage the fire had done on which little John and I walkd out we found not So much of the Corn distroyd as Mr. Dodge had Represented to be burnt — there is about two Acres of Indian Corn burnt & by the people Exerting themselves the[y] got the fire under and prevented it doing any damage to the wheat

Tuesday 9th.

Cloudy weather and blows very hard from the N:W: the Surf going down again — Sent the Boat out — She Returnnd about half after ten with 38 Salmon fish

Wednesday 10th.

Dirty Rainy weather and has blown hard from the S:E: all this day — not much Surf on the Reef

Thursday 11th.
Blows fresh from the S:E: and a great Surf on the Reef

Friday 12th.

Clear weather blows fresh from the S:E: — not So much Surf as Yesterday — little John and I walked out to Charlotte Field to see how the[y] have worked Since I was ther last and if the[y] have planted all the Indian Corn which the[y] Received for that purpose

Saturday 13th.

Moderate weather — not much Surf — the wind got round to the Westward — hope it will bring the Gorgon for I long to know what is to be come of me if I am to goe home or if any thing will be offerd me to induce me to Remain in this Country a few Years longer

Sunday 14th.

Clear weather with a Strong Breeze from the Southward and a good dele of Surf on the Reef — after Parade Majr. Ross, Little John & I walked out to Smiths Farm from which throu the woods we intended to have gone to Balls Bay but our Guide lost his way — we Returnd back by Phillimors Farm home to dinner after a fatiguin walkd

Munday 15th.

Fine Moderate weather — the Surf going down — the people Empd. as last week in Clearing Ground &c. — Wm. Colling and Jas. McKay two Convicts were Punished with 50 Lashes each to day for advising the people to apply to have more time given them — I have been all this day Empd. in Measuring the Ground Cleard beloning to the Public round Arthurs Vale

Tuesday 16th.

Fine moderate weather — Several Gangs of the men convicts and the greatest part of the women convicts Empd. in taking up
the Potatoes beloning to the Public

**Wednesday 17th.**

Moderate weather and little Surf — the Same number of male convicts Empd. as Yesterday in taking up the potatoes as Yesterday — walked out to Charlotte Field before dinner

**Thursday 18th.**

Fine delightfull weather and no Surf — walked out to Charlotte field at day breake (and Returned back to Breakfast) and orderd Mr. Dodge to take up no more potatoes at Charlotte Field than what would Serve the people there — the people Empd. in taking up potatoes in the Vale as Yesterday — Detected two of the Convicts in the Vale in Stealing Potatoes — I orderd them to be confined and I hope they both will have a good flogging to Morrow

**Friday 19th.**

Fine weather — the Boat went out this morning to Phillip Island for Tropic Birds after which to goe a fishing — She Returnnd about 12 oClock and brought in 34 fish and the[y] were only able to get 4 Tropic Birds — the two Convicts John Howard and John Spencer who I confind for Stealing Potatoes Yesterday were Punished with 50 Lashes each to day — twelf of the women Convicts were absent from carring the Potatoes to the Potatoe House this morning — Orderd them to workd all day tomorrow as a Punishment

**Saterday 20th.**

Fine Mild weather — little Surf — Sent the Boat a fishing and to Phillip Island for Birds — She Returnnd about one oClock with 18 fish and Seven Tropic Birds

**Sunday 21st.**
Fine moderate and Pleasant Weather — Sent the Boat for Birds and Fishing — She Returnd about 12 oClock with only 4 fish and 10 Tropic Birds — no Surf

**Munday 22d.**

Moderate weather no Surf — Sent the Boat out a fishing — She came back with fish for dinner 34 — the people Employd in taking up the Potatoes and the Women in Carring them a way to the Potatoe House — Six women Sent to Phillimors Farm to Pick the Catter Pillars of from the Indian Corn — walked out to Charlotte Field before dinner to See how the[y] come on there in clearing Ground

**Tuesday 23rd.**

Fine Calm weather no Surf — Sent the Boat out a fishing this morning She Returnd about one oClock with 50 Snappers — the day has been Remarkably hott

**Wednesday 24th.**

Much the Same weather as we had Yest erday the first part of the day — in the afternoon Slight Showers — Sent the Boat out a fishing — She Returnd about 3 oClock with 3 Tropic Birds and 38 Fish — Elizabeth Colley one of the Convict women was brought to Bed of a Boy

**Thursday 25**

Very Fine Weather but it has been very warm all day — the Boat went out a fishing and brought in 49 Snappers — went out early to Charlotte Field to Measure the Ground there beloning to the Public — after Breakfast Majr. Ross and little John came out to me — after having Measurd all the Ground Majr. Ross, Mr. Dodge and my Self went to See the place where Serjt. Clayfield intended Settling as he means to Settle in the Country — after looking at the place which I dont admire we Returnd back to dinner to Charlotte Field — we dinned Under the Shade of a Tree coverd over with Vines — after walking Round all
the Field Returnd Home — no Surf on the Reef

**Friday 26th.**

Cloudy weather and inclinable to Rain — little wind and no Surf — Sent the Boat out a fishing in the Morning — She Returnnd back before dinner with 69 Snappers — She went out again after dinner to Phillip Island to See and get Some Tropic Birds — Mr. Faddy went in her — She Returnd at Sun Sett without any Birds — the[y] had all nearly been drownd for after landing the Coxwain Mr. Faddy said he would not land but would Stay in the Boat — while the Coxwain was getting up the Cliffs at the Birds the[y] put the Boat off a little way when the[y] got over a Sunking Rock a Ground Swell rose and brock right in the middle of the Boat which fild her and they all being frightend the[y] all got on one Side of the Boat which over Set her and the Next Sea that Brock turnd the Boat Bottom uppermost — the[y] Say that the Boat was over Set three times and the Sea by good fortune drove her on Shore wher the Sea throw all the people also Save — after Recovering from the terrible Situation that the[y] were in the[y] got the Boat in the water again although almost Stove to pices She brought them all Save back again —— Faddy is very fortunated that he was not drown as he cannot Swim as every body that was in the Boat at the Time may think themselves So —— Mr. Faddy lost his Gun, Great Coat and his Cap —— the Boats crue lost all there fishing lines and most all there cloaths also a disagreeable Accident happend at Charlotte Field to day in felling the Timber which I orderd to be cut down the last time I was out ther for the purpose to let more Air into the Corn a Tree fel on Henry Palmer a male Convict which nearly kild him on the Spot —— the Surgeon orderd him to be brought in as the Tree fell on his head —— the[y] have Traponded him and find that his brain is injured and that he could not live —— he died in about an hour after the Operation —— it came on to Rain about Six this Evening and from the appearance it looks if it would Rain all night —— I wish it may for it is very much wanted

**Saterday 27th.**

Fine weather no Surf —— it Raing the greatest Part of all last night —— Sent the Boat out in the Morning —— She Returned at noon with 2 Snappers —— it has been Remarkably hot all this day and at Sun Set it had the appearence if it was going to Blow and Rain
Sunday 28th.

A fine clear day although it rained and blew the greatest part of last night — too much surf to send the boat out and also too much wind in the offing — wind S:W: which is a good wind for the Gorgon if she is coming here — after breakfast walked out with Majr. Ross and little John to Charlotte Field to mark out the ground the hutts are to be build for the convicts returnd back to dinner — all the people orderd in from cascade farm to goe to Charlotte Field except seven men and all the women who are to assist Mr. Hume in the flax business — I dont for my part think the people here will be ever able to make any thing of the flax so as to make government any returns for the expense that they have already been at.

Munday 29th.

Clear weather with a fresh breeze from the southward — too much sea and surf to send the boat out — after dinner Majr. Ross and little John and Self walkd out to Charlotte Field to See how they come on there — we returnd a little before Sun Set.

Tuesday 30th.

Fine clear weather but too much surf to send the boat out — walked twice out to Charlotte Field once before and once after dinner to direct the people in building the houses and in making a road to there houses — as Majr. Ross has given me the direction of the little town which is now begun out there and the ordering of every thing which I may think necessary for that purpose I shall spend the most of my time out there — most of my mess mates seem nettled at the ordering and direction of Charlotte Field been given to me if it had been given to any of them I Should not have been Jealous of them for it but if I could have assisted any of them I would have with pleasure.
DEC 1790

December Wednesday 1st.

Fine Weather —— walked out to Charlotte Field twice the Same as Yesterday —— a child belonging to Elizabeth Pipkin died to day —— it is a good thing that it is dead poor thing for the mother took no care of it

Thursday 2d.

Fine Moderate weather but a good deal of Surf —— walked twice out to Charlotte Field

Friday 3th.

Fine weather —— almost a calm but a great Surf on the Reef —— walkd out to Charlotte Field after Breakfast to give Some directions about a Road and how fare I wish to have the Ground cleared where I intend the Houses to be Build —— after marking out the Road and the Ground for the principle Street Returnmd home to dinner —— it has been Remarkably hot to day

Saterday 4th.

Fine Calm weather not So much Surf as Yesterday —— after Breakfast Majr. Ross, John and Self walked out to Charlotte Field to see what progress I have made this last week and he is very much pleased with what I have done and told me that it is a much better place to Build a Town than the place where he intended to have Built —— I am very Glad it has met with his approbation as the frams of two of the Houses are all Ready to put to gether —— I hope I shall be able to get them and two others Ready for thatching next week —— it has been very hot again to day

Sunday 5th.
Fine Moderate weather and no Surf —— the Boat went out this morning and Returnd about 11 oClock with 64 Snappers —— walked out to Charlotte Field to give directions to Mr. Dodge what I wish the people to goe about in the Morning —— a fire Broke out about 3 oClock this afternoon in Town here in one of the Convicts Huts which Consumed it and four more Huts

Munday 6th.

Fine weather no Surf —— the Boat went out this morning a fishing and to Land my Servant and one of the Boats Crew on Nepean Island to get Gannets for the Sake of the Feathers to make me a Bed —— She Return about 11 oClock with only 11 white Fish and 50 Gannets —— walked twice out to Charlotte Field once before and once after dinner to see if the people work as I wish them —— I am much pleased with there work to day —— put a Leg Iron on Dayes a Convict Carpenter as a punishment for coming into Town from Charlotte Field without Leave —— [*] Stringer a famele convict was punished to day with 50 Lashes for leaving Smiths Farm without leave and comming in to Town to one of the Seamen —— it Blows Fresh this Evening from the Northward

Tuesday 7th.

Clear weather But blows fresh in the offening —— the Boat went out and for Gannets for the Sake of the Feathers —— She Returnd about 11 oClock with only 5 fish and 18 Gannets —— went out to Charlotte Field twice once before and once after dinner —— got one of the Fraims of one of the huts up this afternoon —— not So much wind as in the Morning —— begun cutting the wheat of Ship wreck Hill to day

Wednesday 8th.

Cloudy weather has had the appearence if it would Rain all the day —— wish it would for the Indian corn wants it very much —— has blown hard all this day from the N:E: —— thier being little Surf Sent the Boat out a fishing —— She Caught 32 Snappers —— the people Empd in Cutting the Wheat on Ship wreck Hill as also Stacking it

Thursday 9th.
Cloudy weather blows fresh from the N:E: little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing —— She Return'd at 12 oClock with 64 Snappers —— Served them to all the officers and to 50 of the Convicts —— went out twice to Charlotte Field —— Reaped the Field of Wheat out there —— found that two of the Carpenters had Neglected there work at Charlotte Field in my absence which I mentioned to Majr. Ross on my Return this afternoon who has orderd them who has orderd them to be punished with 50 Lashes Each —— have got the third House under way —— [*] Gloster Convict was punish'd with 50 Lashes for being impertinent to Mr. Roper

**Friday 10th.**

Clear weather but blows hard in the offening from the N: E: no Surf —— walked out to Charlotte Field twice —— Jno. Nowland and [*] Wisehamer the two Carpenters were punished out there for Neglecting there work —— the former Received the whole of his punishment 50 Lashes but wisehamer could only bear 8 Lashes —— the Surgeon Said that he could not bear more he fainted a way twice

**Saterday 11th.**

Cloudy weather not So much wind as Yesterday little Surf —— went out to Charlotte Field before Breakfast which I carried with me —— Returned to dinner —— nouland and wirehamer the two Convict Carp. which were punishd Yesterday for Neglect of duty have not been at work Since —— Reported them to Majr. Ross at my Return who orderd the Store Keeper to Issue only half allowance to them —— I was also much displeased with Mr. Dodge at Charlotte Field for not having all the people at work as the[y] ought —— he is one of the Kings hard bargains —— I hope that the Boat will be able to goe out to morrow for I like fish much better than Salt Beef of which Since I have been here I have I am Sure had my Share of it for Some time

**Sunday 12th.**

Fine Moderate weather little Surf —— after Breakfast Majr. Ross and little John and Self walked out to Charlotte Field to See what progress I have made Since he was last there —— he is very much pleased and likes the plan of the Houses very much ——
Munday 13th.

Fine Moderate weather little Surf — the Boat went out and Caught only 17 Snappers — have been at Charlotte Field from a little after daylight untill Sun Set — got the Fraim of the fifth house up which I have made larger than the other four — it is twenty feet long and twelve feet Broad — the other four being only fourteen feet by ten — a gang of twelve men Set to work to Endevour to make Bricks

Tuesday 14th.

Fine weather little Surf — the Boat went out this morning and Returnd with 90 odd fish mostly Snappers — went out early to Charlotte Field where I have Staid the whole day — I carried my breakfast out with me and had my dinner brought out to me which I shall have done every day that I am out there

Wednesday 15th.

Cloudy weather little Surf — the Boat went out and Caught 102 Snappers — the Cutter of the Sirius went out a Sounding — went out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returnd at Sun Set — got a Saw pit made out at Charlotte Field and Shall Send out a pair of Sawyers ther to morrow

Thursday 16th.

Moderate weather little Surf — Sent the Boat out this morning — She Returnd about 10 oClock on Account of there being to much Swell and they were affraid that the Surf was going to get up — She brought in 51 Snappers — could not goe out to Charlotte Field to day being bussey Empd in the Morning in delivering out Necessaries to the two Compy. and in the afternoon could not goe as Majr. Ross did not wish me to goe to day

Friday 17th.
Cloudy weather with a Strong Gale from the S:W: —— hope it will bring the Gorgon —— the Surf getting up fast —— went out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returned at Sun Set —— orderd Mr. Dodge to give two pounds of potatoes a pice to Sixteen of the men who have worked very hard all day and I believe the[y] have nothing to eat —— Saml. Banner a male convict left his work at Charlotte Field to day

Saterday 18th.

Cloudy weather and Showery blows hard from the S.W. a good dele of Surf —— went out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returnd to dinner —— Saml. Banner I found Still absent but on my Return to Town Majr. Ross informd me that Mr. Irvin on his Return from Seing the Sick at Charlotte Field had met with him on the Road and brought him in —— I askd Majr. Ross to permit B. Dayes to come in to Town to have his Indian corn up —— he Said that I might doe with him as I pleasd —— I might Release him out of Irons if I pleased which I have done because he has worked well ever Since he was put in to Irons —— I complaind to Majr. Ross that Jas. Elliot one of the convict Carpenters out at Charlotte Field had Shirkd his work three different times although he had been told of it every time and when Dayes Spoke to him about it he began to abuse him and would not be Quite when I orderd him —— I brought him into Town with me and told Majr. Ross who orderd him to Recieve 100 Lashes and Banner the Same number for leaving his work Yesterday and this morning —— Elliot could only bear 73 and Banner 79 Lashes when I orderd them both out to Charlotte Field

Sunday 19th.

Fine weather but blows fresh from the South West and a great dele of Surf

Munday 20th.

Moderate weather not much Surf —— walked out to Charlotte Field Soon after day break and Returned at Sun Set —— got the Eight Fraim of the Eight house up —— [*] Tuso a male Convict at Charlotte Field left his work to day and Run into the woods because I told him I would flog him for Refusing to doe what Mr. Dodge order him —— I hope he will never Return again for he is a great Rascall
Tuesday 21st.

Fine Calm weather — walked out to Charlotte Field and Returnd to dinner — no Surf — Send the Boat over to Phillip Island for Tropic Birds and to goe a fishing — She Returnd about 1 oClock with 18 Tropic Birds and 76 Snappers — Served them to the officers and the Marines

Wednesday 22d.

Fine calm weather no Surf — Sent the Boat over to Nepean Island for Gannets and a fishing — She Returned about 1 oClock with 26 Gannets and 37 Snappers — walked out to Charlotte Field after dinner — Jno. Pugh a marine Confined and put in Irons for Stealing Potatoes out of the Public Store when he was Sentinell there last night — I hope when he is Tryed which will be at Port Jackson that he will be hangd — that is all the harm that I wish him

Thursday 23rd.

Fine weather no Surf — the Boat went over to Nepean and Phillip Island for Birds and to goe a fishing — She Returned about 1 oClock with 10 Gannets 25 Tropic Bird and 37 Snappers — went out to Charlottes Field after Breakfast and Returnd at Sun Set

Friday 24th.

Squally — wind west — it Raind very hard in the night — not much Surf on the Reef — Sent the Boat out for Gannets and a fishing — She Returnd about 1/2 after Eight with only 4 Snappers — there was too much Surf Round Nepean Island for the Boat to Land with Safety for to get Birds and it Blowd too hard for them to fish — after Breakfast Majr. Ross, John and Self walked out to Charlotte Field to See what progress I have made Since his last being there — he told me that he is very much pleasd with what I have done in the manner I have planed and Built the Houses

Saterday 25th.
Fine weather but blows fresh from the Southward and a great Sea Rolling into the Bay which will make a great Surf on the Reef on which there is a great dele at present — this being Christmas day I wish a merry merry Christmas to all the world — the most poorest person in England will be better off this day than any of use here for the[y] will be able to get Small bier with their dinner to drink if nothing better and there is not any of use will have anything better but cool water this will be a dry Christmas — doe good Gorgon come and take use away from this place

**Sunday 26th.**

Fine weather little wind but a great Surf on the Reef — I wish to god the Gorgon would arrive every day is an age I am afraid Some Accident has happend to her — [*] Touso who left his work on the 20 Inst at Charlotte for my telling him that I would flog him for being impertinent to Mr. Dodge gave himself up last night to Mr. Hume at Cascade from whence he was brought last night and put in Irons

**Munday 27th.**

Fine weather — Blows fresh in the offening wind a Southing by west — a good dele of Surf on the Reef — walked out to Charlotte Field at day break Staid untill Sun Set — Majr. Ross Sent out [*] Touso to be Punished which he was and Received 100 Lashes and to work in Irons on the Road untill further orders

**Tuesday 28**

Cloudy weather and blows hard from the East — a good dele of Surf on the Reef — walked out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returnd at Sun Set — got the fram of of the tenth House up

**Wednesday 29th.**

Fine weather — walked out to Charlotte Field at day break Returnd back to dinner — Set the Carpenters in Building a Bridge across the Run of water — Returned back to dinner — Empd. this afternoon in getting the Quarterly Accounts Ready for
Signing — wind East and a little Surf

**Thursday 30th.**

Fine weather and no Surf — Sent the Boat out — walkd out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returned Untill Sun Set — directing the Carpenters how I wish the Bridge to be Build — the Boat Returnd about 12 oClock with 77 Snappers which were Servd out to the Marines and to the Seamen

**Friday 31st.**

Fine Weather no Surf — Sent the Boat over to Nepean Island to Endeavour to get Some Gannets for the Feathers — the Surf was to great at the Island the Boat could not land with Safety on which the[y] went a way to the West side of the Island a fishing — the[y] Caught 70 odd Snappers which were Servd out to the Seamen Marines &c. — walked out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returnd at Sun Set — if I had not Volluntiered this I Should have been dead I believe with lowness of Spirits — this is the last day of the Year 1790 I trust in God the Year 1791 will be a more fortunate one than 89 or 90 have been — in the Year 89 I lost all my things in the Guardian and in this Year I lost all my things in the Sirius — I Should forget it all if the Gorgon would come and take me home to my beloved family for I realy wish to be with them I have been too long a way from them
JAN 1971

Jany. 1791 Saterday 1st.

Many happy Returns of the day to all my friends here — we have now enterd into the Year 91 and no Gorgon — good God what is become of her I hope She has not Run against ane Island of Ise like the Guardian I wish to God that She was come or Some other good Ship to Carry use a way — it has been fine moderate weather all this day but the little wind that there is is from the Eastward which is against any think coming to this place — Majr. Ross orderd Mary Nash a famele convict out at Charlotte Field both Legs in Irons on my Representing to him that all the people Say that She is the person they Believe that Steal all ther things and goes into town to Sell them to the Seamen — She is big with child otherwise Should have floggd her Yesterday for She is a D . . . . B . . . .

Sunday 2d.

Fine Moderate weather — the Boat went out a fishing ther being no Surf — She Returnnd a bout 12 oClock with 75 Snappers which I Served out to the officers and to Some of the Convicts particular to them that behave well and that work well — Majr. Ross, John and my Self walkd out to Charlotte Field and is much pleased with what I have done — Creswell informd me this morning that Mr. Bryon and Shortland had Some words a few days back Respecting a Convict H . . . . when Mr. Shortland told Mr. Bryon that he was a damned Rascal and a Scoundrall which Mr. Bryon has not taking any notice of he being a distant Relation of Mrs. Ross I told Majr. Ross of it that he would not ask Mr. Bryon to dine any more with use nor bring him amongst us for Suffering himself to be treated in the manner he was and not take any notice of it by calling Mr. Shortland to ane Account — Majr. Ross Said he certainly would not and Should Send to him to desire him not to come near him as the above was Reported of his permitting Mr. Shortland to treat him which Majr. Ross did in the afternoon

Tuesday 25th.
Fine Moderate weather no Surf — the Boat went out and brought in 105 fine Snappers — walkd out to Charlotte Field at day break and gave orders for a Jail to be built which is a thing that is much wanted to Confine them the misbehaviour in it — I also gave orders for a pair of Stocks to be made at the Jail door and a neck coller for the Ladies for I never came a Cross Such a Sett of D . . . . . B . . . . . in my life — they make me Curs and Swer my Soul out — I shall order them to be locked up in the Jail every night that misbehaviour when the Jail is finishd — Oatway Ingle Received 21 Lashes being part of the Remainder of his punishment which he could not bear more on the 17th. Instant — Returnd from Charlotte Field at Sun Sett — it has been Remarkable hot to day

**Wednesday 26th.**

Fine weather no Surf — Sent the Boat out and She brought in [*] Snappers — Walked out to Charlotte Field at drum beating in the morning and Returnd to dinner — very warm to day — when will the Gorgon come I long much to what is to become of use and to know if I am to get any thing in this new Corps to induce me to Quite the Marines and to Remain in this Country — John Clayton one of the Marines out at Charlotte went out to day to get Some wood Cabbages in coming down the tree he fell with his back Side on a Stump which Run up his back Side a great way and has tore him very much — he must have walkd in great pain as he was above a Mile from Charlotte Field when he fell from the Tree

**Thursday 27th.**

Fine weather little wind from the Eastward no Surf — Sent the Boat out — She Caught 52 Snappers — went out to Charlotte Field at Revelly Beating and Returned a little after Sun Set — got the Fraim of the Jail up Yesterday afternoon — this day three Years we came into P. Jackson harbour with the fleet from B. Bay

**Friday 28th.**

Fine Moderate weather very little wind and no Surf — Sent the Boat out to Phillip Island for Tropic Birds and to goe a fishing — She brought in 21 Tropic Birds and 50 odd Snappers — has been very warm all this day — Since noon there has a little Breeze Sprung up from the Westward hope to God it will bring Some thing to take use a way or to tell use that we are not to be
Relieved this Year which will be better than been in this Suspence — I hope if So the Supply will be the Ship that brings use the Account that we are not to be Relieved this Year for from her we will be able to get Some Tea and Sugar if we dont get any thing else for I have not nor has Majr. Ross drunk a dish of tea or drunk a Glass of wine these Six months — our Breakfast is dry bread and Coffy made from burnt wheat and we are glad even to be able to get that — God help use I hope we will Soon See better days Soon for the[y] cannot well be Worse

Saterday 29th.

Blows Fresh from the S:W and the first part of the day Squaly — a Fine wind for anything that is coming to this Island from Port Jackson — a Great Surf got up Since this Morning — Yesterday afternoon Jno. Robins a Convict went to the N:E: part of the Island with Some of the Seamen beloning to the Sirius a fishing when endeavouring to get from one rock to another he fell into the Sea and went down like a Stone and was unfortunately drown — the people could give him no Assistance for the[y] never Saw him after he Slit into the Water — he was a very good Quite man he is one of Plymouth old Town — George Guest a Convict was Punished with 50 Lashes for telling a liy to Majr. Ross

Sunday 30th.

Blows hard from the S:W: and a very great Surf on the Reef — the first part of the day fine cool and the latter part Squaly — I hope this wind will bring the Gorgon here

Munday 31st.

Fine weather — not So much Surf as Yesterday but Still a very great Surf — the wind got Round to its old Quarter again to the Eastward which is against any thing coming from Port Jackson to this Island as we have from no other place anything to expect — Jas. Robinson (Convict) the Coxwin of the Coble was punished with 50 Lashes for disobediance of orders by killing Pidgeons which are not permitted to be kild but by the people who the Surgeon thinks are in want of them to make them a little Soup as the[y] are the only fresh thing that will make a little weak Soup for the Sick and if every body was at liberty to kill them when the[y] thought proper ther would Soon not be a pidgeon left on the Island her — this is a nother month gone over our head
neither Gorgon nor anything else from port Jackson — Surly Some Accident must have happened to her and I begin to give the
Supply over also for She has had time to be back from Batavia long before this — I hope that She is not lost I Should be very
Sorry for it if She is

* P.222 of the manuscript ends (possibly) with the entry of Sunday 2 January 1791. P.223 starts with Tuesday 25 January 1791. There appears to
be no excision in the bound pages; there may have been in the actual journal. Alternatively but unlikely — Clark may have missed entering up
from 3 January to 24 January.
FEB 1791

February Tuesday 1st.

Fine weather — the wind Still East and blows in the offening — the Surf gone down greatly — have been at Charlotte Field Since day break and am Just Returned — Orderd a Fraim of Mr. Wentworths house to be begun

Wednesday 2d.

Fine weather — not much Surf on the Reef but blows hard in the offening — the Seamen Empd. in Getting on Shore the Guns &c. from the wreck of the Sirius — the[y] Could not get any on Shore to day will I believe make another attempt tomorrow — have been at Charlotte Field from drum beating in the Morning Untill Sun Set

Thursday 3th.

Many happy Returns of the day to my B . . . . . A . . . . — a Fine cool day very Cloudy hope it will Rain as the Ground wants it very much — the Coble went out a fishing and brought in only 18 Snappers — no Surf —— have been at Charlotte Field from day break until Sun Set —— a Proclamation came out Respecting the killing of Sows Pigs &c. for which See the Council Book

Friday 4th.

Fine weather but has been Remarkably hott —— not much Surf —— Sent the Boat out and the[y] Caught 43 Snappers —— Mary Long a Convict Woman Punished with [*] Lashes for a busing and Stricking a nother Convict Woman big with Child —— Long is a most abandoned woman as is on the Island

Saterday 5
Fine showry weather no surf —— the boat went out a fishing in the morning and brought in 31 snappers —— Majr. Ross sent Mr. Morley over to Phillip island this afternoon to see if there is any water on the island ther and to keep the boat and the boats crew all night —— walked out to Charlotte Field after breakfast and returned to dinner

Sunday 6th.

Fine weather little wind and in the morning little surf —— about seven o’clock the whole place was in an uproar with the cry of a ship in sight —— about eight o’clock could see her very plain which we all thought that it was the gorgon but when she came a little nearer saw that it was the supply brig —— Mr. Bradley went on board of her to bring the letters &c. on shore but soon after the boat got out the surf got up so much as to oblige use to hauld the signal down to tell the boat that she must remain on board of the brig for the surf was so great that she could not come in again —— hope the boat that went to the island and people are save —— I have been quite on the rack all day to know if the gorgon is at port jackson or if we are to remain any longer here —— I hope we will be able to get a boat from her to morrow although there is a terrible surf now on the reef and a great sea in the bay —— I suppose she will carry away the seamen of the sirius and hope she has brought use also some tea and sugar as I have not tasted a dish of tea these six months —— I hope also that Capt. Campble has purchased me some linen to make shirts and some nankeen for breeches both of which I am very much in want of

Munday 7

Fine weather and the supply in sight not so much surf as yesterday —— the boat from the island returned soon after the boat from the supply brought the dispatches for majr. Ross acquainting use that the gorgon was not yet arrived at port jackson and that she came to take captain hunter and all the seamen except such as wished to remain as settlers on the island —— I am very glad that the seamen are going away but I would much rather that we had being going also —— received a letter from Mr. Waterhouse enclosing my letters which I gave him last march on the supply returning to port jackson after the loss of the sirius to get sent to england by the first ship that went from port jackson —— if he was not going himself he acquainted me that he gave my two letters to Mr. Favell on the supplies going to batavia and that Mr. Favell being sick he must have forget them for after his death they were found amongst his things —— I am very sorry that the[y] did not goe home as the[y] would have being in england long before this —— empd in getting on shore from the supply the stoars &c for the
Island from her and Sending the Baggage belonging to Capt. Hunter officers and Seamen that are going to Port Jackson on board

**Tuesday 8th.**

Fine weather no Surf —— the Boat Empd. in bringing from and carrying on board thing from the Supply —— She has brought nothing for me

**Wednesday 9th.**

Very fine weather no Surf —— the Boat Empd. as Yesterday —— walked out to Charlotte Field with Mr. Callam —— after dinner wrot a long letter to Captain Campbell desiring he would Send me Something for which See the letter Book

**Thursday 10th.**

Remarkably fine weather no Surf —— the Boats Empd. as before —— She will be able to Sail to morrow as every thing is out of her and all the things that are going in her back are on board Except the Seamen who will Embark to Morrow She now only waits for Majr. Ross's letters

**Friday 11th.**

Fine moderate weather no Surf and very little wind —— Captain Hunter and all the Seamen Embarck —— wrote a nother letter to Capt. Campbell in addition to the one I sent yesterday See the letter Book —— Carried Majr. Ross's despatchess for the Governor on board of the Supply who Soon after made the Best of her way back to Port Jackson —— John Johnstone has also gone in the Supply by Majr. Ross's permission for the Recovery of his health which I think he never will Regain again —— I wish them all a good passaged and hope to See the Supply Soon back again with the news of the arrival of the Gorgon for to take use home

**Saterday 12th.**
Fine weather no Surf nor the Supply in Sight —— Sent the Boat out a fishing and land on Phillip Island to get tropic Birds —— She Returned about 12 oClock with 53 Snappers and after the people had there dinner the Boat went back to the Island to fetch my Servant and the Coxwain who was left ther to Catch the Birds —— the Boat Returned about 4 oClock with 69 Tropic Birds

**Sunday 13th.**

Fine weather little wind and little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing —— She Returnd about 10 oClock with 12 fish —— wind west which is against the Supply

**Munday 14th.**

Squaly most of this day and the Surf getting up —— after Breakfast walked out to Charlotte Field and found that there has been near two thousand Cobbs of Corn Stole out of the fields Since I was last throu them —— puld about 800 Cobbs which are ripe and Sent them in heer —— Returned to Tea

**Tuesday 15th.**

Fine weather a great Surf —— it has been Remarkably hott to day —— after Breakfast went out to Charlotte Field and got about five Thousand Ripe Cobbs of Indian Corn puld and Sent into Town —— Returned back to Tea —— Elizh. Breeze a notorious thief was Punished to day with 75 Lashes for killing and Stealing a hen beloning to Edwd. Goff —— [*] Vinry male Convict Punished with 100 Lash es for Stealing [*] Cobbs of Indian Corn —— Jno. Hudson a Convict Boy Punished with 50 Lashes for been out of his hutt after nine oClock

**Wednesday 16th.**

Fine weather a great Surf on the Reef —— walked out to Charlotte Field at day light and Returnd to dinner —— Sent in from Charlotte Field one thousand and fifty Cobbs of Indian Corn which is all that is Ripe there as Yet
Thursday 17th.

Fine weather Still a great Surf on the Reef —— walkd out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returnd at Sun Set —— John Copper alias Thomas a Convict has Run away into the woods this afternoon on Account of the Rest of the Convicts Accusing him with being the person that has Stole the Indian Corn out of the Fields at Charlotte Field —— I hope that he never will come back again for he is a great Rascal —— ane order came out Respecting ane patrol being orderd to watch at night for which See the Orderly Book —— it has been Remarkably hott to day —— little wind but that is fair for the Supply getting to Port Jackson hope She Soon will Return

Friday 18th.

Fine Weather but a great Surf on the Reef —— Jno. Copper put in Irons at Charlotte Field untill he can be Sent to Nepean Island wher Majr. Ross intend to Send him and a few more of the Suspicious persons as Soon as he can Send Water over ther

Saterday 19th.

Fine weather —— Still to much Surf on the Reef for the Boat to goe out —— it has been Remarkably hot all day

Sunday 20th.

Squaly weather and has blown hard from the Southward all this day —— it Raind in the first part of the day most all the time, in the afternoon it turned out a very fine —— Majr. Ross, little John and Self walked out to Charlotte Field and Return to Tea —— Majr. Ross is very much pleased with what I have been doing Since he was out last there

Munday 21st.

Fine weather but Remarkably hot —— the Surf gone down very much —— walked out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returnd at Sun Set —— Heny. Lovell Convict was Punished with [*] Lashes for telling a palpable lye
Tuesday 22d.

very fine weather to much Surf Still to Send the Boat out —— walked out to Charlotte Field about five oClock and Returnd at Sun Set —— got the Fraim of Mr. Wentworths House up —— hope that it will be Soon finished for him to get into it as it is very disagreable for him to be obliged to walk out ther every day to See the Sick —— got all the working women out from her to Charlotte to assist the women there to carry flax for thatching the Houses

Wednesday 23d.

Fine weather not much Surf —— hope the Boat will be able to goe out to morrow if the weather is fine —— have been at Charlotte Field Since day break untill Sun Set —— all the working women out ther the Same as Yesterday

Thursday 24th.

ever very fine weather no Surf —— Sent the Boat out —— She Returnd to dinner with 95 Snappers which were divided amonst the officers Marines and Convicts as fare as the[y] would goe —— Majr. Ross Sent out 44 of them to me at Charlotte Field to divide them amongst the people out there as I thought proper —— have been at Charlotte Field all day

Friday 25

Remarkably fine weather no Surf —— Sent the Boat out to Phillip Island to Land the Coxwin, my Servant and five Marines for the purpose to Collect Tropic Birds for the Sake of there feathers and the Boat to goe a fishing —— the Boat Returnd about 11 oClock with 85 Snappers and after the Boats Crue had got ther dinner Sent her over for the people on the Island —— She Returned about Six oClock with all the people 165 Tropic Birds and 28 Snappers which were given to the people that went for Birds and the Boats Crue —— the Commissary Served Cloaths out to the Women Beloning to Charlotte Field and Cascade which the poor devils the[y] very much wanted for some of them had not So much peticoat as would cover ther commical cuck —— the Slops that was issu ed out to them was as much of Lancaster Shirting as would make them a Shift —— as much [*] as will make each two peticoats as much [*] as will make a Jacket —— Six Skein of thread a Thimble a few needles and a pair of
Scissors —— now the[y] have got two things of a Sort for the[y] have only one Shift and one Jacket —— Poor Soul the[y] want things bad a nuf god knows

**Saterday 26th.**

very fine weather no Surf —— Sent the Boat out as yesterday —— She Returnnd to dinner with 53 Snappers which were Served out to the officer and to the detachment —— She went after the Boats Crue had ther dinner for the people on the Island and Returned with 32 Snappers and 90 Tropic Birds

**Sunday 27th.**

very fine Moderate weather no Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing —— She Returned about 11 oClock with 51 Snappers which after Serving all the officers Served the Remainder out amongst the Carpenters Sawyers &c —— the Commy. Served out Slops the Same as on friday to the women in here —— very hot to day

**Munday 28**

Fine Weather little wind and little Surf —— Sent the Boat out a fishing —— She Returned with 78 Snappers which were Served out to the officers of the Detachment Settlement & non Commd officers overseers &c. —— went out to Charlotte Field a little after drum beating where I Staid untill Sun Set —— Empd. mostly in Measuring the cleard ground belonging to the Convicts
MAR 1791

March Tuesday 1st.

very Moderate weather no Surf —— [it] has been Remarkably [hot] all this day* —— Sent the Boat out for Birds and a fishing —— She Returnd about 12 oClock with only 9 Snappers and Eight Tropic Birds —— the[y] were obliged to come back the[y] were affraid that the Surf was going to get up —— have been at Charlotte Field the greatest part of this day

Wednesday 2d.

cloudy weather little wind not much Surf on the Reef —— Sent the Boat out a fishing —— She Returned about 12 oClock with [*] Snappers which were Served out to the officers &c. —— walked out to Charlotte Field at day break and Returned from there at Sun Set

Thursday 3d.

Cloudy weather and blows very hard from the S:E: a good dele of Surf on the Reef —— walked out to Charlotte Field at day break —— Majr. Ross walked out to See me after dinner with whom I Returnd home at Sun Set —— he is very much pleased with what I have been doing Since his been out there last —— Empd. all the people out there to day the Carpenters excepted (who are putting the Logs round Mr. Wentworths house) in making the Road wider the women Empd. in gathering the Corn —— Sent in from there Six thousand four hundred Cobbs of Indian Corn —— [*] Hill Convict was Punished with 100 Lashes for Carrying away the Kings Stores

Friday 4

Fine weather but Blows hard from the Eastward —— no Surf on the Reef
**Saturday 5th.**

Fine moderate weather and not much Surf —— a nother attemp made on the Store last night but from the Vigilance of the Sentinel the[y] were prevented from breaking in —— the[y] got of but left three Flour bags behind —— all the people were musterd and order to look at the Bags to See if they know them when two of the women owned them Said that they had lent them to Gualt Mr. Freemans Servant when Majr. Ross order him in irons when Soon after he confessed that the[y] had been lent to him which he at first denied and Said that Strong a nother Convict that works in Mr. Freemans Guardian had borowed them from him Yesterday morning and that he was the person who had attempted to break open the Store last night and last Saterday night when Strong was also order into Irons —— there attempting to break the Store will not hang them but I hope Majr. Ross will give them a hearty floggen —— ther was Some body else but the[y] will not inform who the[y] were —— wind to the West point this afternoon

**Sunday 6th.**

Squaly weather and blows hard from the westward not much Surf on the Reef —— a fine afternoon and warm out of the wind —— Cut four Bunches of greaps to day which are the first that were ever cut in this Island —— in a few Years the[y] will be able to make very good wine for greaps thrive very well her as the[y] doe also at Port Jackson

**Munday 7th.**

very fine moderate weather but to much Surf to Send the Boat out —— have been at Charlotte Field Since a little after day light — John Gualt and [*] Strong were Punished with one hundred lashes each for attempting to break open the Public Store — when there backs are well the[y] are each to Receive two hundred lashes more one hundred at Charlotte Field and the other at Cascady — the People Empd at Charlotte Field as before

**Tuesday 8th.**

Fine Moderate weather but a good dele of Surf —— have been at Charlotte Field Since day break untill Sun Set
Wednesday 9th.

Cloudy and Sultry weather not much Surf — walkd out to Charlotte Field a little after day break and Returnd at Sun Set — This day four Years I embarkd on board of the Friendship for New South Wales

Thursday 10th.

Thick Squaly weather the most of the day little Surf on the Reef — Sent Boat out a fishing — She Returned with the Fish to dinner 50 Snappers — all the Men Convicts in Town Empd. in making a Road a cross the Swamp which has been much wanted from the manner that the[y] are going on it will be a good one — got all the Women Convicts out of Town to Charlotte Field to bring flax from the Sea Shore for to thatch the Houses out there — got 30 pair of womans Shoes out of the Store for the Most deserving of the woman out ther

Friday 11th.

Fine moderate weather the first part of the day the latter Cloudy and blows hard from the N.W. — Sent the Boat out — She Returned about 11 oClock with [*] Snappers which were Served out to the Marines and to the Convicts who are at work in making the Road a Cross the Swamp — not much Surf

Saturday 12th.

Squaly weather it Raind Very hard in the night — a fine day — I wish that the Rain had continued longer for it is much wanted — it blows very hard from the S:E: not much Surf — Served the Convicts Indian Corn three pound of Indian Corn for two pound of flour — Mary Sprigmore a Convict woman was deliverd of a Girl today

Sunday 13th.

Fair weather and not much Surf — I have been a twelf month on this Island to da y — I hope I Shall not be a nother 12 month in misery
Munday 14th.

Squaly weather — walked out to Charlotte Field and Returnd back to dinner

Tuesday 15th.

Squaly weather with Rain at times blows hard from the Northward little Surf — it has been very Close today — have been at Charlotte Field all day

Wednesday 16th.

First part of the day Squaly — Blows hard from the N.W. — little Surf — have been at Charlotte Field all day

Thursday 17th.

Fine weather Squaly the latter part of the day — walked out to Charlotte Field — L: Deyer Convict Carpenter was punished with 75 Lashes for Stricking James Rulby Marine — he ought have Received a 150 but he could not bear any more — he Richly deserved it for I told Deyer that he was not to goe into the house as I had placed Rulby Centinel at the dore to prevent any body going into the House and he would goe in and when Rulby was preventing him he Struck Rulby which I could not forgive that of a Damed Rascal of a Convict to Strick a Soldier — as Such I told Majr. Ross last night on my Return from Charlotte Field who Sent Creswell out to enquire into it and to See him Deyer punished if it was I had Represented to Majr. Ross which Creswell found it was — the Surgeon order Deyer into Town — walked into dinner with Creswell and after dinner went again out to Charlotte Field and Returned to Tea — this is St. Patricks day a poor Patricks day for the Irishmen that are here the[y] have nothing to drink

Friday 18th.

it has blown a hard gale of wind all this last night from the N:W: and it has blown very hard all this day from the WS:W: with Rain at times the Surf is getting up fast — Walked out to Charlotte Field after Breakfast and Returned to dinner
**Saterday 19th.**

Blows very hard in Squals all this day and a great Surf — this day twelf months the Sirius run on Shore — a most unfortunated day for me for I lost all my things by her

**Sunday 20th.**

much the Same weather as Yesterday but it has been very cold all this day

**Munday 21st.**

Fine weather but a great Surf — have been at Charlotte Field all day

**Tuesday 22d.**

Cloudy weather the Surf gone down for there were Several Showrs in the Night — have been at Charlotte Field all day

**Wednesday 23**

Fine weather not to hot — it Raind the greatest part of all last night — walked out to Charlotte Field a little before day light — Jas. Morrell and Jas. Grace two of the Convicts went to Mount Pit to See if the Birds were come in — the[y] were taking Prisoners by the Patrole and when I came out Mr. Doidge Reported them to me when I order them to work and tooke the Birds from them /the[y] got 23/ and gave the Birds to the Patrole &c. and acquainted Majr. Ross with it that the Birds were Returned to the Mount again who Sent me out word to desire Mr. Doidge would lett Some men goe there every night to get Birds for them selves and that he would Stop Salt Provisions in lieu of the Birds

**Thursday 24th.**

Fine weather but blows hard from the Eastward — a Court Martial Sat to day for the Trial of Geo. Plyer for contempt and
disobedience of orders to Capt. Johnstone of which Court I was a Member — he was sentenced to Receive 150 Lashes — walked out to Charlotte Field after the Court Martial was over and Returned to Tea — Birds brought in last night by the Marines [*] by Convicts [*]

Friday 25

Squaly weather and blows very hard — the Sentence of the Court Martial held Yesterday was carried into Execution and he Received the whole of his Sentence — a good deal of Surf — Birds brought in last night M [*] C [*] the people Say that the[y] See no difference in the Birds that the[y] are as numerous as ever

Saterday 26th.

Cloudy weather and blows very hard from the Eastward and the Surf getting up very fast — Geo. Bannister punishd with 50 Lashes for theft and Sarah Lyons Punished with 25 Lashes for Stricking and ill using Chat. White the[y] both belong to Charlotte Field — the woman is a D . . . . B . . . . . . — Birds brought in last night and to night by M [*] by C [*]

Sunday 27th.

Cloudy weather and Still Blows very hard from the Eastward — a Great Surf

Munday 28th.

Cloudy weather with a fresh Breeze from the Eastward — a good deal of Surf on the Reef — Punished Chas. Illid one of the Convict Carpenters for Stealing Scantling from the Hospital with 50 Lashes — have been at Charlotte Field all day

Tuesday 29th.

Fine weather — little wind and that from the Eastward but a great Surf — been at Char. Field all day
**Wednesday 30th.**

Fine moderate weather but a great Surf — this is my Birth day — walked out to Charlotte Field Returned to dinner as Majr. Ross wished it and that he would come and Meet me which he did

**Thursday 31st.**

Fine Moderate weather but a great Surf — Walked out to Charlotte Field at day light and Returned to Tea — Geo. Johnstone and Creswell came out to See how I goe on — Creswell I doe not like because he don't wish me well he would give a good dele that he had never Seen me or that I had not come on this Expedition for he thinks that I am a Damd thorn in his way as he thinks that I will get Some thing by my Volunteering this bussiness of building a Town out at Charlotte Field — I am Certain that he would doe me all injury in his power but I am awair of him from information that has been given me that he will if he can — therfor I will take care of him — I dont care how much he grins but by God he must not attemp to bite for if he dose this world will be to Small for both of use to live in and that I believe he knows or he would have Shown his Teeth more than what he has done

* MS reads: “is has been Remarkably all this day”. 
APR 1791

April Friday 1st.

Fine weather — Wind East and a great Surf on the Reef — the people that went to Mount Pit for Birds last night Say that the [y] are Remarkably plenty

Saturday 2d.

Fine Moderate weather little wind and that from the Eastward — not So much Surf as Yesterday but Still a very great one — [*] Harris Convict that went a way from Charlotte Field Yesterday week Mr. Doidge went to Mount Pit last night and took him there and has brought him in — Majr. Ross has orderd him to be Chained to the Black Smiths forge and only to have half allowance — he is a Cursed Lazey fellow that will neather work for the Crown nor himself — I hope that I Shall not be plaged any more with him out at Charlotte Field

Sunday 3

Moderate weather and not much Surf — wind East

Munday 4th.

Fine weather and little Surf but blows fresh in the offening from the Eastward — have been at Charlotte Field all this day — Jno. Duvalt* Received the Remainder of his punishment (for attempting to break into the Public Store on the Night of the 4 of last month) at Cascade this day 70 Lashes

Tuesday 5th.
Fine weather and little Surf but blows fresh out from the N:E: — the four Convict women were Punished for Refusing to doe what ther overseer orderd them Viz Rachl. Early with 10 Lashes Ann Carty with 10 Lashes Hannah Hawkings with 25 Lashes [*] Meridith with 25 Lashes — the first is the Most abandond woman that I ever know or herd of — have been at Charlotte Field all this day

**Wednesday 6th.**

Cloudy weather and not much Surf — wind East — been at Charlotte Field all this day

**Thursday 7th.**

Fine weather and little Surf — wind east — got Mr. Wentworths House So Fare finished that he may goe into it tomorrow if Majr. Ross thinks proper

**Friday 8th.**

Fine weather — not much Surf but blows fresh out from the Eastward

**Saterday 9th.**

Fine weather not much Surf but blows hard in the offening from the Eastward — [*] Strong who was concerned with Duvalt in attempting to Break into the Public Store on the night of the 4 of last month was Punished at Charlotte Field with 100 Lashes which he was orderd to Receive out ther as ane Example to the People out ther being the Remainder of What he was orderd — this being the day according to the orders &c. of the [*] January last for Stopping two pounds of flour from every male Convict and the Store not admitting of more than three fourths of the full allowance of Flour and Salt provisions to be issued to the Cival and Military on this Island Majr. Ross order no more than three fourths of the full allowance to be Issued — the Marines Refused to take there provisions from the Store Keeper alledgin that the Convicts were better off than they were one there Six pounds of Flour for the[y] had Gardians which the[y] had not and that they were obliged to pay for greens to the Convicts two
pounds of flour a week or goe without greens — the[y] then were asked whose falt it was that the[y] had not Guardians — the[y] made manny idle and Vague excuses but the[y] would not take there Ration — what they wanted and which I believe to be the truth was that they were trying who Shoud be Master Majr. Ross or them as the[y] wanted Majr. Ross to Recall the order which he Issued out but Much to the Credit of Majr. Ross as an officer is a thing he would not doe — he Sent Captain Johnstone to the Men again to tell them that he would not be sending to them any more to know why the[y] would not take there provisions but would take other measures with them and desird Capt. Johnstone to goe down and call the Role of the two Companies and inform them that he (Capt. Johnstone) would march them to the Store House and See which man would dare to Refuse to take his Rations — Capt. Johnstone Returnd to Majr. Ross and informd him that he had told the Men what he had desird him to Say and had orderd the men not to be out of there Barracks for that half after one he Should March them to the Store house and then See if they would Refuse to take there provisions and that more than two thirds of the Men would take there provisions — Majr. Ross informd Capt. Johnstone that when he Marchd the Men to the Store House that he Should take that opportunity to disarm them for Such men were not to be trusted with arms which Capt. Johnstone and myself agreed in — at half after one Capt Johnstone, Creswell, Faddy and myself went down to the Barrack Yard to March the Men to the Store when Capt Johnstone orderd the Men to get there Bags &c. to get there provisions in when Some of the Men Joseph Lewis and Some others came up and Spoke to Capt Johnstone and Said that the[y] would goe and take there provisions and would not give him ore anybody any further trouble and were Sorry they had given So much which I was very Glad to find for ane hour before this I did not think it would have been So well Settled without a great dele of Blood — this day has been near one of the most Critical days in my life never was Club Law near taking place in any part of the World than it was in this — I wish that we were fairly away from this Island for I am affraid if we Stay much longer we will not get away without a great dele of Bloodshed for our men here are the Most Mutinous Set I ever was amongst and are ripe for rising against any Authority — the principals amongst them are Thomas Tynon, Andw. Fisbourn, Francis Mee, John Baily, John Roberts, Elias Bishop and William Simms — the[y] were the principal Speakers particular the four first — I wish that I was only despotic for three hours I would hang the above Seven and then make the Rest draw lots for every fift man and I would hang them also weather the[y] had any hand with the other or not but because the[y] keep Such bad Company or they Should hang me

**Sunday 10th.**
Fine weather and little Surf but blows hard from the East — Majr. Ross sent for Jno. Ascott who had been his Servant a few days since but had parted with him on account of his Running after the women and askd him what the Men intended doing Yesterday if he had not taking there provisions — he Said that he did not no but that the men had looked very cool on him Since Yesterday because he was the first man that Said he would take his provisions So much So that he asked all the men in the Barrack to lend him a knife and none of them would that Francis Mee Said that Marching Regiment Should Stick together when I made Answer (Ascott) and there officers Should also —— Majr. Ross Sent for Joseph Ratford and askd him if he knew what the men intended to doe if the[y] had not taking there provisions —— he Said that he was not amongst the men exept when Capt. Johnstone orderd the Companies to fall in that thought then as he dose now that the men were wrong for he did not Expect to be so long on full allowance as he has been for he did not think the Store could have afforded to have given full allowance So long as it has done —— I askd Henry Parsons to day what they intended doing if the[y] had not taking there provisions as the[y] had —— Parsons made me (Ratford) for answer that we Should have gone to the Store and demanded our full allowance of the Store Keeper and if he would not have given use, it Should have taking what was offerd use but Should done nothing more which is what I learn from Parsons

**Tuesday 12**

Yesterday it was very fine weather as well as it has been to day —— walked out to Charlotte Field Yesterday after breakfast where I Staid all night for the purpose of Going to Mount Pit to See the Birds come in at Sun Sett —— about 1/2 after four I went with Serjt. Clayfield and two of the convicts with Torchess to Light use home —— we got to the mount about five oClock we had not been there above ten Minutes before the Air was full of them —— the greatest number came from the NE to SE: after flying about about a Quarter of ane hour the[y] came down like a Shour of hail which lasted about half ane hour when very few Remaинд in the Air —— without going three Yards one way or the other I Kild 53 and if I wish to ha ve Kild more I might have Kild four times that number —— the moment that the[y] light the[y] make for there holes where the[y] Sit for a little while chattering and another comes out of the hole which did not fly away as I Expected for I thought that there was a Whip’ —— I Staid untill about half after ten when I Returnd to Charlotte Field where Sleepd —— wind is Still from the Eastward not much Surf

**Wednesday 13th.**
Cloudy weather little Surf and not much wind and that from the Eastward —— it Raind a little the latter part of the day

Thursday 14th.

Cloudy weather almost a Calm not much Surf —— went out to Charlotte Field after breakfast and Returnd at Sun Set when I found that ther had been an alarm in her of two Ships being in Sight which prove only to be two Men fishing on the Rock of Point Hunter which the women that Saw them took them for two Ships —— wish to god that it had been two Ships to take use away

Friday 15th.

Cloudy weather and the wind fair thank god —— went out at day break to Measure the ground of the Convicts when after I had got my breakfast at Smiths Farm and was going to begin to Measure again I herd the Cry of a Ship in Sight —— I Soon left of Measuring and left the people that was with me and came home —— on the way I met a man from Majr. Ross desiring that I would come in that the Brigg was in Sight —— on my getting there Majr. Ross asked me to goe on board when She came a little nearer —— I did not much like it but I told him that I would —— it blows hard and there is a great Sea Running out and the Surf appears as if it was going to get up —— could not goe out untill after dinner on account of her being too great a distance —— when I went out and got on board of her very well although there was a great Sea Running —— I Staid on board of her about a Quarter of ane hour when after I got the despatchess for Majr. Ross I came away and brought on Shore with me Captain Hill of the N:S:Wales Corps who is come here with Lieut Abbot and Ensing prentice, one Serjt., one Copl., one Drumer, 10 Private to Relieve G: Johnstone, Creswell and the Same number of men —— Capt. Hill being here So that Majr. Ross, little John, Faddy and poor I are to Remain in this place a little longer —— I wish to Christ that I was going —— I also brought on shore with me Mr. Jamison who is come back to be assistant with Mr. Consident we got Sa ve on Shore again —— the Gorgon is not Yet arrivd at Port Jackson nor any other Ship Since the Supply was here last —— Captain Hunter and his Ships Companie are gone home in the Dutchman that came from Batavia —— the Governour is very kind in not given use an opportunity here to write to our friends at home —— Capt. Hill appears to be a Genteel well behavd man

Saterday 16th.
Fine weather but blows hard and too much Sea for the Boats to doe any thing in this Bay —— if the Supply was in her found that She was in Cascade Bay where there is good Landing —— Sent a party of men over to assist brining over any things which may be landing there —— about five oClock Lieut Abbot and Ensing Prentice with part of the Men beloning to the Corps intended for the Service of this Country came into Town from Cascade Bay —— the men were orderd into the New Hospital and the officers one on [*] and the other on[e] Captn. Johnstone Quarterd —— the[y] Both Seem to be Genteel Youn men —— Doctor Callam came on Shore with them —— I am very much displeased with Captain Campbell for not writing to me

Sunday 17th.

Fine weather —— the Supply Still in Cascade Bay and Landing what light things She can —— Eight Seamen and two Marines beloning to the Sirius who are discharged from her came on Shore from the Supply to day the[y] are come to be Settlelers on this Island —— the[y] are D . . . d fools for ther pains the[y] had better gone home with the Rest of there Ships Companie than Stay as Settelers on this Island although I think a much better place for a man to be able to get Bread for him Self than port Jackson

Munday 18th.

Fine weather but a good dele of Surf on the Reef at times —— the Supply in the Bay —— Sent the three Cobols out who Soon after Returned from her with Baggages and Stores &c. but there being too much Surf did not Send them out again —— after dinner walked out to Charlotte Field with Mr. Callam, Lieut Abbot, Mr. Prentice and Mr. Palmer of the Supply —— the[y] all Said that it was most Charming place and were much please with there walked which gave me much Satisfaction to here them Say so as every body Said and that comes from here are much prejudiced against it

Tuesday 19

Fine weather —— getting from the Supply what we can —— I wish that every thing was out of her and that She was gone

Wednesday 20
Fine weather but a great Surf —— to much So to Send the Boat out to the Supply who is in Sight

Thursday 21st.

Fine weather not So much Surf —— Sent all the Boats out and Embarck part of the Marines that are going to Port Jackson — — Soon after the boats went out the Surf got up and only two of the Boats could get in the other was oblige to Return on board of the Supply —— Majr. Ross Sent for Captain Johnstone, Lieut Creswell and myself in consequence of what I had told Majr. Ross yesterday of Creswell informing me that Majr. Ross had Said that he would write to the Admlty. against him and Capt. Johnstone which I thought necessary to Acquaint Majr. Ross as I know that Majr. Ross had not done any Such a thing and I did not wish them to goe away and entertain Such a thought. when Majr. Ross told them that he had not then nor never had when Majr. Ross told them So they made answer that the[y] were very glad to here him Say So and that they were very much oblige to him —— after which he Said that there had been a great dele Said at Port Jackson against him and that Mr. Jamison he believed had Said more than he would make appear and that he had come to him Yesterday and Said that he had been very much led away but that he now Saw his errour and hoped to live on good terms with Majr. Ross but that he thought it necessary before he could live on good terms with Mr. Jamison that he must declair on his honor whether or not he had been making free with the Character of Majr. Ross while at Port Jackson and therfor Sent for Mr. Jamison —— when he asked Mr. Jamison if he had not on his honor been Saying thing to the prejudice of Majr. Rosses character while at Port Jackson Mr. Jamison Said Why Suspect me but Mr. Jamison would not answer that he had not been Sporting with Majr. Rosses character —— the[y] Said Mr. Jamison is Cunning Villain —— that has been long my oppinion of him

Friday 22d.

Fine weather but blows fresh —— Made the Signal for the to come from the Supply as Should land which She did but to much Surf to Send any boat out

Saterday 23

Fine weather but a great Surf —— nothing can come on Shore or goe on board for there is a tremendious Surf —— the
Supply in Sight

**Sunday 24th.**

Fine weather but a great Surf and a great Sea —— the Supply in Sight Standing off and [on]

**Munday 25th.**

Fine weather —— the Surf going down fast —— getting from the Supply what we can

**Tuesday 26th.**

Fine weather and not much Surf —— the Supply in the Bay and getting from what She has in for the Collony and Sending off to her what She is to take away from heer

**Wednesday 27th.**

Fine weather —— the Supply in the Bay —— Send on Shore her water casks and Send on board of her Planks, oar and Axe Helves for port Jackson

**Thursday 28th.**

Blows hard from the Southward —— the Supply not in Sight from Mount Pit —— it Raind hard in the night

**Friday 29th.**

Blows very hard from the S:E: and a great Surf —— the Supply not in Sight from Mount Pit

**Saturday 30th.**
Still Blows hard from the S:E: not much Surf —— the Supply not in Sight from Mount Pit —— [*] Jones male Convict Punished with 100 Lashes for Stealing a Water Mellion from the Public Gardian —— have been twice out to Charlotte Field to day —— the Town which I have been Building was this day named and is Cald Queensborough in honor of her Majesty and the Village at Cascadyd is cald Phillipsburgh after the Governour

* John Gualt. See entry 5th March, 7th March.

* To move briskly and suddenly, to flap with the wings (M.E.).
MAY 1971

May Sunday 1st.

not So much wind and little Surf —— the Supply not yet in Sight —— I think She has drifted a good way to the Westward

Munday 2d.

Fine weather little Surf —— not So much wind as has been for these Several days past —— the Supply not in Sight Yet —— [*] Steel a [Female] Convict was Punishd with 50 Lashes for telling a Liy to Majr. Ross —— walked out to Charlotte Field now Cald Queensborough —— when Mr. Doidge Caught Catharen White and Mary Higgins Stealing the Corn out of the Public Fields I orderd him to put them in Irons and to be confind in the Jail

Tuesday 3th.

Fine Weather little wind and little Surf —— the Supply not in Sight Yet Majr. Ross Desird when I went out to Queensborough to take Richardson with me /which is the man that Flogs the people/ and give them as manny lashes as I think the[y] deserved —— When I orderd Catharing White and Mary Higgins 50 each white could only bear 15 when She faintd away —— the Doctor then wished that I would order her to be taken down which I did —— Higgins Receivd 26 when I forgave her the Remaind as been an old woman —— I orderd also Mary Teut to Receive 25 Lashes for the Same Crime as the others —— She only Receivd 22 lashes when She Faintd away when I orderd her to be cast loose —— I hope this will be a warning to the Ladies out at Queensborough

Wednesday 4th.

Very fine weather little wind nor Surf —— The Supply not in Sight
Thursday 5th.

the Same weather as Yesterday —— the Supply Still absent —— orderd Phoebe Flarty in Irons and to be confind in the Goal for Stealing corn out of the Fields beloning to the Public

Friday 6th.

Fine weather and little wind no Surf —— the Supply not in Sight —— what can become of her I hope not any Accident has happend to here

Saturday 7th.

Fine Moderate weather —— little wind & no Surf —— the Supply still absent

Sunday 8th.

Fine Moderate weather not much Surf —— about 10 oClock the Supply came in Sight which I am very glad of as I Shall be able to get into my own house again which I have let Mr. Prentice have untill Mr. Kellow Embarks who house he goes into —— Sent the Boats on board with her Cask with watter and other things —— Mr. Blackburn Sent word to Majr. Ross to inform him that he was blown to the nothward in the blowing weather which came on the 27 of of last month and has not been able to Return for want of winds

Munday 9th.

Blows fresh from the South West and a good dele of Surf —— the Supply in the Bay —— made the Signal to her to goe Round to Cascady bay which She did and Sent all the Remainder of the things over there to be put on board of her as the Boats could not goe out ther —— Johnstone and Creswell also went on board of her —— we parted very good friends and Creswell has promised that Should ever any Ship Sail and I have no opportunity to write by her He will alwayse Mention me in his letters to Mrs. Creswell Who will inform my Betsey —— I am very glad that the[y] are both are gone and I wish them well and
forgive them for all there unkindness to me —— I hope we that Remain will live a little more happier than we heather to have
done which I see no Reason we Should not —— I like Captn. Hill, Lieut Abbott and Ensing Prentice very well from our short
acquaintance and particular Captain Hill who has offerd me any thing which he has got and which I want Tea, Coffe, Sugar &c.
which is very Kind of him

Tuesday 10th.

blows hard from the S:E: which is a good wind for the Supply —— I hope She will get Save and Soon to Port Jackson ——
have been twice out to Queensborough to day one before dinner and one after dinner —— a great Surf

Wednesday 11th.

blows fresh from the SE: not much Surf on the Reef —— Gentle Shours at times

Thursday 12th.

Fine moderate Weather & not much Surf —— Gentle Shours —— Punished [*] Dixson and Edwd. Woody two male
Convicts for neglect of duty with 100 Lashes Each —— I Sowd 2 Acres of Wheat at Charlotte Field

Friday 13th.

Cloudy weather and not much Surf —— went out a day break to Measure the Ground for the Seamen late belonging to the
Sirius who have become Settlers which nearly Empd. me all the day

Saterday 14th.

Fine weather and not much Surf

Sunday 15th.
Fine weather and not much Surf —— Sent the Boat over to Nepean Island with [*] Dring, Chas. McClaring and Heny. Barnet as Prisoners in Irons to be Confined there for Robbing Mr. Faddy's and Geo. Leggs Garden of Potatoes &c. &c. last night Confining them there on Indian Corn and Water will be a better Punishment than floggen them —— ther was Sent with them a fortnight Indian Corn at the present Ration which was to last them Six weeks and 90 Gallens of water —— Dring is the greatest Rascall living, every body appears to be glad with this kind of Punishment for them and hope that it will detair others —— [*] Giles and Jno. Howard male convicts were Punished Yesterday with 100 Lashes for Selling ther Cloaths

Munday 16th.

Fine Weather not much Surf —— Sent the Boat over to Nepean Island with more water to the Inhabitant of that Island —— she afterwards went a fishing and Caught only 4 fish

Tuesday 17th.

blows hard from the S:W: —— the Sentence of the Garrison Court Martial which Sat Yesterday on a Man beloning to the New So. Wales Corps was Carried into Execution this Morning and he Received 100 Lashes —— walked out to Phillipsburgh with Majr. Ross after breakfast and Markd out the Town which is to be build there —— while we were ther a Tree fell on Jas. Elliott and nearly Kild him —— he is by the Surgeons Report to be very much hurt part of the Hip Bone is brock —— Returnd to dinner after which I walkd out to Queensborough and Returned to Tea

Wednesday 18th.

blows hard from the S:W —— a great Surf

Thursday 19th.

Blows hard from the S: —— not So much Surf as Yesterday —— Punishd [*] Holms Convict with 100 Lashes for disobedience of orders —— Sowd a Acre of wheat a Charlotte Field —— the[y] have been Sowing Several acres in here with
the Same

**Friday 20th.**

blows hard and a good dele of Surf on the Reef —— Yesterday Charlt. Simpson a female convict was brought to bed of a fine Boy a Charlotte Field —— She lives with Mr. Doidge whom every body Sayes She is Married to him

**Saterday 21st.**

Fine weather —— it Raind a good dele in the night —— Sleep at Charlotte Field last night and the Night before and went both Evening to Mount Pit to See if the Birds have any particular hole which I am Convinced the[y] have from the Birds which I marked on Thursday Eveng. coming back to the Same hole last night with the mark on there Eggs which I put on them the night before —— I Caught Ten Birds with Eggs in them

**Sunday 22d.**

Fine weather little wind not much Surf —— after Breakfast walkd. out to Charlotte Field with Majr. Ross and went down to Queensborough —— Returnd to dinner

**Munday 23d.**

Fine weather little wind from the Eastward —— a Garrison Court Martial Sat on one of the New So.Wales Corps for making away with his Caps and was Sentenced to Receivd a 100 Lashes but from his good Character Majr. Ross forgave him —— [*] Thompson a Convict in Cutting down a pine Tree for the Saw pits he Could not get out of the Way of the Tree when it was falling and it fell on his leg which it has brock to pices —— I am very Sorry for him as he is a very good man but I hope he will not loos his leg

**Tuesday 24th.**
Blows hard in Squals from the Westward and it has Raind hard the greatest part of all last night and this morning —— Punishd. Chas. Gray with [*] Lashes for neglect of duty and Michl. Dennison with 25 Lashes for the same Crime

**Wednesday 25th**

Blows fresh from the Southward —— Punished Jno. Thomas alias Copper with 50 Lashes for Stealing Indian Corn belonging to the Crown and Danl. Daniels with 32 Lashes for attempting to Steal flour from Mary Limamon —— the[y] Both belong to Queensborough and were punished out there

**Thursday 26**

much the Same kind of Weather —— not much Surf —— Sowd one acre of Wheat at Queensborough

**Friday 27th.**

Squaly weather —— a good dele of Surf

**Saterday 28**

Blows hard from the Northward and a Very Great Surf

**Sunday 29**

Not much wind but a great Surf Still on the Reef

**Munday 30th.**

not Much wind and that from the Eastward —— not much Surf in the morning but a great Surf at times in the Afternoon —— Everybody Empd. in the Vale Grubbing
Tuesday 31st.

Blows hard from the S:W: —— a good dele of Surf
JUNE 1791

June Wednesday 1

Blows very hard from the S:E: which it has done all night —— the wind Blyths every thing which it came near —— this Evening three Marines whom I gave leave to goe to Duncombe Bay to fish this Morning Returnd with Thos. Strich who has been away for these Eight Months past and whom Every body Supposed was dead long a goe —— he looks very well and is very fatt —— he Says that he has not Seen a Soul Since he left Chas. Gray ther a nother Runaway Convict which is Seven months that he has ever Since been Where the Marines found him and never So near this as Mount Pit Since he has been away that he has lived on Birds of different kinds and wood Cabbaged —— the Birds he ust to get on the Clifts by the Sea and there is plenty of Cabbage round that part of the Island where he has been Since he has been away —— the Cabbage he Climb the trees for and cut the top off with a knife which also Servd him for a Rasor at times —— he must have had a Terrible time of it —— Majr. Ross thinks the Trouble which he must have Sufferd in mind & the hard ships which he has enduerd in body from the weather and want of Cloaths is a Sufficient punishment for him Running away and therfor Majr. Ross has forgiven him any other Crimes but the truth is that he did not Run away but was drove away from the Store by Mr. Morrelly who told him that he was order not to give him any provisions from the Store on which he went to find Some Wher he could

Thursday 2d.

Cloudy and cold weather —— wind NW: —— a good dele of Surf

Friday 3d.

Fine weather wind N:W: a good dele of Surf —— went at day light to Duncombay to See if there is a good place for a Boat to come in as Strich and the three Marines Said that a Boat might come in at all times as there never was any Surf to hurt —— found that on my getting ther that they had Misinformd Majr. Ross that a Boat can only come in here in good weather and that it is not near So good a place as here —— went and came by the place wher Strich has lived it is a most Miserable hutt the
gloomious place I ever Saw —— Mary Griges was Punishd to day with 50 lashes for coming into Town from Cascady contry to orders

**Saterday 4th.**

Squaly weather wind S:W: and a great Surf —— this being the Kings birth day the Troops in the Garrison fired there in honor of the day —— I fired our men on our own parade and Captain Hill fired his Men in the front of ther own Quarters

**Sunday 5th.**

Squaly from the Southward —— a great Surf

**Munday 6th.**

Fine weather but it blows fresh from the Southward and a great Surf —— walkd out to Queensborough after dinner and orderd Sarah Lyons to Receiv e 50 Lashes for abusing Mr. Wentworth —— She only Received 16 as Mr. Wentworth begd that She Might be forgiven the other thirty four which She was order also Elizth. Pipking to Receive 25 lashes for disobediance of order for Coming into Town without Leave —— She only could Receive Six as She faintd away —— it is a thousand pittious that She is abandond woman for She is in figure a fine woman and has got a handsom face —— Sat as President of a Garrison Court Martial on a Drumr. of the N:S: Wales Corps

**Tuesday 7th.**

Fine weather but blows Remarkably hard at times and a great Surf

**Wednesday 8th.**

Much the Same weather as Yesterday
Thursday 9th.

Fine weather and more Moderate than it has been for these two days past but a great Surf

Friday 10th.

Fine weather at times Gentle Showrs —— no so much Surf —— another of the NewSth. Wales Corps Tryed to day by a Garrison Court Martial

Saturday 11th.

Fine weather and the Surf gone down greatly

Sunday 12th.

Squaly weather and Blows very hard from the West —— we had a little thunder this morning —— Sent the Boat to See if the three men on Nepean Island who were Sent there this day month are a live and if they are to bring them of —— the[y] Could with great difiqualy land and found them all alive and they brought them of —— one of them very ill I am glad that they are alive for I was affraid that they had been dead

Munday 13th.

Squaly weather and a great Surf —— the people Empd. in getting the different kinds of Grain in the Ground

Tuesday 14th.

Blows hard from the Southward —— Punishd Mary Shepperd (a Plymouth woman) and Ann Dutton two Convict women —— the former Received 50 and the other 48 Lashes for being drunk and Making a Noise in the Camp —— Majr. Ross Reduced Serjt. Clinch and Corpo. Brough for given them the Spirrits to get drunk with
Wednesday 15th.

Blows hard from the S:E: and a great Surf

Thursday 16th.

Fine weather and not much Surf on the Reef

Friday 17th.

Fine Moderate Weather and not much Surf

Saturday 18th.

Fine weather little wind and no Surf

Sunday 19th.

Fine Moderate weather and no Surf on the Reef

Munday 20th.

Squaly weather and blows Remarkably hard in the aftning and a great Sea coming in and the Surf getting up

Tuesday 21st.

Blows hard from the Southward and a great Surf

Wednesday 22d.
More Moderate but a great Sea and Surf

Thursday 23th.

Moderate weather —— Still a great Surf —— Punishd Martin Colls a male Convict out a Queensborough with one hundred Lashes for Contempt and disrespect to Mr. Doidge

Friday 24th.

Showry at times the Surf going down

Saterday 25th.

Squaly weather not much Surf —— Sent a draft of Seven male Convicts and nine Female Dito from Queensborough to Phillipburgh and the Same number from her to Phillipburgh

Sunday 26th.

Fine moderate weather and not much Surf

Munday 27th.

Fine weather but blows very hard from the Northward not much Surf —— the people Empd. in getting the Seeds in the Ground —— part of the Carpenters Empd. in finishing the Barrack for our men the Remainder at Phillipsburg in Erecting huts for the N:S:W Corps to goe in when the[y] are finishd as Majr. Ross has ordered them to take part ther

Tuesday 28th.

Fine weather blows very hard from the Westward —— fine landing no Surf what ever —— the people are getting Sickly
**Wednesday 29th.**

Fine weather no Surf—— Still blows hard —— it Raind hard almost all night

**Thursday 30th.**

Fine weather no Surf—— blows very hard
JULY 1791

July Friday 1st.

More Moderate —— a good dele of Surf on the Reef

Saturday 2d.

Blows fresh in the oftening —— Rain at times —— a great Surf —— wind S.W.

Sunday 3d.

much the Same weather as Yesterday

Munday 4th.

Blows very hard and a great Surf —— wind West

Tuesday 5th.

it has blown and Raind hard the greatest part of this last twenty four hour —— a great Surf

Wednesday 6th.

more moderate but a very great Surf and Rain at times —— wind West

Thursday 7th.
Fine moderate weather but a great Sea Rolling in the Bay and a great Surf

**Friday 8th.**

Fine weather —— a good dele of Surf on the Reef —— this day our men went into ther new Barrack which are very good

**Saterday 9th.**

Blows fresh from the Northward —— not much Surf

**Sunday 10th.**

Fine weather but blows hard out in the oftening from the westward —— no Surf —— Raind the greatest part of this afternoon

**Munday 11th.**

Fine weather but blows hard —— no Surf from the Southward

**Tuesday 12th.**

Fine Spring weather —— no Surf —— little wind and that from the Eastward

**Wednesday 13th.**

Fine weather —— no Surf —— wind from the Eastward

**Thursday 14th.**

Fine Moderate weather no Surf —— Punished Elizt. Halligon in here for coming in from Phillipsburgh Without Leave and
Punished Elizth. Thackney, Sarah Lyons and Mary Ann Carty of Phillipsburgh for the Same thing with 25 Lashes each —— two Marines whom I gave leave to goe to Duncombe Bay a fishing Returned in the Evening with a Turtle of a bout two hundred wight

Friday 15th.

Fine weather —— no Surf on the Reef but blows hard from the Eastward

Saterday 16th.

Fine weather but blows very hard from the S.E. and which it did Remarkably hard in the night with Rain —— Punished Phillip Devin with [*] Lashes for making away with the corn which he had Issued out to him for the purpose of planting in his Acre

Sunday 17th.

the first part of this day fine Weather but the latter part Rain with very hard gust of wind —— Jno. Gualt was put in Irons last night for Robbing Mr. Freeman

Munday 18th.

Squaly weather —— Punished Heny. Wright by making him Run the Gantlet throu all the men and women in her for attempting to deflour Elizt. Gregory a Girl of a bout ten Years of Age —— he was about two Years agoe tried at Port Jackson for his life for the Same offence and Sentance to Suffer death but his Sentance was changed from Death to Transportation for Life to this Island —— he is to undergoe the Same punishment at Port Jackson when his Back is well

Tuesday 19th.

Fine weather —— Majr. Ross very ill confined to his bed
Wednesday 20th.

Fine moderate weather —— Majr. Ross very ill

Thursday 21st.

Much the Same weather —— Majr. Ross dangerously ill —— the Surgeon has been with him all night

Friday 22d.

Fine weather but Blows very hard with Rain —— Majr. Ross if possible wors to day —— he sent to me this afternoon telling me that he could possibly live much longer and therfore Gave me directions what to doe if he Should be carried off —— I hope in God that he will get better for Should any thing happen So as to carry him off this place will Soon be nothing but Scien of confusion

Saterday 23th.

Rainy dirty weather —— Majr. Ross no better

Sunday 24th.

a Little Better weather to day than what is was Yesterday and I hope that Majr. Ross if any thing is a little Better —— find myself very Unwell to day —— wind from the Southward —— a great Surf

Munday 25th.

Fine weather —— Since last Sunday have not been out of my Bed untill to day been so very ill but am thank God as well as my friend Majr. Ross are getting better’
Saterday 30th.

a disagreeable day has Raind the greatest part of all last night —— Major Ross getting Better fast

Sunday 31st.

Fine weather not much Surf on the Reef —— Majr. Ross gainning Ground everyday

* This entry was probably made on some other day, perhaps Friday 29th.
AUG 1791

August Munday 1st.

Fine weather —— Several of the people very bad —— no Surf on the Reef

Tuesday 2d.

Fine weather —— no Surf on the Reef althought it blows hard out from the South west —— Heny. Wright Received the Remainder of his Punishment at Queensborough

Wednesday 3th.

Fine weather no Surf —— Blows hard from the S:W: and a great Sea out —— walkd. to Phillipsburgh with Faddy and Mr. Considen to give some order from Majr. Ross

Thursday 4th.

Squaly weather and a great Surf —— Majr. Ross able to come down Stairs again which I thank God for

Friday 5th.

much the Same kind of weather this day as Yesterday

Saterday 6th.

Fine weather —— not much Surf on the Reef
Sunday 7th.

Squaly weather — the Surf getting up — wind S:W: — Punished Yesterday John Mortimore ane old man near Seventy with 100 Lashess for Stealing wheat and neglecting his work — also John Boyel with the Same number for disrespect to Capt. Hill and Accussing two of Capt Hills men with Stealing Birds from him which he could not Prove — this day died Rachael Smith a Convict woman from a fall She Received and which brought on a Rupture — made up the Matter between Majr. Ross & Mr. Considen which has been Subsisting between them ever Since we have been in this Island — nothing has given me greater pleasure for this Some time past than this matter has I have long wished them to be friends and have this day at last Accomplished my wishes

Munday 8th.

Fine weather but Blows hard from the S:West Quarter — not much Surf

Tuesday 9th.

Fine weather a great Surf and Blows hard from the SW — a Garrison Court Martial assembled to day for the tryal of a Corpl. and Private of the N:S:W Corps whom I prosecute — the Court ajurned untill to Morrow morning

Wednesday 10th.

Squaly weather Blows hard from the S:W: and a great Surf — the Court Martial not finished Yet

Thursday 11th.

Squaly weather and a Strong gale from the Southward — the Court martial not finished yet — Poor Ellis confind by Captn. Hill for Contemp

Friday 12th.
Fine weather a great Surf —— the Court Martial have finished this day and the[y] have Acquited the Corpl. but have found the private man Guilty and Sentd. him to Receive 200 Lashess but the proceedings Majr. Ross dose not approve of for which See the orderly Book —— Ellis will be tried tomorrow

Saterday 13th.

Fine weather not much Surf —— wind S:W a good wind for any thing that is coming from Port Jackson —— Tried Ellis and the Court is adjournd untill Munday —— the New South Wales Corps in orders for to March on Wednesday morning next to Phillipsburgh —— I shall be glad when they are gone for I doe not like them they have been Endeavouring to Set Majr. Ross and me and Faddy and me by the ears Since they have been her —— as Yet they have been disapointed they have tyred Several times to make Faddy and me Quarell

Sunday 14th.

much the Same weather as Yesterday —— not much Surf on the Reef

Munday 15th.

Fine weather but very Cold no Surf —— went on with Ellis's Tryal which is not yet finished —— the Court adjournd untill to Morrow Morning and thank god a Ship in Sicht —— now for the letters —— She Sent her boat on Shore at Cascady with the dispatches and found that She is the Mary Ann Transport Capt Monro from Port Jackson with 11 Soldiers, 3 Women and Nine children of the N:S:W Corps and 131 Male Convicts one woman and one child and nine month Provisions for them —— She Saild from Port Jackson the Six Inst. and left England in Feby. last —— She left at Port Jackson the Matilda a nother Transport which had left England Since the Mary Ann did —— the Matilda Saild from England in Company with the Gorgon and ten other Sail of Transports all bound to N.S:Wales So that we may Expect the Arrival of the Gorgon in the Country Every day which Ship is to Carry use home as the Govr. informs Majr. Ross in his letter —— have not as yet Received a Single line from any body —— the Mary Ann after She has landed Every thing which She has in for this Island is to goe back to Port Jackson after which goes a Whealing on the Coast of America
Tuesday 16th.

Fine Weather no Surf and the Ship in Sight Working in to the Bay —— Sent the Boats off to her —— assembled again this morning the Court Martial for Ellis Tryal which We finished and have Acquited him —— on the Boats Return from the Mary Ann Received two letter one from Captn. Campbell and the other from Captn. Johnstone for which See the letter Book* —— in Captn. Campbells letter ther was one inclosed which Captn. Campbell informs me was Sent to him by the Govr. —— it containd part of a letter from my Beloved Alicia part of a letter from My Agent and his Account —— got some of the stores from the Mary Ann to day

Wednesday 17th.

Fine weather and little Surf —— the Boat Empd in landing the people Provisions &c. from the Ship —— the N.S.W. Corps marchd to Phillipsburg to day

Thursday 18th.

Fine moderate weather and no Surf —— the Boat Empd. as Yesterday —— Punished John Romaine Convict with 50 Lashes for Riotous behaviour after hours

Friday 19th.

Blows fresh and the Surf getting up —— Send the Boat to bring from the Ship what the[y] can —— the latter part of this day the Surf to great to send the Boats out

Saterday 20th.

Blows fresh and a great Surf too much so to Send our Boats out —— in the after noon the Ship Send there Boat in and in going out was very near being lost
Sunday 21st.

Blows hard and a very great Surf —— the Ship in Sight

Munday 22d.

The Same weather as yesterday —— the Ship in Sight —— will not be able to doe any thing with her to day too much Sea and Surf to attempt to Send the Boats out

Tuesday 23d.

More Moderate than Yesterday but a great Surf and if the Mary Ann attempt to Send there Boat on Shore to day they will lose there Boat and every one in Her will be drown —— Punishd on the 20 Instn. Isac Williams with 100 Lashes and Wm. Gunter with 59 Lashes —— Gunter was also order to Receive 100 but could not Bear more than the 59 —— they both were punishd for Neglect of Duty —— Punished also to day Jeffery Bolton ane old Gray headed man with 50 Lashes and Stoppage of three pounds of Flour per week out of his weekly Ration for three Months for Stealing Bean out of the Barn —— Joseph Gandous was also Punishd with 60 Lashes to day for being absent from his work —— he was order to Receive 100

Wednesday 24th.

Fine weather but a great Surf —— the Mary Ann in Sight —— cannot attempt Sending the Boats out for the Surf —— the wind Southerly —— Punished John Wood with 24 lashes for Robbing a Gardian and a Stoppage of three pounds of Flour per week out of his weekly Ration for the Space of Six months —— he was order to Receive 100 Lashes but could only bear 24 —— this is the fift of the new hands that have been punished Since their Arrival

Thursday 25th.

Fine weather but Still a great Surf —— the Mary Ann in Sight —— cannot attempt Sending our Boats out
Friday 26th.

Fine Weather and not so much Surf as Yesterday — the Mary Ann in the Bay — Sent our Boats out in the morning but the Surf got up again on which we disisted from Sending them out again and hauld the Signal down to Show them that were out that the[y] must not come in the Ships Boat being on Shore at this time the[y] would goe of to the Ship — although everybody advised them not to attemp it but of the[y] went and they had not got above a hunderd Yards from the Landing place when a Surf Struck the Boat and knocked every one that was in her out of her and if it had not been for the great assistance which we gave them to the Risk of the people's lives who went in to the water to assist them and there own good Swimming the[y] all must have been drowned — the Boat is intirly Stove to pices — I am glad that no lives are lost as also that they have lost their Boat for the[y] would not be advised but would goe out for they Said that there never was any Surf her but what they would goe over but they are now Convinced to the Contrary

Saturday 27th.

Fine weather not much Surf — Sent the Boats out the Ship being in the Bay — getting all this day from the Ship what we can

Sunday 28th.

Fine weather no Surf little wind — the Ship is in the Bay — the Boats Empd. as Yesterday — Punished to day John Laurell and William Robinson the (2) although Sunday for Gambling with cards on this day — the[y] were each orderd to Receive a hundred Lashes — Laurell could only Bear 61 and Robinson 81

Munday 29th.

Fine Moderate Weather no Surf — the Ship in the Bay — the Boats Empd. as yesterday — hope to get every thing out of her to day if so She will be able to Return to Port Jackson to Morrow Evening — Punished Frainces Flaxmore and John Lock for neglecting the Public work — the[y] were order to Receive a hundred each but Lock could only [bear] 50 also
Punished Mary Marshall with 50 Lashes for leaving Phillimors farm without leave and being very impertent to Majr. Ross —— Jno. Etton also Receive a hunderd lashes for Stealing Potatoes —— wrote a letter to Captain Campble and one to Captain Johnston in Answer to theirs —— for which See the letter Book* —— also Sent Several thing on Board of the Mary Ann for Captain Campbell and a plank for Creswell

**Tuesday 30th.**

Blows fresh from the Eastward and a good dele of Surf —— got every thing on board of the Mary Ann and after dinner the Captain went on board and She made Sail for Port Jackson with a fair —— I was much affraid that the Boat would not have been able to come in after putting the Captain on board on Account of the Surf but She got Save in a little after dark —— Punished George Gust with 100 Lashes for Employing William Harris and William Arbrick to work for him without leave and they each Received 50 Lashess for going to Work for him without permission

**Wednesday 31st.**

Fine weather but a great Surf —— wind Easterly

* See pp294 and 295 infra.

* See pp296 – 301 infra.
SEPT 1791

Sepr. Thursday 1st.

Much the Same weather as Yesterday —— Still a great Surf —— wind East

Friday 2d.

Fine weather not So much Surf as Yesterday —— wind S.E.

Saterday 3d.

Squaly Weather and a good dele of Surf —— wind Northerly —— I wish it may Continue to Rain all this day and to Morrow

Sunday 4th.

Fine weather —— a great Surf —— wind at no Settled point

Munday 5th.

Fine weather and good dele of Surf —— wind from the Southward —— Jno. Laurell and Jno. Boyle Received the Remainder of the Punishment Laurell 39 and Boyle 49 Lashes

Tuesday 6th.

Fine weather —— not much Surf —— wind S:E:

Wednesday 7th.
Fine moderate weather and little Surf —— wind from the Eastward —— Jno. Ascott who came out Captain Sheas Servant and has Since been Majr. Ross's is gone Quite Mad and are obliged to confine him —— I am Sorry for him he dose not like any body but me —— it is all about a D . . . . Convict Whore who has used him ill

**Thursday 8th.**

Fine Moderate weather and no Surf —— wind as Yesterday —— Ascott much worse than yesterday —— confined him in a house made to day for to put him near the Guard and have put a Strait Waiscoats on him

**Friday 9th.**

Fine weather no Surf —— wind East

**Saterday 10th.**

Fine moderate Weather and no Surf —— wind East —— was oblige to Chain Ascott to a Gun in his house he is Quite gone —— he Sent to Speak to me and when I came he Said my name was Mr. Clark and I was all in the dark

**Sunday 11th.**

Remarkably fine weather no Surf —— wind from the Eastward —— Sent three Men on Board of the Sirius to See what ther was Remaining in her the[y] Soon after Returned and Said that there was nothing in her Except a Coble which must be Quite Rotten as the Watter was over it at low water and that her Bottem was out of her —— this Evening Jno. Gualt who some time Since made his Escape from the place wher he was confined for Robing Mr. Freeman was brought in this Evening

**Munday 12th.**

very fine weather not much Surf but has all the appearence of it was going to get up —— wind N:E: —— Punish Mary Barns with 50 Lashes & Elizt. Goff with 50 Lashes for going to Phillipsburgh Yesterday without leave and Staying ther all night
Tuesday 13th.

Fine Moderate Weather — not much Surf but Seems very inclinable to get up —— blows fresh in the oftening from the N:E and B: E —— I am much affraid that the catterpillars are coming again to destroy the Crops as the[y] did last years Wheat for Several are Seen to day on the Barley which is grown on the N.E. Side of Mount George —— Should the[y] come in the Same number as they did last Year the Best thing that Government can doe is to take every Soul of the place for it will be a Constant Expence to Government to Keep it

Wednesday 14th.

Remarkable fine weather again —— not very much Surf —— wind from the N:E: and not So much of it as yesterday —— Ascott Still as Mad as befor I pity him

Thursday 15th.

The first part of the day very fine and not much Surf and the wind from the Westward but towards noon it changed from the Westward to its old point S.E. wher it blows now fresh from that point with Rain

Friday 16th.

Fine weather but a good dele of Surf —— this Morning about 3 oClock was woke with the Report of a Gun when the Corpo. of the Gd. Came and Cald me and Said that there was a Gun fire in the Bay —— Faddy soon after came and Said that he could See a Ship between this and Phillip Island —— I made him for Answer God grant it may be the Gorgon —— I soon after got up and Saw her also but from her Size know it could not be the gorgon —— at day light She came close in when we Sent the Boat off which Soon after Returned and brought the letters &c. on Shore and found her the Sollomander Capt Nickolls from Port Jackson with Convict Store and Provisions and twelf men of the N:S:W: Corps —— from Captain Campbell I received a letter and packet containing Six letters from My Beloved Alicia one from Mr. Nash one from my Brother Matthew as also a letter from Mr. Callam of the Supply —— by this Ship find that the gorgon is not Yet Arrived at Port Jackson —— when She
Sailed which was the 4 Instn. but She was hourly Expected as the Rest of the Fleet with which this Ship Sailed from England in Company bound for this place —— She left the William and Mary and Atalantic Transport at Port Jackson which Ships had Arrived Since our last heering from the[re] —— the Mary Ann was not arrived when this Ship Sailed from Port Jackson

Saturday 17th.

Fine Moderate weather and no Surf —— Wind from the Northward —— the Ship close in the Bay —— Sent all the Boats off to bring on Shore all the Convicts as fast as they can —— at Sun Set got all convicts [*] and the twelf men belonging to the N:S: Wales Corps

Sunday 18th.

Squaly & cloudy weather no Surf —— wind from the Westward —— Sent all the Boats off to land what they can Send on Shore first —— about 12 oClock it blowd very hard and therfore would not Sent the Boats off any more as they cannot lay along Side of the Ship well from the great Sea that is Running

Munday 19th.

Fine weather but blows fresh from the Eastward and in the Morning a good dele of Surf —— Did not Send the Boats out untill after dinner —— the Ship in the Bay —— the Boats Empd. after dinner in landing Provisions Stores &c.

Tuesday 20th.

Fine Moderate weather and no Surf —— wind East —— the Ship a great way off to the Westward —— in the afternoon Sent the Boats on board of her for Provisions &c.

Wednesday 21st.

Blows a gale of wind from the Eastward and a very great Surf —— the Ship in the Bay but cannot Send any Boats off to her
Thursday 22d.

Still Blowes hard from the Eastward and a great Surf — I wish it would Rain for the Crops much want it — the Ship came in Sight this forenoon but was obliged to Stand off again

Friday 23d.

Squaly boistrous weather — not So much as Yesterday — Wind from the Northward — the Ship in Sight to the South East

Saterday 24th.

Squaly weather and at times blows very hard from the N:E: — the Ship in the Bay — no Surf on the Reef — Sent the Boats out but two of them could not get on Board of the Ship — the other did & She brought on Shore again with her five Cask of flour

Sunday 25th.

Blows hard at times from the Northward no Surf — the Ship in the Bay — Sent the Boats out to Bring on Shore Provisions Stores &c. from her

Munday 26th.

Blows hard Still and the wind Seems inclinable to come Round to the Westward — wind at present North no Surf — the Ship in the Bay — the Boats Empd as Yesterday

Tuesday 27th.

Moderate weather no Surf — wind N:E — the Ship in the Bay — the boats Empd. as yesterday
**Wednesday 28th.**

Calm weather no Surf —— the Ship Close in the Bay —— got every thing nearly out of her

**Thursday 29th.**

Fine Moderate weather no Surf —— wind N:W: —— the Ship in the Bay —— got every thing out of her —— She will be able to Sail for Port Jackson on Saterday

**Friday 30th.**

Squaly weather no Surf to Signify —— wind N:E: —— the Ship in the Bay —— Wrot letters to Captn. Campbell, Creswell and Mr. Callam of the Supply for which See the letter Book* —— a good dele of Rain fell in the night and this morning which will doe a great dele of good to the Corn &c.

* See pp 302–307 infra.
OCT 1791

October Saturday 1st.

Blows fresh from the N.E. —— the Ship in the Bay —— not much Surf But a great Sea —— wrote a letter to Mr. Wolridge which I enclosed to Capt'n. Campbell (for which See the letter Book) and be by him forwarded in the fresh Ship Bound to China or Europe†

Sunday 2d.

Cloudy Weather very inclinable to Rain —— blows hard from the N.E. no Surf on the Reef

Munday 3d.

Cloudy weather and blows very hard at times —— wind N.E. no Surf —— Jno. Harris Convict Received one hundred lashes at Phillipsburg for Absconding from the Service which he was orderd on and going into the woods —— [*] Vallance a Convict also Received one hundred lashes at Phillipsburg for Disobediance of orders & Insolence to Mr. Hume the Superintendend at that place for which offence the Said Vallance is in addition to Receive the same number of Lashes at Queensborough and at this town as an Example to the whole of the Convicts on this Island —— [*] Rainer and [*] La Row Convicts were Punished with 50 Lashes each for Theft and Jas. Dullage Convict was also Punishd with fifty lashes for Repeated Disobedience of orders and neglect of Duty

Tuesday 4th.

Fine Moderate Weather —— Wind N:E: —— no Surf —— [*] Fergusen a Convict in a fit fell into the fire while he was dressing his breakfast and was nearly Burnt to death before any person observed him
Wednesday 5th.

Fine dry weather —— wind Moderatly from the Eastward —— no Surf on the Reef

Thursday 6th.

Cloudy weather and very inclinable to Rain —— wind North and blows fresh —— no Surf on the Reef

Friday 7th.

Cloudy weather —— in the course last night Several Showrs fell which has much Refreshed the Corn very much —— Blows fresh from the N:W: B:W —— no Surf on the Reef —— Mary Sheaperd was punished with fifty lashes for making use of Majr. Ross's name and ther by passing Theophilis Feutsell a Soldier in the N.S Wales Corps to Queensborough She not having Majr. Ross's permission for that purpose —— it has all this day been very inclinable to Rain

Saterday 8th.

Cloudy weather and very much inclinable to Rain —— Several Small Shows have fell —— Wind West and Blows hard —— no Surf on the Reef

Sunday 9th.

Fine clear weather —— the Wind S:W:B:W: —— No Surf on the Reef —— a great dele of Rain fell from Seven oClock last night untill ten oClock which has done a great dele of good —— very hott all this day

Munday 10th.

Squaly weather with Rain in the first part of the day —— wind South —— not much Surf on the Reef —— the Rain which fell Saterday night has done a great dele of good to the ground and Crops &c.
Tuesday 11th.

Fine Moderate weather —— little wind from the Eastward —— no Surf on the Reef —— Thos. Seal was punished with 49 Lashes for absenting himself from all work Since the thirtieth of last month and found by Edwd. Parrot at 10 oClock last night in his Garden —— Cornlius. [Benns?] with 50 Lashes for Repeatedly absenting himself from the work he is order —— two Male Convicts died to day of declines —— [*] Anson died in the morning and [*] this afternoon —— both young men

Wednesday 12th.

Fine moderate weather —— very little wind and what there is of it comes from the N:W: —— Since this morning Six oClock a very great Surf has got up —— the Boat went out a fishing a little after four and Returnd about one with 13 Snapper and one Sharke —— I was very much affraid that she would not have been able to have got in on Account of the Surf and in Getting in She Run a great Risk

Thursday 13th.

Fine weather —— Blows fresh from the N:W: —— not So much Surf as Yesterday —— John Howard Convict Ordered to Receive 500 Lashes for Selling his Slops which were Issued out to him by the Public and for telling a Liy to Majr. Ross Respecting the Selling of the Slops —— he could only bear 80 —— the Remaind he is to Receive when well —— Thos. Brown Convict Order to Receiv e 200 Lashes for Selling his Slops also —— he could only Bear 41 —— to Receive the Remainder When his Back is well —— the[y] Both belong to Phillipsburg and the[y] Sold there Slops to Mr. Hume the Superintendent of Convicts —— Robt. Kingston order to Receive 100 Lashes for absenting himself from his work —— he could only Bear 34 —— the Remainder he will Receive when well

Friday 14th.

Fine Weather but blows hard from the West —— there is no Surf on the Reef —— there was a gentle Shour of Rain this morning between Six and Seven oClock if ther had been a little more it would have done no harm —— it has been Remarkably
hott to day

Saterday 15th.

Squaly weather and blows very hard from the S:W: —— a good dele of Surf —— it came on to Rain last night about Seven oClock and continued the greatest part of all last night —— Several Shours have fell in the Cours of this day

Sunday 16th.

Squaly weather and blows very hard from the S:E:B South with a very great Surf on the Reef —— the wind Blows very Cold —— Wm. Cooper Convict died to day at 12 oClock at Phillipsburg —— his death is occasioned from his eating a great Quantity of Wood Cabbage Yesterday which Sweld him very much and his Stomach was not able to digest it

Munday 17th.

Cloudy weather —— not So much wind as Yesterday which is S:E: nor So much Surf —— a Garrison Court Martial at Phillipsburgh on a Soldier beloning to the New South Wales Corps —— Punished Wm. Gunter with 50 Lashes at Phillipburgh for quiting the duty that he was orderd on and going into the Woods and Staying there a week —— this Said Gunter is a very bad Subject —— Mary Carty Convict was deliverd this afternoon of [*]

Tuesday 18th.

Clam no Surf on the Reef —— According to the order of Yesterday the Court Martial Met again this Morning at 10 oClock but the Court would do nothing futher in the Matter on which Majr. Ross gave out a Genl. order for which See the Orderly Book and which order Mr. Faddy was to deliver to Captn. Hill if he found that the Court would not doe any thing futher in the matter but if the Court wished to have the Proceedings to look over them again in which case Faddy was not to deliver the Genl. order but to Return it back to the Commanding Officer —— on Mr. Faddy's Return from Phillipsburgh he informed me that Capt. Hill had Used him very ill and threatend to take his Sword from him to put him Under an Arrest for not delivering him the order on
his arrival a Phillipsburg which Mr. Faddy Said I intentd to write to Majr. Ross to have the Treatment which he Received from Capt Hill investigated by a Genl. Court Martial —— he asked me if I though him Right —— I told him that if it had been me who Captn. Hill threatend as he he has done you I certainly would have it Public investigated as Such an appoligie as my feelings as an officer could accept for you was Acting under the order and Authority of Majr. Ross and had done nothing but what you was desired —— this afternoon [*] Ferguson the man that fell into the fire on the Morning of the 4 Inst in a fit died this afternoon —— it is a fortunated thing for him that the almighty has takes him to himself

Wednesday 19th.

Cloudy weather and blows fresh from the S:W: —— no Surf on the Reef —— in the Course of the day three or four Showrs fell — Faddy has delived his letter of Complaint against Captn. Hill to Majr. Ross and which cannot be Settled but by a Court Martial —— he in my opinion has done what I would have done if he had treated me in the manner he has done Faddy —— Thos. Edgridge Convict Receivd 50 Lashes and to be chained to the grind Stone for Breaking out of confinment and Repeatedly Being found Robbing the Private Gardins —— Eliz Thomas a woman Convict was deliver of a Boy this morning

Thursday 20th.

Fine weather —— wind Variable from S.W to South —— a good dele of Surf on the Reef —— went out to Queensborough a little after day light and took Richardsond the Scurge with me and Punished [*] Cooly a Convict Boy with 13 Lashes on the Backside for Stealing from his Master Serjt. Clayfield at different times —— Punished also [*] Fletcher also a Convict —— he only Could Bear 17 Lashes out of 200 which he was orderd to Receive for absenting himself from the work he was orderd on and Stealing from Chas. Clarks Gardin above a hundred Roots of Potatoes —— the dispute between Faddy and Captain Hill is to be Settled by a Genl. Court Martial when we arrive at Port Jackson —— Untill then it must Remain as it is at Present

Friday 21st.

Fine Moderate Weather —— Wind Easterly —— not much Surf —— this morning Died [*] Evans a poor old man one of the Convicts that came in the Solamander —— Captain Hill wrote to Majr. Ross for a Copy of the Complaint and charge which
Faddy has Exhibited against a Copy of which Faddy Sent him

Saterday 22d.

Fine Moderate Weather —— Wind from the N:E: the little that there is of it —— no Surf —— all the people in here have been very Bussey in Building new houses on a Regular plan Yesterday and to day —— when finished it will look Something like a Town than what it did before —— have my Self for the Several days past been Empd. in Marking out the diffent Streets Market Place &c. when they will have any thing to Sell here —— Eleanora Kervan Convict was this day deliver of a dead child —— Sent [*] Keeling and five other Men Convicts nearly as great Rascals as Keeling to Cultivate Ground for the Public at Ball Bay

Sunday 23d.

Fine moderate Weather —— almost a calm the little wind that there is comes from the Westward —— no Surf on the Reef —— the Crops of Wheat and Indian Corn both at Queensborough and here round Arthurs Vale look as well as any corn can do in any part of the World

Munday 24th.

Fine Moderate weather —— wind S:W: and no Surf Round the Island —— this has been the Hottest day we have felt this Season —— [*] Vallance belonging to Phillipensburg was Punishd in here with 100 Lashes According to his Sentence on the 3d. Instn. —— Geoe. Gust was Punished also in here with 75 Lashes for Neglect of duty —— Ann Jones Dorvent a woman Convict died to day at Phillipsburg has been ill ever Since She has been on the Island —— She came here in the Surprize in August 90

Tuesday 25th.

Fine Moderate weather —— wind S:E: —— no Surf on the Reef —— a nother Court Martial to Morrow at Phillipburg for
which See the orderly Book

**Wednesday 26th.**

Cloudy weather with a fresh Breeze from the N:E: — not much Surf on the Reef —— Faddy and Self went out to Phillipensburg this morning According to the Genl. orders of Yesterday and Tried a Corpl. and a Private belonging to the New South Wales Corps who were both Acquited —— [*] Robison and [*] two Convicts were Punished with 100 Lashes each for Stealing there fellow Prisoners Provisions

**Thursday 27th.**

Fine weather —— wind Northerly —— no Surf on the Reef —— Chas. Gray and Jos. Tuso two Convicts were Punished with one hundred lashes Each for Disobedience of orders and Neglect of duty —— Thos. Howard who was orderd on the 13 Inst to Receive 500 Lashes for Selling the Slops that were Issued out to him and of which he could then only Bear 60 and Thos. Brown who was orderd 200 Lashes and of which number he could only Bear 41 for the Same offence Major Ross has forgiven them the Remainder of the Punishment —— another Garrison Court Martial at Phillipsburg to Morrow for which Duty I am

**Friday 28th.**

Fine weather but at times it threatens very much if would Rain —— wind N:W: —— no Surf on the Reef —— went out to Phillipensburg According to the orders of Yesterday to Set a Garrison Court Martial when Thos. Lunn a Private Soldier in the New South Wales Corps was brought to Trial by Captn. Hill for Unsoldierlike behaviour by telling him a wicked and Malicious Lie of which Crime he was found Guilty and was Sentenced to Receive 400 Lashes which Sentences by the orders of this day is to be Carried into Execution to Morrow morning at Phillipsburg at Seven oClock —— the people begins to get on with there new Houses very well

NB: Margt. Moring Punished with 50 Lashes to day for not going to work and been Insolent to her oversier

**Saterday 29th.**
Cloudy weather and very hott —— this is the hottest day we have had this Season —— blows fresh from the Westward —— no Surf on the Reef

**Sunday 30th.**

Cloudy weather —— Wind N:W: and blows fresh —— no Surf on the Reef —— [*] Dixon /Convict/ an old man died here this morning —— he came here in the last Ship the Salamander —— most of the People that have died lately is from the flux —— the latter part of this day a good dele of Rain fell

**Munday 31st.**

Cloudy weather —— Wind S:W and b South —— no Surf on the Reef —— the following Convicts were Punished this morning Jno. Chapman [*] Morris and Heny. Humphries with 50 Lashes each for Disobedience of orders by going to Mount Pit for Young Birds —— Jno. Herbt. Keeling with 50 Lashes for Disobedience and contempt of Majr. Rosses positive orders to him not to come in to Camp —— Geoe. Wood with 90 and Heny. Flaxmore with a 100 Lashes For Repeatedly going to mount Pit Francis Folks confined in Irons by order of Majr. Ross for with holding from Majr. Ross some of the Books Respecting the Island which he had from Majr. Ross to Copy and for writing to Captain Collins a letter a Copy of which I found amongst his paper put a way in a Gardin Complaining to him and for him (Capttn. Collins) to Represent it to the Governor Accusing Majr. Ross of Cruilty, oppression and every Crime that is possible for man to be guilty off with Several other papers and Remarks on Majr. Rosses conduct as well as that of mine &c which Majr. [Ross] has now in his possession for which he intend to trie him at Port Jackson

† No reference is made to Wolrige in the letter to Campbell. See p305 infra. Nor does a letter of about this date appear in Clark's letter book.
NOV 1791

November Tuesday 1st.

Cloudy Weather and blows fresh from the S.West by South —— not much Surf on the Reef —— Thos. Hill Convict Confind in Irons for being concernd with Folks in Endeavouring to make the Convicts murmur and ther by inciting them to an insurrection —— in the course of last night ther was a very Small Shour —— cut down an Acre of Barley which is the only Barley that is in the Island and it is very fine indeed which Majr. Ross had Sown for himself

Wednesday 2d.

Cloudy weather and blows fresh from the S.Ward by South —— not much Surf —— a little before two oClock a Ship hove in Sight —— about a Quarter after four oClock Sent the Boat out to her with Serjt. Clayfield —— when the Boat went out a great Surf —— Saw the Boat get Save on board and Suppose from the boats not Returning they thought that there was to much Surf for the Boat to Land —— She Stood away to the Westward —— Suppose to See if ther was any Landing at Cascade Bay —— hope that we Shall be able to here from her to Morrow morning early

Thursday 3rd.

Fine weather but a good dele of Surf —— wind N:E: —— about 10 oClock last night Serjt. Clayfield Returnd from the Ship being landed a Cascade Bay from her and informed use that She was the Atlantic with Mr. King on board and that the Gorgon was at Port Jackson nearly Ready for Sea that this Ship was going after landing all the things She had on board to Culcuta for Provisions for the Settlement —— Mr. Bowen the Gentleman who brought my letters from my beloved is on board of this Ship that the Queen will come for use her in a few days to carry use back to Port Jackson —— She the Atlantic has brought a Captain Paterson (and Lady) of the N.S:Wales Corps who Remains her and Captain Hill Returns to Port Jackson in the Queen —— Mrs. Kings is also on board —— Received a few letters from home and one Captain Campbell for which letters See the letter Book —— there is also 29 Discharged Marines come in this Ship to Settle on this Island
Friday 4th.

Fine weather and no Surf — wind from the Northward — after Breakfast Captain King and Lady with Captain Paterson and Lady came on Shore — Mrs. King appears to be a Genteel woman not very pretty and Mrs. Paterson a good coasy Scott Lass and fit for a Soldiers wife — Empd. getting all the things on Shore from the Atlantic

Saturday 5th.

Fine Moderate Weather — Wind N:W: no Surf — Captain Paterson gave me a letter from my Beloved Alicia and for the care of which I am much obliged to him — Mr. Bowen came on Shore who I also thanked for the care he took of my letters from England — I asked him if there was any think that I had that would be of Service — he Said nothing but as he is going a long Voyage I sent him a Cask of Potatoes for Sea Stock — after dinner I walked out to Queensborough with Captain King, Major Ross, Lieuts Bowen and Rey the third Lieutenant of the Gorgon and the Revd. Mr. Johnson who Both return to Port Jackson in the Ship that Carries use — the[y] were all highly pleased with the place — the[y] could not be other wise for it is a very pretty place

Sunday 6th.

Fine Weather not much Surf — wind from the N:ward — the Atlantic in the Bay — the Revd. Mr. Johnston performed Divine Service both in the forenoon and afternoon — all the Troops in the Garrison present — the boats Empd. in bringing on Shore different things from the Ship — Mr. Johnston Baptize in here 31 Children

Munday 7th.

Blows fresh from the N:W: and a great Surf — the Atlantic in Sight — a good dele of Rain the latter part of this day

Tuesday 8th.

Squaly weather and in the Squales blows Remarkably hard and a very great Surf — Wind S:W: — the Atlantic came in
Sight in the Morning —— Majr. Ross and Mr. King had some words last night which is Settled to the Satisfaction of them both which I am heartly glad of —— begune Cutting down the Wheat on Ship Wreck hill to day and very fine wheat it is —— all the Small grain will Soon now be Ripe

**Wednesday 9th.**

Cold weather and blows now and has done all this last night Remarkably hard So much So that a great number of different Sea birds have been blown on Shore —— Some of them dead an great number with hardly any life in them as also the Sea has thrown on Shore Several fish —— the Sea is So much adgitated a Great Surf —— wind S:E:byS: —— the Atlantic in Cascade Bay —— no Boat came on Shore from her —— had Several words with Captain Hill Respecting a Quarrell which I had with him on his first arrival in this Island which was Settled again in the presence of Capt Paterson to the Satisfaction of use both

**Thursday 10th.**

Cold Cloudy Weather —— wind S:W: by South —— a great Surf Still —— the Queen Transport Ship arrived in the Bay —— made the Signal for Her to goe Round to Cascady Bay wher the Atlantic is as there is no landing her wher the Queen Landed Lieut Townson of the N:SW Corps and two other Gentlemen

**Friday 11th.**

Fine weather not much wind S:W: & by S: —— a good dele of Surf on the Reef —— about Nine oClock the two Ships came Round from Cascade —— Sent the Boat out to them —— Soon after made the Signal with a Gun for them to goe Round again to Cascade as the Boats could not land which they did —— Lieut Townson with the Detachment that brought with him came over from Cascade Bay —— by the Genl. order of this day Majr. Ross gives up the Command and Goverment of the Island to Lieut Govr. King to Morrow —— Lieut Bowen cald on me to take leave as he will Sail this Evening or to Morrow Morning early —— I wish him a good Voyage

**Saturday 12th.**
Foggy weather — a good dele of Surf at times — wind Southerly — the Queen landing things at Cascade Bay —
the Atlantic in Sight from Mount Pit — to Morrow Mr. Kings Commission is to be Read appointing him Lieut Govr. of this
Island

Sunday 13th.

Cloudy weather — not much wind nor Surf — wind Southerly — the Troops in Garrison attended Divine Service after
which we Marched to the front of Government House wher Mr. Kings Commission was Read in the presence of the Garrison
and the whole of the Inhabitance &c. on the Island — the Queen landing at Cascade
NB: all the Prisiners in Confinment of every description were Pardond at the Request of Majr. Ross

Munday 14th.

Cloudy weather blows fresh from the Southward no Surf — walked out to Queensborough to Show Mr. Grymes the Publick
and Private Ground out there — the Queen landing things at Cascade — a Serjt. and twelft Men of Capt Hill Compy.
Embark on board of the Queen to day

Tuesday 15th.

Cloudy weather and blows fresh from the Southward — a good dele of Surf — the Queen in Sight from Cascade —
the People delivering in ther Hogs who dont wish to keep them on the termes which they Received them from Government and
also to give up ther Acres if they dont like to keep them on the agreement of the 8 of Feby.

Wednesday 16th.

Fine weather wind N:W: no Surf — the Queen came in to the Bay and the old Coble came on shore from her — Sent her
off again — Captain Hill taken an unfair advantage of Majr. Ross by Examg. Convicts on Oath before the Revd. Mr.
Johnstone and Mr. Balmain who are prejudice like himself against Majr. Ross fore these Said Convicts there are not greater
Rascals under heaven than they are and would Sell there fathers life if the[y] could get any thing by it

Thursday 17th.

Sent a Sergeant with 12 of our men on to the Queen

Fine weather —— Wind S:E: at times a good dele of Surf —— the Queen in the Bay —— all the Boats carring our Baggage on board of her that are to Return to Pt. Jackson in her was Examined on Oath by Majr. Ross before Mr. Johnson and Balmain Respecting a Message which Mr. Hume Superintendant of the Convicts brought Some time back to Majr. Ross from Chas. Gray Convict which Message he Mr. Hume Said Majr. Ross forced him to Sign and Swear contary to his inclination and wish and that Mr. Faddy, Serjt. Kennedy and my Self were present when he was forced which he informed Captain Hill and Swore Yesterday in Court —— also that he was forced when Faddy, Serjt. Kennedy and my Self declared on Oath that he was not forced but on the Contrary was desired by Majr. Ross and myself repeatedly not to Sign or Swear to it if he did not like it or if there was any thing in it which was not as he had Related to Majr. Ross in the presence of Faddy and my Self —— he made answer to that there was not any thing containd but what he had Related and was perfectly Save in Signing it —— what a Rascal this Hume is

Friday 18th.

Fine weather almost Calm —— the little wind that there is is from the N:W: —— at times a very great Surf —— the Queen in the Bay —— the Boat Empd. as Yesterday when the Surf will permit them —— two of the convicts orderd to Receive 800 Lashes Each and [*] Resby who is out of his time refused to work order to have only three days Provisions and to be sent to Port Jackson for he wanted to Settle here which Mr. King will not Suffer him —— he was only Married Yesterday and Must leave his wife

Saterday 19th.

Squaly weather and blows hard from the Westward —— the Queen gone Round to Cascade Bay —— a great Sea Running a Tremendious Surf —— Mr. King orderd [*] to Punished with [*] Lashes for theft
* The gap of nearly seven weeks is partially explained here and on the next page. More information about this period may be gleaned from records relating to the “Queen” Transport (Richard Owen, Master) and HMS “Gorgon” (Captain Parker).
JAN 1792

Jany. 1792 Friday 6th.

Since the day before I left Norfolk have not been able to doe any thing to this from while on Board of the Queen I was Sea Sick the whole of the way from Norfolk to Port Jackson and the few days that I Remaind there was So Busy in getting the Accounts of the Men Settled that I had not time and Since I have been on Bd. of this the Gorgon have been Sea Sick ever Since we Sailed —— am thank God getting the Better of it —— we Sailed the 19 of Decr. and cald at Lord Howes Island to See if we could get any Turtle but got none —— we are now in Sight of New Zealand wher I wish we would Stop to get Some Water for I never in the whole course of my life was obliged to drink Such bad water as in on Bd. here —— I hope to god that we Shall not get Sickly by it for it is Realy very bad

The officers that are Embd. for a Passage in the Gorgon are: Majr. Ross Captns. Campbell, Meredith, Tench, 1st. Lts. Furzer, J. Johnston, Shearp, Clark, 2d. Lts. Dawes, Long, Faddy, Ross —— Lt. Young one of the agents with his wife and Lt. Blow a nother of the agents of Transports that Came out this last fleet

Saturday 7th.

Fine weather —— little wind but that fair —— this afternoon we were over Plymouth —— I wish to god that we were at it in the place of being where I am —— the land was in Sight this Morng.

Sunday 8th.

Fine Moderate weather and a fair wind thank god for it —— the Ships Compy. was Musterd to day —— Latt [*] Log [*]

Munday 9th.

Fine weather —— a Strong Breeze from the [*] which is a fair wind for use —— god Grant it may continue as long as we
want it —— Latt 36 Long. 179

**Wednesday 11th.**

was not out of my Bed all day Yesterday from a great Pain across my back —— not much better to day —— Still a fair wind much the Same as Yesterday —— Latt in 38–49 —— Long [*]

**Tuesday 24th.**

have not been able to put pen to paper Since the 11 Inst from a pain in the Small of my back and from a pain in my teeth was oblige to have it drawn out on Sunday last Since which time I am thank god better —— the pain in my back gone also and a fair wind which is another good thing —— our distance from Cape Horn is 8 Leagues which is Still a great dele

**Wednesday 25th.**

Fine weather but very Cold —— latt in [*] Longd. [*] —— distance from Cape Horn [*]

**Thursday 26th.**

Fine weather but much Colder than Yesterday and will find it more So as we get to the Southward —— went by the Log Since Yesterday twelf oClock [*] miles —— Latt in [*] Longe. [*] distance from Cape Horn [*]

**Friday 27th.**

Much the Same Kind of weather as Yesterday —— went by the Log this last twenty four hours [*] miles —— Latt [*] Long [*] distance from Cape Horn [*]

**Saterday 28th.**
Squaly weather — the wind fair — went by the Log [*] miles Since Yesterday twelf oClock — Latt [*] Long [*] Distance from Cape Horn [*] in the wind Continue as it has done this week past we will be Round Cape Horn in ten days

Sunday 29th.

Squaly weather and very Cold — went by the Log [*] miles — latt [*] Long [*] distance from Cape Horn [*]

Munday 30th.

Squaly weather and blows hard but the wind is fair — went by the Log [*] miles — latt [*] Long [*] — distance from Cape Horn [*]

Tuesday 31st.

Fine weather but very Cold — went by the Log [*] miles — Latt [*] Long [*] — Distance from Cape Horn [*] — hope to god this wind will continue — have got pains in my legs I hope it is not the Scurvy — Shall take every precautions to keep it from — Shall be very happy when we get to the Cape of Good Hope
FEB 1792

Feby Wednesday 1st.

fine weather but little wind and very Cold —— went by the Log this last twenty four hours 183 miles —— Latt [*] Long [*] Distance from Cape Horn 341 Leagues —— have had no Sleep this last night from the pains in my legs —— hope it is only Cold that I have caught and that it will goe of Soon

Thursday 2d.

Fine Moderate weather very little wind and that little against use —— Shall not have so many miles on the Log Board this last twenty four hours as we had the Day before —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Latt [*] Long [*] —— Distance from Cape Horn [*] Leagues —— the pains in my legs much the Same —— Shall drink every day two Quarts of the Issence of Malt for fear it Should be the Scurvy coming

Friday 3d.

Moderate and Clear weather —— Latt [*] Long [*] went by the Log the last twenty four hours [*] miles —— manny happy Returns of the day to my beloved Betsey

Saterday 4th.

Moderate weather and hazey with Rain —— latte in [*] Long [*] —— went by the Log this last 24 hours [*] miles

Sunday 5th.

Strong gales and hazy —— a heavy Sea Running from the Westward —— passed Some rock weed —— Several [boobies?]
and Land Birds about the Ship —— at about 11 oClock in the forenoon Saw the Land of Terra del Fuigo York Minster bearing NE by N: distant 7 or 8 Leags. —— Latt in [*] Long [*] —— [*] miles

**Munday 6th.**

Moderate and cloudy weather —— Latt in [*] Long [*] —— went by the Log [*] miles —— the Land in Sight Supposed to be cape Horn —— very cold —— the Hills in Shore coverd with Snow

**Tuesday 7th.**

Moderate and Clear weather —— the Land Still in Sight —— the later part of this day Rainy very Cold and the people getting Sickly

**Wednesday 8th.**

Cloudy weather and very cold —— passed some rock weed —— very cold indeed

**Thursday 9th.**

Moderate weather —— Remarkaby cold —— can hardly keep my self warm

**Friday 10th.**

Fine moderate weather and Cloudy —— very cold

**Saterday 11th.**

Moderate weather but at times Rain and very cold
**Sunday 12th.**

Moderate weather and Rain —— three white Birds lighted in the Mizen Top Sail Yard and was fired at and one of them was wounded and fell on the water —— hoisted out the Boat to pick it up —— the Sailors cals it a Snow Bird it is only wounded in the wing

**Munday 13th.**

Squaly weather and appears if it was inclinable to blow —— a great Quantity of Rock weed passed the Ship

**Tuesday 14th.**

Squaly weather and Remarkably cold and blows very hard —— a great number of Birds round the Ship

**Wednesday 15th.**

Squaly weather and very cold —— blows hard and a great Sea Running from the NNW.

**Thursday 16th.**

Squaly weather very cold —— Saw a Seal —— Some Rock weed passed the Ship —— a great number of Porpoisses and Birds about the Ship —— my feet and hands all over chill Blains from the cold

**Friday 17th.**

More Moderate than Yesterday but very cold

**Saterday 18th.**
Moderate and Cloudy —— Saw 29 Islands of Ice this day —— one of them was a large field of Ice from one Exstream to the other was 18 miles —— it came on to blow very hard towards Evening —— Remarkably cold —— Latt in [*] Long [*] went by the Log [*] miles —— Saw one Pintado Bird to day

Sunday 19th.

Blows Remarkably hard and a great Sea Running —— obliged to bring Too not able to carry Sail —— very Sea Sick —— no observation

Munday 20th.

Much the Same weather —— Laying Too not able to carry Sail it blows So very hard with a most tremendous Sea Running and the weather Remarkably cold

Tuesday 21st.

Blows Still very hard and a great Sea Running —— the Ship Still laying Too

Wednesday 22d.

More Moderate —— Made Sail —— this day departd this life Jude Dougherty one of the Marines wives —— She was only brought to bed two days before we Saild from Port Jackson —— She has left three young Children —— commited the Body to the Deep —— Saw Several Whales to day and a number of Birds Round the Ship —— went by the Log [*] miles

Thursday 23d.

Squaly with Rain —— Saw a number of Birds about the Ship —— Some Rock weed passed the Ship —— went by the Log 254 miles
Friday 24th.

Fresh gales and Cloudy with Rain —— the weather Still very cold —— the people beginning to get the Scurvy —— went by the Log 2[*] miles

Saturday 25th.

Cloudy weather —— I hope if this wind continues to be at the Cape of Good Hope in ten or twelf days —— not So cold as yesterday —— went by the Log [*] miles

Sunday 26th.

Squaly weather —— a number of Birds about the Ship —— went by the Log [*] miles

Monday 27th.

Moderate and Cloudy —— the people beginning to drop fast —— the weather beginning to grow much warmer —— went by the Log [*] miles

Tuesday 28th.

Moderate & Clear weather —— the weather growing warm Since we have got out of the Latte. of the Ice —— went by the Log 199 miles

Wednesday 29

Fine Moderate weather with a long Swell from the S:W: —— went by the Log [*] miles —— distance from the Cape of Good Hope [*] at this day noon
MAR 1792

March Thursday 1st.

Fine Moderate and pleasant weather — the Breeze Still continues fair — went by the Log [*] miles — distance to day at noon from the Cape of Good Hope [*]

Friday 2d.

Squaly weather and a good de le of Rain — a great number of Small Birds Round the Ship to day — went by the Log [*] miles — distance from the Cape of Good Hope [*]

Friday 2d.

Moderate Breezes with Small Rain — went by the Log [*] miles — having now made the Circle of the Globe which is being Returned to the Meridean of Greenwhich again therefore having gaind a day are obliged to drop it and in the Room of its being Saterday the 3d. it is only Friday the Second — if we did not drop a day the would be 32 days in this month — I hope to god the Breeze will not leave use as the people are getting very Sickly — from the C. of G. H. [*]

Saterday 3d.

Moderate Breezes with Rain — a number of different Kind of Sea Birds Round the Ship — went by the Log [*] miles — from the C. of G H [*]

Sunday 4th.

very little wind and inclinable to be Calm — went by the Log only [*] miles — distance from the C of G H [*]
Munday 5th.

little wind —— almost a Calm —— went by the Log only [*] miles

Tuesday 6th.

light Airs with Rain —— the Sick list increasing very fast —— hope to god we will get in to the Cape —— two good days Run would bring us there being only [*] miles from it —— went by the Log [*] miles

Wednesday 7th.

Cloudy weather little wind —— the Sea Smooth —— went by the Log only this last twenty four hours [*] miles —— between forty and fifty of the people very ill with Scurvy

Thursday 8th.

Strong Gales and Squaly with a heavy Swell —— hope this will bring us within Sight of the Cape of Good Hope in couple of days —— went by the Log 214 miles

Friday 9th.

Fine weather —— Still a good fair wind —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Saw Several Birds Round the Ship

Saterday 10th.

Moderate weather and warm —— hope if this Breeze continues to be in the Cape to Morrow

Sunday 11th.
almost a Calm and the Table land in Sight —— only for a little wind to carry use in

**Munday 12th.**

we came to an Ancher last night in here Table Bay Cape of Good Hope where Several Ships of different Nations are also at Anchor —— we Salluted the Fort which was Returned with the Same number of Guns from the Fort —— Captn. & Mrs. Parker, Majr. Ross, Captn. Campbell &c. &cc. went on Shore after Breakfast to wait on the Govr. —— when the Boats Returnd the Boat brought me a letter from my belovd which was left ther By the Pitt Eastindiaman who is gone on for Port Jackson for which I Return her the thanks of a fond husband —— all the Sick are to goe on Shore —— hope we Shall not Remain long here for I wish much to get home

**Tuesday 13th.**

Fine weather —— ane American Ship came into the Bay from Bengal bound to Ostend but is to call at Some Port in the Chanell to land ther Passangers and will Sail in the cours of this week —— I Shall write by her to my dear belovd as I think She will get gome Some Time before use —— Dawes brought me a Message on board from Coll. Gordon Saying that he wishes me to come on Shore as Soon as he can as he wishes to See me
APR 1792

April Friday 6th.

Fine weather but little wind for use to get out —— Since the 13 of last month untill this day have not been able to attend to this having mostly all that time been on Shore —— about four oClock this afternoon got under way —— Salluted the Fort which the Fort Returnd NB this afternoon a child belonging to Corpl. Bacon died —— it was ill on Shore

Saterday 7th.

Fine weather little wind —— the land in Sight

Sunday 8th.

Moderate weather a fine Breeze —— I am in hopes that I shall not be Sea Sick as I have not been Since we have come out this time

Munday 9

Fine weather and a charming Breeze —— went by the Log 175 miles

Tuesday 10

much the Same weather and wind as yesterday —— thank god for it —— hope we shall make but a Short Voyage —— went by the Log 185 miles

Wednesday 11
Charming weather and a fine wind —— went by the Log [*]

Thursday 12

Fine weather and a Charming Trade wind —— went by the Log [*] miles —— hope to See St Helena by Sunday afternoon —— a few of the Small Black Pettrals round the Ship

Friday 13th.

Fine Moderate weather much the Same Kind of weather as Yesterday —— oh how I long to get Home —— I hope that I Shall be there by the 23 of June —— went by the Log [*] miles

Saturday 14th.

Moderate weather —— almost a Calm —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Latt in 21–31 South

Sunday 15th.

Fine moderate weather —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Latt in 20–19 South —— Fish about the Ship

Munday 16th.

Cloudy weather —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Latt in Latt 18–37 South —— distance from St. Helena by the Time Keeper 87 Leags. Tuesday’ 17th.

Cloudy weather very warm —— a fine fair wind† —— not think So much of the Heat —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Latt in 16 —— South —— if the wind continues Shall See the Island of St Helena to morrow morning

Wednesday 18th.
Fine Moderate weather — the Island of St Helena in Sight — about 8 oClock was close in with it — Saw three Ships laying in the Road — I am very glad we did not come to an anchor her for it would have been loosing So much time — from the Ship the Island appears nothing but a barren Rock worse than any part of New South Wales —— about 11 oClock lost Sight of the Land again —— we intend to Stop at the Island a Assention to endeavour to get Some Turtle but I hope we will not throw away any time for I wish every day more and more to get home —— Latt in by observation 13 —— [*] South

Thursday 19

Fine Moderate clear weather — a great number of Flying fish round the Ship to day —— Latt in 13–48 South —— went by the Log 123 miles

Friday 20th.

Fine weather — a great number of Flying fish round the Ship —— Faddy caught a Banotoe last night which is the first that has been caught Since we are come into the lattitudes of them —— Latt in [*] South —— went by the Log [*] miles

Saturday 21st.

Fine moderate weather — this is the most pleasing Sailing that I ever had Running down the Treads* and every hour bringing near home —— I hope that we Shall carry this Breeze across the Line with use —— a great number of albacors round the Ship and also Flying fish —— Latt in 10–10 S

Sunday 22d.

Fine moderate weather but very hott to day and at night below on the lower Gun deck there is hardly any living for the heat —— Latt [*] went by the Log [*] miles —— a great number of Porpoisses

Munday 23d.
Fine Moderate weather —— the Island of Assention in Sight —— at 11 oClock came to ane anchor in the Road where we found riding ane American Schooner from the Island of St Helena last bound to the West Indies —— had been here only three days —— She had got about 20 Turtle —— before dinner Sent two Boats on Shore to land the people that were to turn the Turtle when the[y] came on Shore in the night —— after dinner I went with two boats to a nother part of the Island where I hauld the Boats up and divid the people in two parties —— the party that I keep with me turnd only one but the other party turnd five —— I did not See on the whole Island a Single Vegetation —— there are goats on the Island but I did not See any —— we Caught a great number of different Kinds a Sea Birds —— the Island is about 20 miles round and hight but it is nothing but a Sinder having being destroyed with fire —— the Party that went with Lieuts Gordin, Rey, Long and Faddy I found had Turnd nine —— returnd on board with our Turtle a little before dinner —— made a Complaint to Captain Parker of Mr. Analby the Midshipman that went with me for being beastly drunk and impertinent —— this afternoon the other of the twins of Corpo. Bacon died —— Several more of the young children will I am affraid will die —— Fine moderate weather —— have got a cold from Sleeping on the Ground last night

Wednesday 25th.

Fine weather —— this morning the Youngest child died of Serjt. Devan —— after breackfast got under way —— this is I hope the last place we shall Stop at untill we arrive in England —— I wish to God we were got there once

Thursday 26th.

Fine weather —— this day the Youngest child of Serjt. Gelbourn died —— I am very sorry for poor little John he was a fine child —— this Hott weather is playing the devil with the children —— down here it is at Hott as Hell —— I wish to god we had got 20 degrees the other side of the line —— Latt in 6–13 South

Friday 27th.

Fine weather —— a little Breeze but very Hott —— Latt in 4–47 South
Saterday 28

Fine Moderate weather —— as hot as Hell below —— I hope if this little good Breeze continues that we will be out of the Southering Part of the World into that that my loves lives in —— Latt in 3–26 South

Sunday 29th.

Fine Moderate weather —— it Raind very hard in the night —— Latt in 2–10 South —— number of Flying fish round the Ship —— very Hott all last night and is not at hot as it well can be —— the latter part of this day Calm and a great dele of Rain

Munday 30

Calm —— hope to God it will not Remain So long —— Latt in 1–14 South

* Clark has written “Thursday”.

† Not clear. Some of this entry is barely legible.

* “Trades”, that is, the Trade winds.
MAY 1792

May Tuesday 1

a Light Air —— the child of [*] Mapp died in the night and the body of it was committed to the deep this afternoon at four oClock —— two Sharks were caught the morning —— in the Belly of one of the them was found a Prayer Book Quite fresh not a leaf of it defaced on one of the leaves was wrote Francis Carthy* cast for death in the Year 1786 and Repreaved the Same day at four oClock in the afternoon —— as the book was Seemed Quite fresh I think Some Ship must be near use now going out to Botany Bay —— Latt in to day by observation 31 miles South from the line —— hope that we shall be in the Same Side of the world that my Betsey is in before twelve oClock at night —— great numbers of Porpoises round the Ship

Wednesday 2

Fine moderate weather —— a little Breeze from the Eastward —— this morning at a little after Six past the line —— thank God I am onc more the Same Hemispher with my Betsey —— latd. in 0–33 miles North from the line —— this day about twelve oClock the Younger boy of Serjt. Devans died —— I made the mistake of Serjt. Devans younger child diying on the 25 of last month —— it was the Second Child of theres the one that died to day was the Youngest —— the children are going very fast —— the hot weather is the reason of it

Thursday 3

Fine weather —— a gentle Breeze —— Lattd. in 1–40 No. —— Poor Gelbourn is very ill

Friday 4

Squaly weather with a great dele of Rain —— last night the Youngest child of Jno. Turner Private marine died last night and the body was committed to the deep
Saterday 5

all last night Squaly with very hard Rain the whole night and the greatest part of this morning — very hot Sultry weather — I wish to god we would get the N:E: Trade — Latd. in 4–38 No.

Sunday 6th.

Squaly weather with a great dele of Rain all this day — last night the child beloning to Mary Broad the convict woman who went a way in the fishing Boat from P. Jackson last Year died about four oClock committed the Body to the deep — Latd. 5–25 No.

Munday 7th.

Calm and very hot — Several Sharks round the Ship — Latd. in 5–32 No.

Tuesday 8

Light airs from the Eastward — at nine oClock last night Spoke a Ship the Prince William Henry from Portsmouth to the Coast of Brazil a Whaling — Saild from Portsmouth the 6 of April and all was Quite — She left at the Mother Bank two Ships bound for Botany Bay with Convicts on board — we Sent a boat on Board of Her and gave them a Turtle in Return they gave use a two three newspaper where in I Saw that a fire had destroyed nearly the whole of Mr. Dunstervils Black House to the amount of 7000£ — they further informed use that the Supply was not arrived nor Captain Hunter with his people when She Saild

Wednesday 9

a fine fresh Trade — this will Soon run use home — a great number of fish round the Ship struck five and caught them with the grains — Latd. in 6–19 No. — many Birds round the Ship
Thursday 10

a fine Breeze —— long may it continue So —— a great number of fish round the Ship —— Latt in 8–47 No.

Friday 11

Blows fresh at times but it is a fine wind —— I hope to be home by the Kings Birth day —— I wish we may be obliged to put into Plymouth —— Latd. in 10–49 No. —— Spoke a Brigg an American cald the Betsey of Providence out 35 days bound to Bengal

Saturday 12

much the Same weather as Yesterday —— went by the Log [*] miles —— Latt in 12–48 No.

Sunday 13

Still the Same kind of wind and weather as Yesterday —— Latd. in 15:11 No. —— this day five Years we Saild from England to Botany Bay

Munday 14

Fine weather the Same as Yesterday —— Latd. in 17–52 No. —— this forenoon Mrs. Stuart wife of Serjt. Stuart was brought to bed of a Girl —— the mother and child are both very well

Thursday 15

Fine moderate weather —— Some Gulf weed past the Ship —— Latd. in 26–26 No.

Wednesday 16
Squaly weather — no observation to day

Thursday 17
Fine moderate and Clear weather — Past a great Quantity of Gulf weed — Latd. in 25.26 — Longd. in 35–06 West

Friday 18
Moderate and Clear weather inclinable to Calm — Latd. in 27.26 No. — Longd. in 35.55 W

Saterday 19
Light Airs almost a Calm — departed this life Mary Hume daughter of Serjt. Hume the only child and was a fine Girl of her age about 3 Years — Latd. in 27–52

Sunday 20
Calm — no wind — Latd. in 28–04 No.

Munday 21
Calm — I wish to God that a Breeze would Spring up — Latd. in 28–00 No. — we have being going back again four miles

Tuesday 22d.
Calm — have been dead with Tooth aick — had it drawn out to day

Wednesday 23
Calm —— ill with a Sweld face

Thursday 24

Calm —— Still a Sweld face —— much better than Yesterday

Friday 25th.

Light airs —— Latd. in 29–39 North

Saturday 26th.

Light airs —— Latd. in 30–47

Sunday 27

little wind —— I wish to Christ a Breeze would Spring up and let use get home —— Latd. 32–13

Monday 28th.

Light airs at times Calm —— Eight large Albicors round the Ship all this day —— Saw also a whale and two Birds —— Latd. in 33–13

Tuesday 29

a Gentle Breeze from the Southward —— Latd. in 34–10 No. —— I hope to God we shall be in England this day forthnight

Wednesday 30th.
a Gentle Breeze from the S:S:W: —— Latd. in 35:35 No. —— Past a Sail this morning early —— She Seemed Standing to the S:E: —— She was to fare to goe that much out of our way to Speak her —— Past Some Plank like the wreck of a Ship

Thursday 31

Moderate Weather —— Latd. in 37–38 No. —— again Passed Some wreck —— departed this life [*] Buckley Boswains mate of the Sirius —— I am Sorry for Poor Buckley althought he was a great Black Guard

* Francis Carty, convict, sailed with the First Fleet aboard “Scarborough”.
JUNE 1792

June Friday 1

Moderate weather —— Latd. in 39–21 No. —— saw the Island of Corva one of the Western Islands —— a fine Breeze —— if this wind continues I hope to be home about the 10 or 12 of this month

Saterday 2d.

Cloudy weather with a fresh Breeze from the S.E. —— Saw a Strang Sail —— She Showed dutch Colours —— Latd. in this day [*] —— the Youngest Boy of Serjt. Perry died a little before Sun Set —— committd the Body to the deep

Sunday 3d.

Moderate and Cloudy weather —— wind S:E: —— Saw a Sail —— Latd. in 44.13 No.

Munday 4th.

Light airs and Cloudy —— wind from the N:E: —— two Strang Sails in Sight —— Latd. in 46–16 No.

Tuesday 5th.

Light airs and Cloudy —— wind S:E: —— Saw a Sail in the S:E: Quarter —— Latd. in 46–00 No.

Wednesday 6th.

Light airs and hazey weather —— wind S:E: —— Saw a Strang Sail in the S:E: Quarter —— Latd. in 47.10
Thursday 7

Fresh Breezes and Cloudy with flying Shours —— a Sail in Sight —— thank god we are drawing So near home —— Latd. in 48.44

Friday 8

Cloudy weather —— at time Slight Showers —— the wind is come right in our teeth and Seems inclinable to continue So

Saturday 9

mostly cloudy wett weather —— the wind the Same as Yesterday —— if this wind continues a few days longer we shall be out of all Provisions being now So near home and the wind to come against Use —— little dose the gods know how much I long to get home otherwise they would take compassion on me and Send a fair wind to bring me to all that my heart holds dear on earth

Sunday 10

Cloudy weather and Blows fresh from the S:E: and a great Sea

Munday 11

Haze weather with a fresh Breeze from the N:E:

Tuesday 12

Squaly weather with Rain —— very cold —— not So much Sea yesterday and the day before

Wednesday 13
Moderate weather —— Saw two Strange Sails —— a boat came on board from one of them —— found her to be the Nancy of Dover —— She gave use very little news —— She could not inform use if the Supply was arrived or not

Thursday 14

Moderate weather —— little wind from the S:E:

Friday 15

Fresh Breezes and Raining weather —— Several Sails in Sight —— Spoke the Tobola Planter from Jamaica bound to London out Seven weeks

Saturday 16

Squaly weather with Rain —— Several Sails in Sight

Sunday 17

Fine moderate weather —— Several fishing Boats in Sight —— Spoke the Scarce frigate on a Cruse who informs use that the Supply was arrived and paid off —— thank God then my B... has got my letters which I sent by her —— Several Sails in Sight —— I wish god that the wind would come foul then we might goe in to Plymouth but there is no hopes of that
PART THREE LETTERBOOK
Letters

Clark to Capt. Phillips

Friendship Transport
Mothr. Bank Portsmh
April the 3rd. 1787
Sir,

Being one of the officers of the Detachment of Marines going to Botany Bay under your Command I will be much obliged to you to inform me if you have any objections or if ther is any impropriety for me to take my family out with me at present —— I doe not wish to put any person on board to any inconvenicy if the favour that I ask, You are So good to grant I am Sir with the greatest Respect
Your Most obdt. Humble
Servt. Ralph Clark
Lieut. Mars.
To Capt. Phillips
No. 6 Suffolk Street
Hay Market

Phillip to Clark

London
10th. April 1787
Sir,
I have this Morning Seen the Secretary of State & mentioned Your wish of carrying out Mrs. Clark which cannot be granted
I am Sir
Your obedient
Humble Servant.
A Phillip
Lieut. Ralph Clark

Clark to Capt. A Phillips

Friendship Transport
Portsmouth
April the 12/87
Sir,

I Received the favour of yours Yesterday, informing me that my wish could not be granted of carrying Mrs. Clark out with me —— I Return you my most Sinceer thanks for the trouble you have been at by applying to the Secretary of State for that purpose but cannot help Mention that I think it a great hardship in being debard So Small a favour when the Clergyman and every Private Man has that indulgance granted them if the[y] wish to carry ther wives and familys out with them, after which Sir You cannot help thinking other ways than as I doe —— I did not apply without Majr. Rosses approbation and if the favour had being granted I should not have made any application to have my wife and child Vitald if it had not being offerd me.

I am Sir withe the greatest Respect and wish for your health and Long life.

Sir
Your Most obedient
Humble Servant
Ralph Clark
Lieut Mars.
Capt. A Phillips

Phillip to Clark

London
13th. April 1787
Sir

Your request depended on the Minister & if Lord Sydney had consented I Certainly should not have made any objections as it is I think when you reflect on the many inconveniences that must have attended it you will be satisfyed of the propriety of the Refusal.

When the settlement is made I make no doubt but Government will provided for the Passage of those officers wives who wish to join the Garrison.

I am Sir
Your most
Obedient Humble
Servant
A Phillip
Lieut R. Clark

Howe to Clark

Admiralty
16 April 1787
Sir

As the Service on which you were desirious of being Employed will probably Require as much attention to the military Duties of your profession as could be needful in time of War I conclude that Reflection will not fail of Suggesting to you, the perfect inexpediency of being Engaged in the concerns of a Domestic Nature which you would propose if it were dependant on my Authority to comply with the Request in your Letter of the 10 Instant

I am Sir
Your Humble Servt.
Howe
Lieut R Clark of Marines

Clark to Service
Friendship Transport
Apl. the 16, 1787

sir

I will be greatly obliged to you if my application meets with your approbation and the Service will permit my absents to apply to my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty for ten days leave to goe to Plymouth to Settle my Private affairs Occasioned by the Secretary of State not permitting me to take my family out.

I am Sir with the greatest Respect

Sir

Your most obedient

Humble Servant

Ralph Clark

Lieut Mars.
on H.M. Service

Majr. R. Ross Marines

Clark to Phillip

Friendship Transport
Apl. 16/87

Sir

Your Letter of the 13th. inst. has fully opend my eyes to the propriety of the Secretary of States Refusal —— if it is not encroaching too much on your goodness to be so good, if my application meets with your approbation & the Service will permitt my absents to apply to my Lord Commissioner of the Admiralty for there Leave of Absents for ten days to goe to Plymouth to Settle my Private affairs which want my attendance much Occasioned by Mrs. Clark not being permitted to goe out with me —— there will Still be one Capt. and one Subt. on board with the Detachment if the Leave Should be granted and Shall not fail of being back to my Duty at the Exparation of time.

I am Sir with the greatest Respect
Sir
Your Most
obedient Humble
Servant
Ralph Clark
Lieut Mars.
To Capt. A Phillip

Phillip to Clark

London
April 17th. 1787
Sir,
As I expect to be at Portsmh. from day to day, the Leave of Absents you Request cannot possible be granted & I hope it will not anyways injure your Private affairs —— a Request of this kind to me Should me should have been thro' Major Ross as the Commanding officer of the detachment, but as present it is not possible you should Succeed and it would therefore be only giving yourself Unnecessary trouble, for I hope we shall Sail very shortly
I am Sir
Your Humble Servant
A Phillip
Lieut Clark

Kempster to Clark

Stone House
Thursday Evening
[April the 19th, 1787]
Dear Clark
Be assured I am not the less your friend for not regularly answering Your Letters —— I consider them as almost an extravagance to you but am and shall ever be happy to hear from you —— what I mean by Extravagance is on the part of people writing without having any thing useful, novel or instructive to communicate and now to comply with your Request Relating to Lord Sydney —— I do not approve of your writing to him and still less to Commodore Phillips which Mrs. Clark tells me you talk off, consider my friend if ever it comes to Majr. Rosses ear that you have writting he will be your enemy and you must see the imprudence of being on ill terms with a man who will have it so much in his power to be disagreeable if offended and that he cannot fail of being, as he first mentioned the unwillingness of the Lords of the Admiralty to allow officers wives or Familys to goe out —— on the other hand, I think you were wrong to revive those hopes in the bosom of your wife which Surely if you Reflected Seriously on the Subject you could not wish Realized —— consider the many ill conveniences to which she would be exposed by going out at this time —— picture to your self a woman to whome you are attached by the most tender ties attacked by Sickness, and when arrived at the place of your destination not a hospitals roof to Shelter her or any provision made for her refreshment nor a Single female to exert herself in the friendly officis of humanity a Sick female Stands in So much need of —— I trust it will be unnecessary for me to say more —— you must see the impropriety of it and I am confident it was Suggested by your affection and Strengthened by your unhappiness in not having it in your power to leave Mrs. C: with a better provision but I am Sure your cool judgement will induce you to lay aside all thoughts of a further application.

Charles Reynolds wrot to the Admiralty and got his Answer to day that an officer was appointed, Quarters are very dull —— Mrs. Crozier is come down and they are in Flemings Lodgings —— My Mother and Mrs. K: join me in good wishes.

Dear Clark
Your Sinceer friend
G. Kempster

Clark to Shortland

Friendship Transport
April the 21st 1787
Sir

It is now a month Since the first application was made to you, by the Master of the Ship, for being Supplyd with the Cotts
alloted by Government for the Use of the officers of the Detachment —— as the officers on board the other Transports have being Supplyd with them by you for some time past, beg to have your Answer by Return what day we may Expect them —— as I cannot think of Remaining any longer without them therfor Shall make my application to the Admiralty for them if we are not Supplyd in the course of two or three day at most.

I am Sir
Your Obedt. Servt.
R. Clark
Lieut Mar.
To Lieut Shortland

Clark to Kempster

Friendship
April the 23rd. 1787
Dear Kempster

On the other Side you will See the first letter that I Received from Capt. Phillip which I will be so good as to give it to Mrs. Clark —— there is no news here nor no account when we shall sail —— the Commandor was Expected down Yesterday, cannot inform you if he is or not —— I had a letter from him a few days Since informing that we should sail very shortly —— I sent Mrs. C to day also a letter which I had from him —— we are very well & healthy on board —— I wish I could say the same of the Rest of the Transports —— Ross offerd me Private leave for ten day which I am certain you will say that I was in the Right not to accept on account of the exspence —— make my best Respects to Mrs. K and your Mother and am

Your Most Sinceer
friend
R: Clark

PS. 2d. Lieut Dawe is on board the Commd. ship by order of the Admlty.
To Lieut Kempster

Clark to Revd. Mr. Johnson
Friendship Transport
Munday Eveng.
[23rd April, 1787.]
Sir
The Surgeon has Represent to me that one of the Convict children will not live untill the morning the Same not having been Christened —— have to beg of you to be so good as to come on board and Battize it as I think it my duty to inform you.
I am Sir
Your Most
Obedient Servt.
R: Clark
Lieut. Mars.
On Service
To the
Revd. Mr. Johnson
Alexander

Clark to Hunter

Friendship Transport
emsp;Motr. Bank
Apl. the 24/87
Sir
I here with inclose you, According to Major Rosses orders of Yesterday, the Letters from the Convicts on board here, to there friends
I am Sir
Your Most obedt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
Clark to Hunter

Friendship Transport
Apl. 24, 1787
Sir
The enclosed I have this moment taking from one of the Seamen belonging to the Transport, without there is an order to the Master of the Ship to prevent the Seamen bringing or taking Letters on board to the Convicts, it will be impossible to put Major Rosses orders of Yesterday So Effectively in Execution
I am Sir
Your Most
Obedt. Humble Servt.
Ralph Clark
Lieut Mars.
On Service
Capt. Hunter
M: S: Sirius

Clark to Hunter

Friendship Transport
Apl. 24, 1787
Sir
I here enclose you, five Letters which the post man has brought on board for the Convicts
I am Sir
Your Most obedient Servant
Ralph Clark
Lieut Mars.
on Service
To Capt. Hunter
M: S: Sirius

Clark to Shortland

Friendship Transport
Apl. 24, 1787
Sir I want to send ane officer on His Majs. Service to Capt. Hunter on board the Sirius —— I beg you will order a Boat for that purpose as I cannot have seamen on Board here to goe in the Boat and the duty of the Ship will not permit me to Send marines on that Service
I am Sir
Your Most Obedient Humble Servt
R. Clark
Lieut Mars.
on Service
To Lieut Shortland
Agent of Transports

Clark to Kempster
Friendship
friday Morning
[April the 27th, 1787]
Dear Kempster,

You will greatly oblige me to Send the enclosed to Mrs. Clark by one of the Marines as Soon as possible —— we Shall not Sail by all Accounts this month yet the Commd. is not yet come down —— Excuse the Shortness of this —— my best wishes to Mrs. K and your Mother

Very Sincerely Yours
R. Clark

Clark to Bedlake

Friendship Transport
May the 10/87
Dr. Sir

[Directed] by friendship cannot think of leaving England without returning you and Mrs. Bedlake my most Sinceer thanks for your kind attention and repeated marks of of friendship to Mrs. Clark and Son —— Believe me dr. Sir few thing are predominant with me than to here of the health and welfare of you and family & Shall alwayse be happy to hear from you, hope you will favour me every opportunity that offers with a few lines —— we Shall Sail from this to morrow if the wind remains in the Same Quarter as it is at present but I am Exceedingly Sorrow to Say that the detachment on board here and more so on board the other Transports doe not goe out with that Spirrit that was Expected the[y] would when they turmd and Volunteer for this Service and I am certain you will think as I doe that the officers and men have great cause to murmore when I inform you that Major Ross has informd use that we are not to be supplyd after our landing at Botany Bay any Spirrits or wine of any Kind which is a very great hardship on use all to have nothing but water to drink for four Years —— ther is ane express gone to the Admlty. with the complaint of use all of the hardships that we Shall lay under if ther is not Spirits of some kind Supplyd —— ther is also ane order this moment come on board from the Commd. for all dogs to be relanded beloning to the men and officers althou he himself carrys out between thirty and forty —— our Ship is very healthy I wish I could Say the Same of the rest of the
Transports —— will thank you to make my best wishes and Comps. to Mrs. Bedlake and inform Kempster, Reynolds and Mrs. Clark that I have wrot by this post —— must conclude.

remain with hearty wishes for your health and welfare

Your Sincere friend
Ralph Clark
Lieut Rs. Bedlake
Marines
Groves
Plymh.

Clark to Hartwell

Friendship Transport
June the 10, 1787
Dear Sir
As we Sail to day for South America I have sent you these few lines Accd. to promise to enable you to Receive my [Subs]* from the date here off —— have no news to inform you —— the whole fleet is remarkable healthy as is your very much obliged
Humble Servt.
Ralph Clark
To B. Hartwell Esqr.

* See letter of November 8 p.257 infra.

Clark to Kempster

[September the 3rd, 1787]
Dr. Kempster
with the Sincerest pleasure I sit down to writ you my friend and to inform you that I am in and have been every Since I left England in great good health (a little Sea Sickness excepted) but what would add a great dele of happiness to the good health that I enjoy that if I could heer that you and your good family are the same but I trust in god that this will find you all in that State —— we arrived heer in company with all the fleet the 5 of Last month after a long & tedious passaged of eight weeks from Teneriff and which make it also very uncomfortable was (although we had the finest weather that ever a fleet had) the very Small allowance of Water the officers' Seamen, Marines and Convicts was put on of three Pursers pints a head in the 24 hours Scarce a Sufficiency to wett our Tongues in So hott a climat as it was but Blessed be to god we found no bad Effects from it for we are and have been Exceedingly healthy all the way having only Burried one male convict who was at deaths door before he came on board of use —— the whole fleet has been very healthy (the Alexander Excepted) who has Burried 28 —— I am happy to Say that the detachment has not lost a Single man —— we Shall Sail from this place to Morrow for the Cape of Good hope which will I Believe be the last place we shall call at untill we Arrive at Botany Bay wher I wish to god we wair once got and the three Years over for I never was So Sick of any thing in my life as I am of this expedition for the many Melancholy hours that I every day spend when I am by myself that I am some times So low when my Mess mates comes down from walking the deck when he asks me any thing that I am not able to give them ane Answer for Kempster ther is Some thing foretells me that my Betsey or my Boy Are no more, oh that I could but heer from her, I should then be the most happiest man on earth but I have one favour to beg of You my dr. friend which is (that if my imagination Respectin Mrs. Clark or Ralph should only proved of not been able to heer from her as often as I use to when at the Mother Bank) that should she have any thought of coming out to me doe persuad her from it as much as possible you can for I meen and am Resolved to Return home the first Relieve (if I live So long) for I cannot think of my Betsey coming throu so many dangers and difficultys as must attend her should she attemp it —— I have wrot her by the Same Conveyance that this goes and have beg of her not to think of coming —— from the appearance we will I can see if promotion will goe in the detachment by the Vacancy that may happen in it, for poor Capt. Campble is by the doctors Account not long for this World if he dose not Return home which I Believe he intends to doe when we arrive at the Cap of Good hope if he lives So long which is a very great chance against him then ther is old Maxwell who is drinking himself to death as fast a he well can —— Majr. Ross went on board of him a few days past to see if he would get him to change into the Charlott with Capt. Tench to see if he could reform him which M. Refused to doe —— Ross then desired him to goe home which he also Refused I think he had Better take cear and not play too much with Ross and the Comdr. (who is a very good man) —— I hope to have a letter from you at the cape when we get ther and must beg of You to write me every time
that Ships Sail from England to Botany also by every East indiaman and direct them to be left at the Cape to the ceart of Robt. Gordon Esqr. Commandant of the Cape of good hope, as he will take ceart of them for me for ther will be Ships comming up from Botany bay every two months to bring things from thence to the Settlement Stock and other things —— I will also thank you for your old Newspaper the[y] will doe to pass a way the long and tedious hours which I am affraid I will have many of while at Botany —— I shall write you by the first Ship that Sails from the Cape or from the first other place that we may call at —— will thank you to inform my Betsey that I have wrot her by this opportunity for fear She Should not Receive it and I Remain with the Sinceerest wishes for the health and welfare of you and your good family —— make my best wishes to Mrs. K: and Mother and a thousand kisses to the little ones —— Compt. also to Bedlake and his good woman and am Your Very Sinceer and Affectioned friend

Ralph Clark

I have Sent Reynolds a few lines also from this
Remember me to all inquiring friends at Quarters

Clark to Meredith

Friendship Transport
Octr. 15th. 1787
Sir
From the Publick Accusation of Lieut Faddy last night to You, of my behaving unbecoming the character of ane officer and Gentleman therfor in Justice to my Brother officers the Corps and Self I cannot think of doing duty as one of the officers beloning to the detachment untill my character and conduct as ane officer and and Gentleman has been investigated by a General Court Martial, I therfor beg of You, Sir to be so good as to apply for the Same on me and Shall consider myself as a Prisoner untill the Judgment of the above Court Martial is Known

I am Sir
Your Most Obdt.
Humble Servt.
Ralph Clark
on Service
To Capt Lieut Jas. Meridith
Marines
Friendship Transport

Clark to Lieut and Adjt. Long Marines

Friendship Transport
Octr. the 15/87
Sir
I will be greatly obliged to You when Ever it is the Commanding Officers Pleasure to order the officers to assemble to enquir into the Grounds of my letter to Capt. Lieut Jas. Meredith of this day's date, to be so good also (with the Commanding officers permission) to order the undermentioned officers and Privates to attend at the same time
I am Sir
Your Most
Obdt. Humble Servt.
Ralph Clark
Capt. Lieut Jas. Meredith
1st. Lieut Robt. Kellow
1st. Lieut Thos. Davey
Marines
Mr. Consident
Mr. Arundell
Assistant Surgeon
Mr. Tholman
Scarborough
Willm. Godfrey
John Roberts  
Willm. Hughes  
Thos. Chipp  
Marines Friendship  
Willm. Hurn  
Stuart of the Friendship  
To  
Lieut & Adjt. Long Marines  
on H: M: Service    M: S: Sirius

Clark to Ross

Friendship Transport  
Oct. the 25, 1787  
Table Bay  
Cape of Good Hope  
Sir  
The four undermentioned names are those of the women convicts that have children on board here  
I am Sir  
Your Most Obdt. Servt  
Ralph Clark  
Lieut Mars.

Woman Names  Children Names  
Susanah Smith  Willm. Smith  
Elizabeth Pugh  Nancy Pugh  
Jane Parkenson  Edwd. Hughes  
Susanah Holms  Heny. Keable
To Majr. Ross on board
    H: M: Shipp Sirius
    on Service

Clark to Gordon

    Lieut Clark Compt. & best Respect to Coll: Gordon, hope the Badness of the weather Yesterday will apology for my not
    waiting on You According to promise.
    Friendship Transport
    Wednesday Morng. Octr. the 31/87
To Coll: Gordon
    Citidal Good Hope

Clark to Ross

    Friendship
    Novr. the 4, 1787
    Sir,
    As I am Quit a Stranger here and I wish to draw for a small Sume before we Sail, I shall be greatly obliged to you to put me in
    a Method where I can draw for it
    I am Sir
    Your Very Obliged
    and Humble Servt.
    Ralph Clark
To Majr. Ross

Clark to Kempster
Friendship Transport  
Cape of good Hope  
Novr. the 4, 1787  
Dear Kempster  

In the first place you must forgive the shortness of this letter, as I have but just time to say that I am in great good health —— you will say why so short a letter the reason is that I did not know that there was any ship to sail from or near this place to Europe but a friend of mine (Coll: Gordon) has sent me off word that a ship is to sail tomorrow morning from Sardinia Bay, about 40 miles from this —— the comr. has also sent word whose boat is now waiting for this —— we arrived here the 13th. of last month in company with all the fleet after a very fine passaged of five weeks and five days —— we buried only one child belonging to one of the convicts —— we are and have been remarkable healthy —— I was in hopes to have had a letter from you by the ranger packet which put in here for water from Falmouth in August last bound to Bengal in my next which will be in a few days, I will give you all the news, creswell and pouldon are removed into the prince of wales in the room of Maxwell and timmins —— I can inform you for certain that Maxwell is not to land at botany bay but to come home on the first transport or ship that goes from ther —— the quarter master is removed into the Alexander and ordered to take the command of the detachment on board there —— I must conclude otherwise shall not be able to send it so god bless you —— my best wishes to both Mrs. Kempster, Mr. & Mrs. Bedlake and all friends  
am yours very sincerely  
Ralph Clark  
Tell my Betsey that I have sent her also a few lines by the same conveyance which I hope she will receive so adieu

Clark to Hartwell

Friendship Transport  
Cape of good Hope  
Novr. the 8, 1787  
Dr. Sir  

I wrot you a few lines from Teneriff and should have done the same from Rio de Janario but as the returns would come to
the Division as Soon, as my letter to you which would answer the same, to aneabl e You to Receive from the Pay Master, my
Subs. untill the date of the Said Returns, is my Reason for not writing you from there,
we arrived here in company with the whole fleet, the 13th. of last month, after a very fine Passaged of five weeks and five
days from’ we have been Remarkable healthy on board this Ship and are still having only lost one Male convict and a Young
child beloning to one of the female dito Since leaving the mother Bank —— the whole fleet has been in short much more
healthier than was or could have been Expected from the different climateds that the[y] have come throu having in the whole
only Burried between thirty and forty, out of which thank God not a Single Marine —— we shall sail from appearences in Eight
or ten days at farthest from this as the Cattle and stock for the use of the Settlement is putting on board the different Ships.
I shall I Believe have Occation to draw on You before I leave this, for about five Pounds, which if I should you will be so
good as to honour my draft, when it is presented to you for payment —— I must also beg of you not to fail to pay my Insurance
at the time appointed —— also to be so good as to send me by the first ship for Botany Bay Your Account and any news that
you will favour me with —— I have wrot Mrs. Clark by this conveyance (a ship bound to Lisbon)
Capt. Shea, Lieuts. Kellow and Pouldon are all very well and join with me in wishing You health and welfare and am Dr. Sir
Your Most Obdt.
& Humble Servt.
Ralph Clark
P:S: I hope the News that the Ranger Packet (which Sail from Falmouth in Augst. last for Bengall which has put in heer for
water) is true that of a War
To
Brod. Hartwell Esqr.
Georges Street
Plymh. Dock
Devon

* Rio de Janeiro

Clark to Kempster
Friendship Transport  
Cape of good Hope  
Novr. the 8, 1787  
Dear Kempster

According to Promise I cannot think of letting any opportunity slipping that offers to send You a few lines my friend and as there is a Ship come in here yesterday from Bengall to get some water and will Sail to morrow or next day for Lisbon by whome I send these few lines to inform you that I am still thank God Blessed with that good companion health —— trust that this will find You and Your good family in the same State —— I wrote You and My Betsey about five or Six days past by a Dutch Ship bound to Middleburgh —— I hope the letters which I sent You and Mrs. Clark a day or two before we saild from Rio de Janario under the care of the Master of the Sirius that was have come by this time Save to hand —— I was a little disapointed the first of this month in not Receiving a letter from You by the Ranger Packett and more So in not having one from my old Woman —— She Saild from Falmouth in Augst. last and will Sail this day for Bengall —— I hope the Account which She brings as also from letters Received by her is true that of a War with France and Holland

we arrived here the 13 of last month after a very fine Passaged of five weeks and five days from Rio in company with the whole fleet —— the Little Friendship has been Remarkable healthy having only Burried one Young child belonging to one of the female convicts —— the rest of the fleet has been much in the Same State except the Charlott and Alexander who were both getting very Sickly before we came in here, from there coming out of a very warm climate all at once into one very cold —— the Charlott lost one male convict over board on the Passaged and one woman died a day or two after we came in here —— the Alexander Burried one male convict that is all the deaths that have happened Since my last to you —— in the fleet Since our leaving England we have only Burried between thirty and forty and thank God not a Single man belonging to the Detachment in that number which is a much Smaller number than was or could have been Expected —— them that were Sickly before our Arrivall here are all got Quite well for never was Prisoner So much taking care of than the[y] have been by the Commodor Since his first taking charge of them —— Since we came into this port the marines and convicts have had the same allowance (Spirits Excepted) a Pound of Beef or Mutton and a Pound and a half of Loaf Breaad a day —— You will Say not bad allowance for convicts and as much Greens as the[y] can make use of in there Broth —— the[y] have been more treated like Children than Prisoners —— the[y] have behaved very well and Quite although the[y] had laid a plan on board the Alexander threw the assistance of three or four of the Seamen to have over Powerd the Guard on board and then taking the command of the Ship ——
— the Marines were the most Sickly then in the Ship but the[y] could not agree amonst themselves So that the matter came to
the Knowledge of (Lieut John Johnstone then the commanding officer on board) by two of the convicts informing against the
others —— the Seamen had Supplyd them with Iron crows and other different implements to assist them in there undertaking
—— the[y] had cut thru and got at the Provisions & destroyed (eat) a great Quantity of bread, cheese & the Seamen the
Commodor has taking on board of his own Ship but what he intends to doe with them I cannot Say but in my opinion the[y]
ought to be tryd for there life Since there first coming on board of this ship the[y] have behaved exceedingly orderly —— thank
God we have got Quite of the most trouble some Sett (the Women) and have Received 40 Sheep in there Room which I have
not the least manner of doubt but we will find them much more agreable Ship mates than the (Ladys) were —— I never came a
Cross Such a D . . . . . . . Sett of B . . . . . . . in all the course of my life than the[y] are —— the men cannot hold a candle to one of
them & I am glad from the Bottom of my Soul that the[y] are gone for I was heartily tired of them —— in my last which I sent
You a few days past by the dutchman for Middlebourgh I inform You that Creswell and Pouldon were Removed into the Prince
of Wales and Maxwell and Timmins Removed in their room on board the Charlott —— the reason of this Removal was that the
men had made complaint to Majr. Ross about some thing which I cannot get at but when the Majr. went on board to inquir into
the Grounds of the complaint he found Maxwell so much (intoxicat ed) with liquor that he could not Give the Majr. an Answer
to the Questions which were put to him —— from that and that which happened at Rio which I informd You of in my letter
from there, the Majr. order him on board the Charlott and Creswell on board the P of W: and as Pouldon wished to be with
Creswell he and Timmins changed —— Ross told him (Maxwell) that he thought the he had better apply to be Invalided for that
he should not land with the detachment —— I find from the orders of last Sunday that he has done So —— Fuzer was orderd
on Board the Alexander to take the command of the Detachment from J. Johnstone for between You and I, I am pretty certain
Johnstone is superseded for much the same thing as what Maxwell is for Capt. Campble is gott Quite well again —— we have
been classed to the different companys —— I Remain with Meridith by my own wish and with him I mess while we Remain at
Botany —— I dont know with whom I shall be in a Tent with but Davey and I have agreed to be in one as we are in the Same
company together —— Mr. Faddy and I had agreed to be and was to have been but from Some thing that happened the day after
our Arrival here I could not think of being in a Tent with him —— I Believe You will here the circumstances throu Some other
chanal which will appear much better than for me to releate them who is the Principle concerned although it is to a friend therfor
will only inform You that from the nature of the circumstance I was oblige to write for a Court Martial on myself (for it could
not be settled as trivial points of honour are in General) which would have been held accordingly but for Several of my Brother
officers who advised me for the Sake of his wife and children to let the matter be settled by three or four of them and not to have the court Martial which I at last agreed on as the[ y] Seemd to wished it —— when the Commanding Officer order the following officers to assemble on board heer Capt. Lieut Tentch, 1st. Lieutenants Geoe. Johnstone, Creswell, Kellow, and Pouldon to settle it which the[ y] did much to the satisfaction of Your friend but to apologise which Mr. F was obliged to Repeat Publickly (which they had wrot) Before them to me —— I dont think it will appear well in me to repeat although to You Kempster but I hope when You have herd the Particulars from a nother hand that you will tell me if you think that I have acted right in given up Several points on Account of his Young family —— in my next which will be before we leave this I will Send You all the news and the orders of last Sunday —— this is the most dearest place that I ever was in without Exception nothing is cheap except china and Mutton at 21/2 pence a lb —— I wish that we were gone which will be in five days at most as all the Publick stock and cattle is nearly on board the different Ships —— be So good as to not let Mrs. Clark forget to Send out the things which I wrot for from Rio and 1/2 a hundred wight of Shot No.3 as I have got none of that Sort I find —— let it be send out in the first Ship that comes with the other things —— Adieu my friend —— make my Best wishs to Mrs. K and to Your Mother —— Kisses to the little ones —— Compt. to Bedlake and his good woman —— I may as well add a merry christmas and a happy New Year to all for it will be that before this comes to your hand

Your Very Sinceerly friend
Ralph Clark

Tell my Betsey that I have wrot her by this opportunity the woman that died on board the Charlott is Cook the drummers wife

**Marine Camp to Collins**

Lieut. Clarks Compt. & Best Respects to Capt. Collins begs to inform you that Jas. Tennehill a Convict now a Prisoner in charge of the Quarter Guard has beg of me to Speak to You Respecting his behaviour while on board the Friendship Transport —— if his good behaviour (in the Unhappy Situation he then was while on board the above Transport) can have any wight in Mitigating the Punishment that may be inflicted for the Crime for which he now Stands Charge with I can only Say on his behalf that for these last Nine Months past, that he behaved himself Remarkably peaceably and obedient alwayse to Command
Marine Camp
Tuesday Morning
Feby. the 11/88
To D: Collins Esqr.
Albion

Clark to Ross

Camp Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
June 22, 1788
Sir
I Shall esteem it a particular favour to doe me the honour by applying to the Right Honble. my Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty for to be Relieved at the Expiration of the three Years or as Soon after as there Lordships Shall find Convenient and be permited to Return to England as a longer Stay in this Country will be very Engerous to my Private affairs
I am with the greatest Respect
Sir Your Most Obdt.
Humble Servt.
Ralph Clark
2d. Lieut. Mars
To Major Ross Commandant
of the Battalion of Marines
Port Jackson

Clark to Kempster

Marine Camp Sydey Cove
Port Jackson
New South Wales
New Holland
July 10 [1788]

Dear Kempster

I with pleasure embrace this opportunity that of Lieut Collins who goes home for the Recovery of his health to inform You my friend that I never was better in health in my life —— I wish that I could here that you and your good family are the Same —— George You must not expect to have an Minuet Account of the Country and our Situation here from me for which I Shall Refer you to [*] the Publick and private accounts which goes home by this opportunity which you will See in the papers I shall only tell you that this is the poorest country in the world, which its inhabitance shows the[y] are the most miserable set of wretches under the Sun —— we left the cape the 12 of Novr. and Arrived at Botany bay the 19 of Jany. which we left with the whole fleet the 26 of the Same and arrived here the Same day —— the reason for our leaving Botany was on Account of there being no fresh water Sufficient to be found for the Settlement, nor is there any great quantity here, although this is one of the finest harbours in the world but there is neither river or Spring in the country that we have been able to find or meet with —— all the fresh water comes out of large Swamps which the country abounds with —— the country is over run with large trees not one Acre of clear ground to be Seen nor is ther one tree out of fifty but what is burnt with the lightning nor nothing in it fitt for the Subsistance of man what with Earthquakes, thunder and lightning it is to be sure a Sweet Country —— the Tunder and Lightning is the most Terrible I ever herd, it is the oppinion of every body here that Goverment will remove the Settlement to Some other place for if it remains here this country will not be able to maintain its self in one hundred Years for with all the Marines and Convicts here we have not been able to clear more Ground than what we are now putting in as fast as possible —— the Convicts behave very bad —— Several of them have been hangd and Several more will goe the Same way Soon for there is hardly a night but Some robbery is committed —— I am Sorry to Say that Majr. Ross and the Govr. are not on the best of terms nor is the former with Several of use, he is, without exception the most disagreable commanding officer I ever know —— him and I are as Yet on very good terms —— Ross put the following officers under an Arest Capt. Tench, Lieuts. Kellow, Pouldon, Davey and Timins (the former President and and the others Members of a Court Martial) for there refusing to alter the Sentance of the court which the[y] had past one the prisoner which Ross thought was tending to the Subservient of all order and Military Discipline —— after he had orderd them to revise the Court three times and the[y] not willing to alter the Sentance which was that the Prisoner (a private brought to tryal for Stricking a nother private) Should publickly beg pardon of the Said private which he had Struck OR receive one hunder lashes which was leaving the punishment in the hands of the prisoner —— when he found that the court would not alter the word or he put them under ane Arest for disobedience of orders and wrot for a
Genl. Court Martial on them which could not be granted —— the reasons for which See the Genl. orders on the other Side which I have Sent you and you will be better able to Judge of the matter

The Major Commandant of the Detachment doing duty in the Settlement having by letter dated the 21st. Inst. Reported the following officers under an Arest Viz Capt. Lieut Watkin Tench, 1st. Lieuts. Robt. Kellow, Jno. Pouldon, Thos. Davey and Thos. Timins —— the first is President and the others are Members of a Court Martial, which he ordered to assemble on the 18 Inst. for the Tryal of Private belonging to the Detachment —— the Said Court having in his opinion Passed a Sentence which tends to the Subversion of all Military Discipline and Requesting that a General Court Martial may be ordered to assemble for the Tryal of the afore Said Officers for Refusing to make any alteration in the Said Sentence or that it might be Settled in any manner most likly to Restore Harmony and Support that Military Disciplin & Good Order which is So absolutely necessary to be maintainged

The Officers Under Arest having declined the proposion made of Submitting the determination of this affair to any number of officers and having informd the Judge Advocate who had orders to propose that or any other mode of Setteling this matter without a General Court Martial that they being put Under Arest by their Commandant did not Concieve that any thing less than a Legal Division by a General Court Martial or a Public Reparation from their Commandant Could clear their Character The Service dose not at this moment permit a General Court Martial to be assembled

The officers composing the Detachment being (exclusive the five officers Under Arest) no more than three Captains and [*] Subalterns one of which is confined to his Bed by Sickness which Reduces the number of officers in this Settlement Eligible to Sit on this Occasion to thirteend consequantly that not leaving any one officer for Duty

It is therfore Orderd that the Minuets of the Tryal of the a for said Private Soldier with the Letters that there Past on the Occation between the Court and the Commandant of the Detachment be deliverd to the Judge Advocate that when the Service permits by being a Sufficient number of officers to form a General Court Martial and for the necessary duty of the Camp, a General Court Martial May be then held on the Said Capt. Lieut Watkin Tench, 1st. Lieuts. Robt. Kellow, John Pouldon, Thos. Davey and Thos. Timins if Such Genl. Court Martial Shall be then Requestd by eather of the Parties

The officers now under Arest to Return to their Duty

From the above I hope that You will be able to see into the affair and Wm. Collins will give you every information otherwise about it and every other thing which you may wish to ask him —— Kellow had not Returnmd many days to his duty before he again was put under an arest by Ross for leaving his Gd. which Matter was made up —— Little John Ross is on the returns as a
Vollr. without pay —— almost every officer with my self have wrot to be relievd at the Expiration of the three Years for by God I would not Stay longer than I could help in this country if the[y] would give me a Captains Commission —— duty is much harder here we Seldom have more than two nights in bed which is much harder duty than any Officers have in the British Army in time of war —— it is not only the Camp duty but the worst duty is the duty of Sitting as Members of the Criminal Court which is a very disagreeable duty which is the Court which tries the Seamen eather belonging to the Ships of War or Merchant men and the Convicts which duty comes very often —— I hope that I never will Sit again for I would reather be on Gd. for a Month than to Sitt on the tryal of these poor wretches —— the day that we left Botany Bay there came in two Strange Ship which not a little Surprized every body for we as Soon Expected to See St. Paul coming in to the Bay as two Strange Ships —— we found them to be two french Ships on Discoveries, Le Boussole, Monsr. La Perouse, Commodore and Astrolabe, Monsr. Clonard out from france near two Years —— the[y] came to Botany to sett up two Long Boats in the room of two which the[y] had lost at one of the islands of the Northwest Coast of America in a Scuffle with the Natives with thirty of there men and one of ther Captains was killed at the Same time —— his name was Monsr. de Langle, he commanded the Astrolabe —— the[y] Staid at Botany near two Months and we often went over to them and the[y] came in Return over to use it being not a bove Seven miles by land and about 9 by Sea —— Soon after we came here the Supply Sailed for Norfolk island with about thirty of the convict men and women to Settle there and Lieut. King of the Sirius as Gover. —— the Supply in her being there found out ane Island which had never been discovd. in the Latte. of 31:40 South Longd. 159.04 East which Lieut Ball cald Lord Howes Island in honour of the first Lord of the Admlty. —— no inhabitance nor no fresh water to be found Except what comes from the heavens nor any good Anchorage in the Summer —— a great Quantity of Turtle comes there of which the[y] brought a great number away with him —— he Since has being gone again but found none the weather being grown too cold the[y] having gone father to the northward —— the Supply Sail at the Same time there Ship goes for England for Norfolk —— I hope he will bring in Some turtle with him for it is hard to have nothing but Salt Beef to eat every day —— the Kankerrous are very plentiful full but hard to come at —— a great number have been Shot and are very good eating —— You may expect to have a Skin of one of them Stuft by the next Ship that Sail from here —— the crows goes down the Same as a Barn dove foul in England —— nothing goes a miss here Snakes and Lisards are become good eating but these I cannot yet to bring myself to Stomack but as for Crows, Parrets, haws and every kind of birds let them feed on carion or any thing else for the[y] are better than Salt Beef —— the Detachment lost only one Man on the passaged and have Burried three Since we have been landed —— about forty of the Convicts have died I am not Surprised at there dying So fast the[y] have nothing to lay on but the cold ground
ther being no beds come out for them —— the Scurvy has got much amonst our men as well as amonst the Convicts —— the flux carried of a great number Soon after our coming here but there is a red Gum found here of a great astringen nature which the Surgeons have give with great Success in the flux —— Maxwell goes hom by this opportunity he has done no duty Since we left the Cape —— Geoe. Johnston is appointed the Govr. Adjt. of orders and is taking of the Strength of the Detachment and lives with the Govr. —— Dawes is join the Detachment but dose no duty being appointed Artillery Officer and Engineer —— these are the only appointments that have taking place —— Ross writes by this conveyance for the mens Subsistance being Sent out to them and for a pay Master being appointed —— be so good as to* that is all the News that I have —— I hope your goodness will Excuse the irregularness of this letter but as I am getting the roof of my hut plasterd for which I am grasping every fair moment that offers for it has raind for near this month with hardly a Single days interrupion —— that I hope my good friend will plead a Sufficient Excuse for the the loose order in which I have wrot you —— the next I hope will not be in So irregular a maner —— I have now to desire you to Make my Kindest wishes to Mrs. Kempster your good woman and also to your Mother and a thousand Blessings to the little ones —— Compt. to Bedelake and his good woman and my Sinceerest Love to my Betsey —— inform Reynolds that I have wrot him a few lines —— adieu my good fellow health and happiness for you and yours is the daily wish of your
Very Sinceer friend
Ralph Clark
*
be so good as to inform Mrs. Clark that I have Sent under the Care of Collins a Box for her and a long letter —— dont forget to send me all the newspapers which you promised you would also any Magazines which you can Spair for the inhabitance of this place dont print any Such things —— all good news will be Acceptable, adieu
Yr. R C
Send me out a [best of the donations?] at the Same time
To
Lieut & Qr. Master Kempster
Marines
Plymouth
* This sentence is completed overleaf.
Clark to Hartwell

Marine Camp Sydney Cove  
Port Jackson  
New South Wales  
July 12th/88  
Dr. Sir

it is with pleasure that I have an opportunity to inform You that I am in good health although in the poorest country in the World without Exception —— I Shall be happy when the three Years are over and the Relief come out for which I have wrot for to be at the Exparation at that time as has almost every officer done the Same —— I Should with pleasure have given you ane Account of the Country and our Situation but which I Suppose you will Receive from Some much abler friend as well as by the publick and other private Accounts which goes by the Same Conveyance —— it is the oppinion of every body here that the Settlement will be Removed to Some other place for its is not possible that this place can mentain its Self in a Centry (if corn would come to perfection which its much fear it will not) for the whole face of the Country is So over grown with immense large trees So much So that not a Quarter of an Acre of clear ground is to be Seen nor is there eather River or Spring to be mett with Yet or any thing in it fitt for the Subsistance of Men Except for its poor wretchd Inhabitance who live on limpets and fern roots —— the Natives are very Numerous and are begining to be very troublesome —— Several of the Convicts have been Kild by them —— not one of them has come into the Camps Yet —— the Bearer of this Lieut Wm. Collins who goes home for the Recovery of his health of Whome I have bought Some things for the payment of which he will give you my Bill on You to the amount of £5–17–6 Sterling which you will be so good as to pay and to give Mr. C about ten pounds to purchase Some things which I shall want by the first Ship —— I have also to to beg of you to be so good when the Relief comes out to send me a Bill for £20 or 25 pound in favour of your Correspondent in [Cape] Town as I Shall want to purchas Some things at the Cape and if there is any thing which I can doe for you or your friends at any of the places we may Stop at in our way home you have only to Command Dr. Sir

Your  
Most Obdt. Humble
Servt
Ralph Clark
Shea, Pouldon, Kellow are in great good health
To.
B: Hartwell Esqr.

Clark to Reynolds

Marine Camp Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
New South Wales
New Holland
July 20th/88
Dear Reynolds

Accept these few lines from Your friend who is now in one of the Worst Countries in the World although I can inform You Chas. I never was Better in health in my life —— I would give a great dele to here that You and the rest of my friends in Your part of the World are the Same —— in the first place I [beg] of You to Excuse the Shortness of this that I am going to send you for I am So hard at work in the day time about my hut and having hardly any clandle light about use I hope will plead a Sufficient Excuse for its Shortness —— I wish to god that I was again back to Plymouth as for which I never in all the course of my life wished for any thing So much as I doe for that for by God there is nothing in this Country to make a man wish to Stay as I have Said already it is the poorest Country under heaven without Exception of which I will leave You to Judge of by what follows —— one of the Convicts having about a Month Since Committed a Crime for which has was Certain he would be hanged for he therfore run away in the Country to avoid the Gallows but in three weeks time he was glad to come back to it again prefairing it to being Starved to death which must have been the case had he Staid out a few days longer for not having met with in the track of Country which he went over any thing which afforded the least Subsistance to man he having lived on nothing the whole time he was away but limpets and other Shell fish which he found on the Sea Shore —— what with Earthquakes, thunder and lightning which is the most terrible I ever herd in all my life it is you will think not a disireable
Country to Stay in —— I have wrote for to be Relieved at the Expiration of the three Years as has every officer almost done the
Same —— I am Sorry to Say that the Govr. and Majr. Ross are not on very good terms or is the latter with Several of use ——
Maxwell and Collins goes home by this opportunity the former has done no duty Since we left the Cape from which I wrot You
and the latter for the Recovery of his health —— I have wrot Kempster and my Betsey by this Conveyance which I hope will
come Save to their hands —— the Detachment has lost 4 men Since we left England one at Sea and three Since we have been
here —— Now I have to beg of you to be so good as to make my Compt. to Kempster, Bedelake and families and Tendrest
wishes to my Betsey and Son —— doe Reynolds Send me all the news paper that you can and all the news and you will much
oblige your very
   Sinceer friend
   Ralph Clark

   be so good as to make Lieut Balls of the Supply and Capt. D. Collins Compt. to Kempster which I forgot to Mention in his
letter —— Creswell and Pouldon desires there best wishes to You when I write you again (which will not be long) I will make
up for the Shortness of this by Sending you a long one —— [a] dieu dont forget me to my Betsey —— Compt. and Best wishes
to D: Price

To
   Lieut Reynolds
   M: S: Druid
   Plymouth

Clark to Collins

Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
Sept. 30th 1788
My Dr. friend,

Directed by friendship, I cannot think of letting the Sirius goe to the Cape without writing these few lines by her and trust that
the[y] will find, you my good fellow, in good health, for believe me Collins few things are predominant with me than to heer of
the health and welfare of you my friend

As for news, I have not much to inform you, we are being much in the same state as when you left us, nor are we likely to be soon any otherwise, except of being much more dispersed up and down the Country, for a detachment consisting of one Capt. 2 Subt. 2 Sergt. 2 Corpl. one Drumr. and 20 Privates is order to hold themselves in readiness to proceed up to the head of the harbour in a few days with 70 convicts there to form a settlement — this detachment is to be relieved every three months — the officers on the roster first for detached duty are Capt. Campble, Lieuts. Johnstone and Shearp — I am sorry to say Wm. that the seeds of animosity is budding out very fast among the Juniors as well as it was amongst the Seniors before you left us, for the 12th. of last month the P. of Wales's birthday the Govr. in honour of the day gave a dinner to every gentleman in the settlement and seemed to enjoy our selves much more than we did the 4th. of June but White and Balmain in the evening in course of conversation quarrelled about some duty and they went out in the middle of the night to decide it with pistols without any seconds — the report of the pistols alarmed the guards for before the patrols could come up with them the[y] had each fired five rounds without doing any material injury to each other — Balmain received a small flesh wound in the right thigh a little above the knee — it would not have rested there had not the Govr. taking the matter in hand and convinced the two sons of Escalipious that it was much better to draw blood with the point of there lance from the arm of there patients than to do it with pistol balls from each other — Long & White has also within these few days had some words and would have been settle in the same manner (with pistols) had not friends interfered who convinced White that he was in the wrong but if I am not mistaking this matter is only settled for the present and the smales spark on eather side will make it break out a fresh — don't be surprised what I am going to inform you — what do you think of Ross and Campble having quarrelled and carried matters into such a height that they parted messes and past each other without speaking except on duty — the[y] have come to speak again but not yet to mess again — all this happened about a servant of Campbles — it would have been a happy thing for us if this breach had continued.

The golden grove store ship sails for Norfolk the same time this goes for you with an addition to the settlement there of one Sergt. one Corpl. and five Privates (belonging to the Sirius) 20 male and 10 female convicts with a twelve months provisions of every piece for them and the others that are there before them, that is all the news.

Your brother is very well and desires his brotherly love to you — also the best wishes of an affectionate son to his father and mother to whom you will remember me most kindly as one who is so much indebted to them for the kind attention to Mrs. Clark and Self while in the barracks — Pouldon is very well and joins with me in the most friendly wishes for your
health and welfare and I Remain My
  Dr. friend
  Your Most Sinceer
  Ralph Clark
  P:S: if this Should find You at the Cape as it is the Genl. opinion it will I will thank you much Collins to be So good as to
  Send me the undermentiond things by the Sirius as You promised you would,
  Viz: 6 or 8 lb of Tea, about 40 or 50 lb of Sugar, 6 lb of Pepper, 2 pices of printed Cotton at about 3 or 4 Dollars a pice for
  window Curtains and a dozen the Same Kind of plates as You gave me and let me me know what the cost and I will Send you
  ane order for the Same —— be So good as to make my best and tendrest wishes to Mrs. Clark and inform her that I have wrote
  her by this opportunity as also Kempster —— all the Detachment have applayd to be Relieved at the exparation of the three
  Years Except Tench, G: and J: Johnstone and Shearp and three or four of the Private Men, adieu R:C:
  To
  Lieut Wm. Collins
  Marine Barracks
  Plymouth

Clark to Hartwell

Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
N. South Wales
Octr. the 1st. 1788
Dr. Sir
I take this opportunity of the Sirius going to the Cape of Good hope for provisions (flouer) of which Article we will Soon be
in want off —— as for news there is none heer we being much in the Same State as when I wrote You last July last by Lieut.
Wm. Collins —— the Battalion is not got hutted Yet and it will be Some time before the[y] are the timber being So rotten ——
not one tree out of fifty but what is decayd —— a detachment consisting of one Capt. 2 Subt. 4 Non Commd. officers one Dr.
and 20 Privates goes up to the head of the harbour about 20 miles from this with 70 of the convicts to form a nother Settlement there —— the Golden Grove Store Ship Sails to Morrow for Norfolk with one Sergt. and five Privates 20 male and 10 famele Convicts in addition to the Number that was sent there Soon after our landing here —— it is a very pretty Island and abounds in fish and Turtle both of which we are in want of heer —— the former we cannot get for the want of Boats and the latter dont come so fare to the Southward as this —— we are Remarkably healthy heer —— the whole Battalion has applayd to be Relieved at the Exparation of the three Years —— Capt. Tench, Lieuts. G: and J: Johnstone and Shearp and four Private men Excepted —— in my letter to You by Lieut. Collins I mentioned for you to Send me when the Relief comes out a Bill for 20 or 25 pounds which I heer again beg of you to be So good as also if there is any thing which I can doe for you at the Cape or any other place we may Stop at in our way home I will doe it with pleasure —— Shea, Pouldon and Kellow are very well and Join with me in best wishes for your health and welfare and Remain Dr. Sir

Your Most Obdt. Humble

Servt.

Ralph Clark

P:S: the Natives have never Yet come into Camp but are ready to attack the Convicts in the woods when ever the[y] think the [y] can get the better of them but the[y] never Meddle with a red Coat —— I have wrote Mrs. Clark by this opportunity

To

B: Hartwell Esqr.

Plymth. Docks

Clark to Kempster

Camp Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
New South Wales
Novr. 17th. 1788
Dr. Kempster

I wrot You about Six weeks Since by the Sirius every thing worth Relating Since which time nothing Material has happend
we being much in the same state as then except that Furzer was put under arrest by Ross for neglect of duty, disobedience of orders and contempt to his commanding officer — a general court martial was order'd to assemble to try him for the same — the officers who were directed to assemble for the purpose of holding the said genl. court martial were of opinion that they could not sit for that purpose under the warrant of the gov'r. for that by the act of parliament no other power than the admiralty is authorised to grant a warrant for holding (marine) general court martial — the judge advocate who is appointed by the admiralty is instructed in their warrant to keep the act of parliament constantly for his rule — under these circumstances and considerations the reason of our not sitting according to orders we stated to maj'r. Ross and hoping the statement may be transmitted to the adminty from whence we hope such remedy will be applied as their lordships may think expedient.

Dr. Kempster as being one of the officers ordered to assemble for the holding of the above court martial I feel myself placed in a very unpleasant situation in not being able to conform to the gover. warrant without taking a false oath for the gov'r. sent use his commission issued from his majesty empowering the said gov'r. in chief to assemble genl. court martial for the trial of any officer or soldier of the troops under his command & to confirm or set aside their sentence — I hope therefore that we may be understood in this business by his majesty that we have acted only in conformity to an act of the british legislature passed expressely for our regulations (marines) while on shore in any part of his majy's dominions & that we have not in any shape been wanting in the respect that belongs to the high authority of his majesty's commission or to the officer invested with it in this country.

I wonder that there was no provision or alteration made in the usual act of parliament for the regulation for the marine forces, while on shore, for our particular situation in not being able to conform to the same as in the year 1775, for that part of the corps as was doing duty in america with the army (the two battalions) they were guided and directed by the articles of war of the army as the were included in the act for the punishment of mutiny and desertion amongst the troops in that country — an act of this kind ought to have been made for our particular situation and not have sent use out without any guidance for the trial of any officer, or soldier, by a general court martial. — ross when he found that a general court martial could not sit, he got the gov'r. to order a court of enquiry on furzer, to enquire into the charge brought against him by his commanding officer and to report whether there was not sufficient grounds for a court martial — the court of enquiry without calling on ross or furzer were of opinion that the order for a general c: m: alwaisme confirmed that there was sufficient grounds for a c: m: — ross then got the gov'r. to send furzer home to be tryd there (the prosecutor and witnesses to have been examined on oath by the judge
Advocate here) if he did not make the matter up with him when in the course of a few days after the following order came out

Viz: The Majr. Commandant of the detachment having represented that Quarter Master Jas. Furzer having taken the necessary steps to do away the charge for which a Genl. Court Martial was ordered and request that further proceedings may stop that officer is to return to his duty, but what steps he took to do away the charge I am a Stranger to. So here this matter ended.

Capt. Campble and Shairp are not gone up to the new settlement yet as I informed you they would in a few days in my last —— Lieut J: Johnstone has been gone for these three weeks past with part of the detachment that is ordered to goe and the half of the 70 convicts that are to goe —— Capt. Campble and Shairp with the remainder will goe in about a week —— I am afraid that corn will not answer for the lightning blights the moment that it comes above ground —— at the Govr. farm there is some very forward and appears to come on very fast and that's the only in the country —— Gardin stuff grows very well but the cabbages will not form —— the account that the Golden Grove Store ship brings from Norfolk Island are very favorable —— corn and every thing that the[y] sow grows remarkably well but it is a very bad place for a ship —— the Grove while she remaind there was obliged to goe to sea three times or goe on shore there being constantly a great sea rolling in the road where a ship can only anchor —— several of the convicts here have been again Kild by the natives as we suppose one of our men is also as he has been missing above three weeks past —— they are a set of savage rascals for they will take the advantage of the defenceless where the[y] can such of the convicts that the[y] meet in the woods but as for a red coat the[y] will not come near them upon no account what ever the[y] are so much afraid of fire arms —— we are remarkably healthy having no sick of any consequence to speak of —— Capt. Meredith has been very ill but is now getting better fast although he is obliged to goe on crutches —— Ross behaves to use much in the same stile as he has done all along and is much on the same footing with the Govr. as when I wrote you by Collins —— Capt. Campble and him are linct as close as ever again —— I though there quarrel would not last long —— as this will be the last letter that you will receive from me for some time as there will be no opportunity before a ship arrives from England to write but by her return I therefore hope that the relief will not be far from use before we can receive answers to our letters which we send by her, the first ship that sails after this —— if there is any thing that I can do for you or your friends at any of the places we may stop at in our way home I will with pleasure —— make my best wishes to Mrs. K and your mother as also to Bedlake and his good woman —— adieu my good fellow may every guardian angle watch over you and yours is the sincerest wishes of your

Affectioned friend
Ralph Clark

P.S: be So good as to make my best wishes and Compt. to all enquiring friends also be so good as to inform my Betsey that I have wrot her by both Ships as you will See —— my blessings to your little ones —— I Suppose that Geoe. is grown a fine fellow by this time —— inform Reynolds that I have Sent him a few lines —— Lieut Ball of the Supply and D. Collins best wishes to you

Clark to Reynolds

Camp Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
New South Wales
Novr. 17th. 1788.

Dear Reynolds,

As I wrote You by the Sirius the first of last month a long letter and every thing worth information Since which time nothing new or noval has happend worth Troubling my friends with —— I should not have wrot you now, for letters are an idle expense when one has nothing new to inform or useful to comunicate —— I know you So well that if I did not write you every opportunity you would take it unkind —— I enjoy my good fellow that great blessing of being in health —— I hope that it is your constant companion also —— Since my last Furzer was put under arrest by Ross which as I have wrot Kempster he will give you every thing Relating to it —— that is the only thing that has happend amonst use —— we are the most Unsociable Set that ever was —— there is no Society in this little place every body appears to me to be [*] of each other —— I assure you that I am not [*] of any body I never was so Sick of any thing in my life as I am of this Settlement —— no woman ever longed So eagerly for any thing as I doe for the Relief to come out for I ardently wish to be back again —— if I was a woman and with child I am Certain the child would be marked all over with Plymo. Dock, Stone House and the Marine Barracks —— we are remarkably healthy it is without doubt a very healthy Climate this but by God a Damed poor one —— in the last letter which I had before we left the mother bank you Seem to hint in it Some thing about Charlotte Baker as if you was paying your Addresses to her —— Since I can Speak freely to you as a friend you most Know that She has no fortune (except if you call a pretty face one) and if you intend to make her Mrs. R:s you will find it cursetly hard to your Subns. pay mentain you both and
perhaps a number of children into the bargain —— I find it very hard to make my pay-ment in me who has got I can Savely Say one of the best and most prudent woman under heaven —— therfore my good fellow consider well before you enter into the Matrimonial State —— wigh every Circumstance first in the Scale of prudence after which Should you find any balance in your favour to enter into that State doe it by all means for I assure you it is the happiest State in the World —— let me Know Reynolds know every thing how goe on in this matter and every thing else respecting you Since my leaving England for Believe me few things are predominant with me but for the health and welfare of you my friend —— be So good as to inform or let my beloved wife Know that I have wrot her by both Ships —— I have wrot Kempster also if there doe anything (after that we are Relieved) for you or your friends at the places we may Stop at in our Way home I will doe it with pleasure you therefore have only to mention it to

Yr. Sincere friend
Ralph Clark

P:S: be So good as to make my best to all friends my best wishes to Kempster, Bedlake and all their good families —— dont forget to Send me all the news and news papers that you can from the time of our Sailing if you can —— Creswell, Pouldon are very well and begs to be Remembert to you with there best wishes Adieu once more

To
Lieut Chas. Reynolds
Marine Barracks
Plymouth

Clark to Hartwell

Camp Sydney Cove
Port Jackson
New South Wales
Novr. 1788
Dr. Sir
I wrot You by the Sirius the first of last month Since which nothing heer worth information has happend we being much in the
Same State as when the Sirius left use —— as I informd you then that a Settlement was intended at the head of the harbour and that a Detachment of 20 Marines and 70 Convicts from heer was intended for the Same, part of the above detachment have been gone about three weeks and the Remainder will follow in the course of a few days —— we are Still very healthy and at Norfolk Island the[y] are the Same —— the Accounts by the Golden Grove from there are very favourable, corn and every Kind of Seeds grows remarkably well the Soil being much better than it is heer for it is Still the Genl. opinion here that the corn will not come to perfection —— Majr. Ross has got a little at his farm that appears favourable and that is the only in the Island —— the Golden Grove in ther Return from Norfolk discoverd a Reef of Rocks about 100 miles to the Northward of Lord Howes Island —— as it will be some time before I shall have ane opportunity to write you again I trust you will be so good as to comply with my wishes in my letter to you which I sent by Lieut Collins and that by the Sirius —— Shea, Pouldon, Kellow, &c. as I Suppose that they will write you will find by them that the[y] are very well —— be so good as to inform Mrs. Clark that I have wrot her by both Ships —— when you write I will thank You for any little news which You may think worth Sending
am with the Sincerest wishes for the the health and welfare of You and family Dr. Sir
Yr. Most Obdt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
P:S: Since my last Several of the convicts have been Kild by the Natives at Botany bay and one of our men is Supposed to have Shard the fate as he has been Missing above three weeks
To
B Hartwell Esqr.
Georges Street
Plymouth Dock

Collins to Clark

Cape of Good Hope
Feby. 19, 1789
Dear Clark
I have just time to Say I arrived here the 17 Inst and did not Receive your letter untill this day —— I Sail tomorrow or next
day for Europe and have it not in my power to Send you the things you wrote for a[s] I draw for very little money
I have not time to answer your letter fully but believe me
Sincerely Your friend
Wm. Collins

Wolrige to Clark

Sir
It is with very great Concern I Acquaint You of the death of our late Valuable Friend Mr. Hartwell on the 18th. of last month
—- His Executors feeling for the distress Mrs. Clark might experience from this unhappy Event are willing to continued to furnish Her with Money Waiting for their Reimbursement till the Return of the inclosed Letter of Attorney which we conclude You will readily Execute and Send by the first Conveyance either to Mrs. Geoe. Hartwell of the Navy office or myself who are joint Executors to the deceased —— You are Debter to the late Mr. Hartwell £76.11.6 and as we continue to Supply Mrs. Clark we take it for granted no Drafts of Yours will appear
I am Sir
Your Most obdt. Servt.
Thos. Wolrige
Pay Office
Plymh.
1st Decr. 1789
NB The Blanks in Lettr. Atty. to be filled up at the time of Execution & witnessed by two Persons

Kempster to Clark

Stone House
Decr. 1st. 1789
Dear Clark
I hope you Received my Letter by the Guardian and the cask with what you wrote for as the Ship did not call here I was
obliged to Send it to Portsmouth

Your wife and Boy are both well but by your Agent Hartwells death She is thrown on the Mercy of his Brother who takes to his affairs and as they have Reduced her allowance to £20 per annum but do not let that make you uneasy as hitherto She has contrived to keep out of Debt but what money She want I will be her Banker and you must pay me when you come home —— but this you will keep to yourself as not any person here knows it —— to be poor and appear so is the worst of all Evils and therfore I advised her to keep it to herself

However I should Suppose Hartwells death will be one advantage to You —— it will Save the nine Pounds a Year which he paid for insuring Your life —— you will no doubt be surprized to see Nepean come out as Eldest Captain in the Corps destined for the Security of New South Wales —— I am told you will all be offerd Commissions in it —— by all I mean the Senior officers have for another Years residence in New South Wales may have changed your opinions of the place I know not or how for it will be adviseable for any of you to goe into the Corps —— you will get an immediate Step of cours but the question is will not that be the last promotion you are to look for unless you can purchase

As you will hear all the news from Capt. Nepean a long letter from me will be quite unnecessary —— be assured I shall be alwayse willing to Serve you and am

Your Sinceer friend

G. Kempster

All my family are well and desire there best wishes —— You will write me if you have any opportunity before you Return

Beveridge to Clark

Dear Sir

though I have not had the pleasure of Seeing you for some years past Yet I have heard from your friend Miss Hume of your welfare & it will give me much Satisfaction to have it Confirmed from Yourself my Address is at Messrs. Innes Beveridge & Co. London & if I can be of any Service to You Here I will be very happy

I take the liberty of introducing to Your Friendship & Acquaintance Mr. William Murray Surgeon of the Justinian Store Ship —— I beg you will Show Him any Civilities during his Stay with you & I hope you will find him worthy of your Protection

I am with best wishes for your welfare & Happiness
Dear Sir
James Beveridge
London
18th Decemr. 1789

Clark to Collins

Marine Quarters
Sydney Cove
Febly. 9th. 1790
Sir
I have to Acquaint you that the Iron pot which was Served out from the Commissiary by order of the Governour was Stole from my Servants hutt last Tuesday the 9 Inst.
I am Sir
Your Obdt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
Lieut Mars.
To D: Collins Esqr.
Sydney Cove

Campbell to Clark

[Early July 1790]
Dear Clark
You would have heard from me by the Supply if she called at Norfolk in Answer to your kind letter but that I Really had not one moment to myself from the hour She arrived till She Sailed again and I will know that Majr. Ross would make you acquainted with every thing worth your notice Said to him from this place
I know that it will give you no small degree of pleasure to hear that a part of the new Corps raised to relieve us joined us in the last Transports and we daily look for the remaining part on board the Gorgon which ship we are to take our passage home in—god send us a speedy sight of her that we may all once more meet for she is to be sent for you as soon as the others are got out of her.

You will I dare say expect me to say something of my own situation here to you and it is but little I can say more than that I am well as to other matters I go on just as you left me equally a stranger to every body and every thing going on here except what immediately concerns myself.

You will learn from Major Ross how much we have all suffered from the loss of the Guardian—all the letters which were to me from the Governor for you and those with you saved from her as well as the other letters that I could find I have put up in a packet with Majr. Ross's who will deliver them to you.

I am much obliged to Consendent for his remembrance of me—pray offer my best wishes as well as to the rest of my friends.

My heart aches to think how much you have all suffered should you not have saved the provisions which were on board the Sirius.

Adieu my good friend and believe me to be as I really am.

Very much yours,

Jas. Campbell

Clark to Kellow

Sir,

Your servant has this moment informed me that you would be glad to speak to me—i beg to inform you that any thing which you want or wish me to do for you, you must write me as I am sorry your present situation prevents me having a personable conversation with you except on duty (that of been sent with any message from the commanding officer to you) as I informed you the morning when the commanding officer desired me to put you under arrest and to suspend you from all duties in the detachment that my brother officers would think it very odd of me to see me speaking and in company with you after what has past & that I wished that you would put in on paper any thing which you wanted me to say to Majr. Ross or doe
myself for you and that if I can (with propriety) I will doe it

I am Sir
Your Most Obdt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
1st. Lieut & Acting
Quarter Master General
Norfolk Island
Augt. 10th. 1790
To
Lieut Robt. Kellow
Marines

Kellow to Clark

My Dr. Friend
Mr. Hartwell desires me to acquaint you of his having written to you inclosing a copy of your Account But Mrs. Clark desired She might have the Letter to Send with hers
Be so good as to make my Complements to Majr. Ross that I Should be glad of his permission to goe on board the first Ships to morrow morning (by the first Boats)
I am
My Dr. Friend
Your Humble Servt.
Robt. Kellow

Clark to Kellow

Sir
In Answer to your letter of this day informing me that Mr. Hartwell desires you to acquaint me of his having wrote me as also
inclosing a copy of my Account But Mrs. Clark desired She might have the letter to Send with hers
You also desire me to be so good as to make your Complements to Major Ross that You Should be glad of his permission to
goe on Board one of the Ships to morrow morning (by the first Boats)
for Your information Respecting what Mr. Hartwell desired you to acquaint me with, I am much oblige to you but as Yet I
have not Received his letter
In Answer to the latter part of your letter I am desired by Majr. Ross to Acquaint you that he has no objections to your going
on Board of the Ships but that you cannot have a Boat to attend You for that purpose and that Should You goe on Board the
Ships according to Your wish to Morrow you must on no Account whatever detain or delay the Boats beloning to the Settlement
Empd. at present in the Public Service in landing the Provisions, Stores &c. from the Ships
Your Most Obdt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
1st. Lieut. & Actg.
Qr. Mastr. Genl.
on Service To
Lieut. Robt. Kellow
Norfolk Island
Augt. 10th/90

Clark to Beveridge?

Norfolk Island
August 24th. 1790
Dear Sir
Your Kind letter per favour of Mr. Murray (as well as brining me Acquainted with the above Gentleman) for which I beg of
You to accept my best wishes
Although it is Several Years Since I have had the pleasure of Seeing You I can assure you that it has not made me forget the
Civil & Kind attention which you Showed me while with you in London
as Mr. Murrays Stay with us is So very Short and from the Situations of the place here being Such that no Ship can anchor with Safety by which means I have been deprived of the pleasure of his company more than I otherwise Should which I am exceedingly Sorry for as I think him from the Short Acquaintance a very Worthy Genteell Young man

As I expect to Return to England by the Gorgon as Such my Stay in this Country will be but very Short but Should it be longer than what I at present expect (or in what ever part of the World I may chance to be) I beg to assure you that any person coming from Mr. Beveridge I will Show them every attention and Civility that is in my power

I am exceedingly happy to find by Yours that Mrs. Hume is well as I have not herd from her this Some time

I am with Sinceer wishes for your welfare & happiness

Dear Sir
Your Obdt. Hble. Servt
Ralph Clark

P:S: I have taking the Liberty to Send you per favour of Mr. Murray a mount Pit Bird (not on Account of the Beauty of its Plumage) of which it has non but on Account of its being one of the Birds that has preserved the lives of five hundred and odd persons for these Several months past

This is presumably in response to a letter from Mr. James Beveridge. See p278 supra.

Clark to Kempster

Norfolk Island
August 26th. 1790
Dear Kempster

Your friendly letter by Captain Nepean I have Received for which accept of my best thanks but the one you mention to have Sent by the Guardian as also the cask which you was so good as to take the trouble to get Sent on board of her, I am affraid are totaly lost from the Accident that has happened that Ship

for the friendship you have shown to me Kempster I am greatly indebted to you for but the friendly advice and generous offer which you have made Mrs. Clark to be her Banker on the death of Mr. Hartwell when his Brother Reduced her allowance to £20
per annum is a piece of friendship I am afraid I shall never be able to make you a Sufficient Acknowledgement for the little money which She may want and which you have been so good as to offer to advance her in my absentse I will on my Return Reimburse you with heartly and sincere thanks for your Kindness —— I am sorry for the death of Mr. Hartwell from whom Since I left Plymth. I have not had a Single line

As you Seem to wish to know how far another Years Residence in New South Wales may have changed my opinion of the place —— Respecting it I am still in the same way of thinking of it as when I wrote you by the first Ships that Saild from there home and I am resolved not to Stay in it (if I can help it) Unless some thing better is offerd me in the Corps that is come out for the Security of New South Wales than a Lieutenancy (if my family was out here with me I perhaps might Stay a few Years longer) but without them I will not —— I cannot give you any information Respecting what Commissions will be offerd to use for there is not a single person here knows as yet —— Majr. Ross has no information either from Public or Private Accounts about it —— there is not any of the New South Wales Corps come here as yet —— you may well say that I shall be surprized to find Nepean come out for I thought he would have been the last man in England that would have come out here

I hope You have Received the Letter which I sent by the Supply on her leaving this Isld. after the loss of the Sirius —— She left us in a most terrible situation there been at that time not more than 6835 lb. Flour, 320 lb. Beef, 3253 lb. Pork, 5001/2 lb. Rice and 200 Bushels of Wheat with which we had 506 mouths to feed every day but by great good fortune the weather proved favourable to us after the Supplys Sailing from here So that we were able to Save from the wreck the greatest part of the Provisions that She brought for the Settlement as well as the most of her own by the saving of which we have been able to Spin out life So long as we have done but now by the arrival of the Justinian and Surprize with Provisions from Port Jackson for use we shall now again be able to live like fighting Cocks —— the Governour has I think (and I never will forgive him) used us all very ill here for he know by the Supplys that when She left us that we had only that quantity of Provisions in the Island and had no prospect then when She left use that we should be able to save a single thing out of the Sirius and he to have a ship in Port Jackson so long agoe as the 3 of June and to let her Remain there two months before he sent her here to See if any of use were above ground or not for he had no Reason to expect that any of us were it was cursed cruel in —— you will be better able to judge by the different resolutions we were obliged to make to preserve life as long as we could (of which I have sent your coppies) of the dreadfull prospect we had before use before the arrival of these Ships —— by the loss of the Sirius I lost almost every Article of cloaths that I had as did Major Ross and almost every body else

Major Ross has been Remarkably kind and has paid me the greatest attention Since I have been in this country —— you will
See by the General order of the 24 of March last of his having appointed me to Act as Quarter Master General & Keeper of the Public Stores during the Continuation of the Martial Law or until the Governors in Chief and Captain Generals Pleasure is Know of which last (the Keeper of the Public Stores) I have been within these few days Supperseeded by Letter by the Supply —— I informd you that I had been appointed First Lieutenant (by the death of Poor Captain Shea) Since the 3rd. of Feb. 1789 in Geoe. Johnstones Vacancy and as Major Ross has not the least manner of doubt but that the appointments will be confirmd —— if so I will thank you to be so good as to get me an exchange to Plymouth as at present I belong to Portsmh. Division —— Kellow whome you will see by my Letter which I wrote Mrs. Clark (per Supply) of the Situation he had been in for Some time before our coming to this Island and his Brother officers permitting him to Return to duty with them again on his promise of an amendment in his Conduct but I am Sorry to Say he soon brock that promise after his arrival here and his Conduct has been of late in the opinion of us all So very much Unbecoming the Character of an Officer & Gentleman that we have beged of Majr. Ross that he will not put us under the disagreeable necessity of doing duty any longer with a man who we think a disgrace to the Corps he Serves in and who we are determined never to associate with which Request Majr. Ross has complyed with and Mr. Kellow is Suspended from all duties in the Detachment untill further orders —— The Mount Pit Birds have been the greatest friends that ever any of us Know for I may with truth Say that the[y] have Saved all our lives —— the greatest part of us Should have been long agoe in our graves if it had not been for these birds —— Since April last there has been no less one night with a nother than between four and five Thousand Kild —— I Shall Return my thanks for them the longes day I have to live —— the[y] are all nearly gone the[y] Just lasted untill the arrival of the Ships but there is a nother bird come in now also a Sea fou[1] which Burrows in the ground also like the Mount Pit Bird (which the[y] call mutton Birds) from there tasting like mutton —— the[y] are Remarkably fatt and in great abundance

There is no news I have worth Sending you we are all longing for the arrival of the Gorgon which Ship we are informed we are all to goe home —— I wish that She was arrived

I am happy to find by Yours that all your family are in good health to whom make my best wishes and be assured nothing will give me greater Pleasure than to here of the health and welfare of you and family and am with the greates truth

Your Sincere friend

Ralph Clark

Creswell is in good health who writes also by this opportunity in Short we have not a person that can be cald Sick —— this is a Remarkable healthy Island for Since the first Setteling there has been only one person died a natural death and that was an
(Old Woman) but we had a Shocking Accident happen here a few days back in landing the Convicts (from the Ship which this goes by) brought here —— one of the Boats what was Save when the Sirius was lost belonging to her in coming on Shore with four casks of Salt Provision, 6 Women, a Child belonging to one of the Women the Boat was Set on the Riff by the Tide and the Surf braking at the Same time in the Boat which brock the Boat to pieces by which three of the Women, the child, two of the Boats crew and a Convict that went in to assist them were drownnd although there was near five hundred people within a few Yards of the Boat at the time and could give them but very little assistance

Adieu Yrs. R.C.

I have taking the liberty to Send a Small Box for Mrs. Clark directed to You which I will thank you to Send her

Clark to Wolrige

Norfolk Island
August 27th. 1790
Sir

Your Letter pr. Favour of Captain Nepean I Received a few days Since by the Surprize Store Ship from Port Jackson Acquainting me with the death of Mr. Hartwell as also enclosing a Letter of Attorney for me to Sign which Letter of Atty. you will here with Received inclosed, filled up, witnessed and Signed as directed which I hope will come Save to hand

I am exceedingly Sorry for the Death of Mr. Hartwell —— I feel much for his family in there having lost So Valuable a friend —— I can with great truth Say that I alwayse found him in every Sence of the word an honest man

You also acquaint me that I am debter to the late Mr. Hartwell £76.11.6 but I am much at a loss to think how I can be indebted to him near So much and from a Letter which I have from Mrs. Clark dated December the 2d. 1789 where in She informs me that my debt to the late Mr. Hartwell is £50 as also that You had Reduced the allowance to £20 pr. annum from what Mr. Hartwell had promised to pay her Yearly in my absents which on your Receiving this you will continue to pay her the Sum of £30 pr. annum as formely —— I wrote Mr. Hartwell in March last (Pr. Supply) when I acquainted him that I had drawn on him for the Sume of £ [*] Sterling payable to the Executors of the late Captain Shea which I beg he would please to honour when payment became due but from the death of Mr. Hartwell I have to beg of you as one of the Executors of the late Mr. Hartwell to honour the above Bill when presented
I am Sir
Your Most Obdt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
To
Mr. Thos Wolrige
Pay Office
Plymouth

*The letter to Mr. Hartwell alluded to above is not included in Clark's letter book.

Clark to Wolrige

Norfolk Island
August 28th. 1790
Sir
I wrote You Yesterday by the Surprize (in which I inclosed the Letter of Attorney Signed and Witnessed According to disire) but as there is a chance of the Ship that this goes by the Justinian getting home before the Surprize if in Such case I hope this will enable you to Receive my Subsistance
As I informed you in my Letter of Yesterdays date which I again here Repeat that I am Exceedingly Sorry for the death of Mr. Hartwell for in him I think Society has lost one of its most Valuable Members that of a truly honest man which I have always found him
I Am Sir
Your Most Obdt. Servt.
Ralph Clark
To
Mr. Thos. Wolrige
Pay Office
Plymouth
Clark to Campbell

Norfolk Island
Feby. 10th. 1791
My Dr. Friend
In the first place I Return you my best thanks for your Very Kind Letter which I Received in August last by the Justinian Store Ship in the Second of your friendly remembrance to me in your letter to Major Ross from whom I am Exceedingly happy to learn of Your good State of health which I pray God may long be your constant companion
Majr. Ross, Your little friend (John) are very well as is every body here in perfect health John Johnstone excepted who Return to Port Jackson in the Supply for the Recovery of it which I think he never will Regain for in my opinion he is past all medical assistance
I am exceedingly Sorry to inform You that we have not lived amongst each other in that State of harmony which I flatter myself at our first arrival we Should but it has been quite the contrary —— we have been constantly bickering with each other which I believd would not have happened had the Supply cald here in her way to Batavia and taking Mr. Bradley along with her which I find was to have been the case could She have made the Island —— if it had not I think been for him we should have lived as happy as the days are long —— he has been the fountain I am pretty certain from whom all our Hot water has flown from for soon after the Supplies leaving this in March last he quited the Mess and went and Messed by himself —— he did all in his power to make Captain Hunter quite at the same time which he could not effect untill August when that Gentleman left the Mess also and has Kept at so great a distance from Major Ross ever Since as hardly to have Spoke to each other (I cannot give any Reason for this Strang manner of Acting Except that he found that he had got all the little comforts that Major Ross had Such as Tea, Sugar, Liquor for Majr. Rosses little Stock which he was able to save from the Sirius lasted him untill that time for he saved very little) he then went and Messed with his first Lieut which he has done ever Since —— In Short every Officer of the Sirius here has followed ther Captain & 1st. Lieutenants Steps So much So that the[y] often have breached Major Ross whout paying him the least Compliment and more So the Queens Birth day neather Captain Hunter or any of hisOfficers waited on Major Ross to pay him the Compliments in honer of the day as the Kings Officer Commanding in Chief here —— I here by leave to mention a little curcumstance to you to Show you the generous disposition of the Second Captain of His Majestys late Ship Sirius which is that he Saved four hogsheads of wine from the wreck three of them he Said belonged to Captain K: Stuart
of the Navy and the other to Mr. Palmer but which last has Since proved to belong to himself —— while he met with Major Ross he never So much as offered a Single drop of the Said wine to him then or Since although he knows Major Ross had nothing but water to drink but the moment he went and Messed with his friend Mr. Bradley he began making use of it and I am told has ever Since —— dont you think he is a pretty friend

I assure you Captain Campbell that Majr. Ross has Since he has been in this Island to prevent having any Disputes has not taking notice of Matters which he could and I am certain he would in any other place But for the above Reasons that of wishing to live on good terms with every body but I dont no how it is the[y] would not let him but I hope the few of use that now Remains will live together like Brothers and I dont See any thing to prevent use

As Major Ross informs me that he sends you coppies by this oppertunity of all the Resolutions, orders in Council during the Continuation of the Martial Law as well as the orders Proclaimed Since and the Plan which he has put in force for the Convicts to make themselves independent of the Store after a Certain time therfore a Repition of them from Me will be quite needless —— by the Justinian I wrote to Kempster inclosing to him coppies of the Resolutions, orders in Council &c. from the first Proclaming of the Martial Law —— I think it will be in England before any the Governor can Send —— I hope that I did not wrong in Sending them as Major Ross did not Send them to any Public Office or to Private Correspondance

I flatter myself that after your reading the above Plan (for the Convicts to live independent of the Store) You will be of the Same opinion as Major Rosses Friends are her (of which I am afraid he has but few Sincere ones) myself Excepted that it will doe him very great Credit and I think the Minstry will be very much obliged to him for putting in force a Plan which the[y] So ardently wish for but I dont think Major Ross will be much thank by his good and worthier friends in your part of the Colony as well as by Some in this —— the[y] will endeavour to throw every drop of Cold water on it in ther power to make it Miscarry as Major Ross is the planner of it but let the Governor make what alterations he thinks proper in it but for his own Sake he will not prevent its being Carried into Execution or Some Plan Similar to it for I think if he dose he will get Mr. Pit on his Back who I believe dose not Ride easy when ther is a Call on the Treasury for Money which will be the Case if Majr. Rosses Plan is not Carried Most Effectively in to Execution for in my humble opinion ther will (in the present State of the Colony) cannot be a better —— dont be Surprized when I inform You that after the Trouble you took this time twelv months for Mr. Kellow for his Brother officers to permit him to Return and doe duty with us again on a promise of Amendment in his future Conduct, that promise Simile he Soon forgot, for in July last his behaviour in all our Opinions here, has been Remarkably ill, So much So, that we were obliged to write to Major Ross to beg of him not to put us under the disagreeable Necessity of doing duty with a man
whose character we Really think to be infamous and derogatory to that of an Officer and Gentleman and who we are determined never to associat with, which Request Majr. Ross granted and in consequence he has been Suspended from all duties in the Detachment &c. —— I have Sent you in Case Majr. Ross has not a Copyy of the Letter which we wrote to Majr. Ross in Consequence of Mr. Kellows ill conduct —— John Johnstone whom I suppose you will See Soon after his arrival at Port Jackson will tell you more about the matter —— I wish You also to ask him as he knows the whole of the matter which I doe not so as to be able to give a true Statement of Subject Respecting a Quarrel between Mr. Bryan and Shortland which I am told is not Quite Settled but from the little I no of the matter, Mr. Bryan Seems to have lost himself very much which I am Sorry for on Account of his connexion with Major Ross

As Majr. Ross informd me that You Acquaint him of your want of Corn for the little Stock which you have been able to collect for your Selves for a Sea Store, in case he Should forget to mention to you (from the hurry and the number of things he has to think off at this time) he has sent on board of the Supply under the care of Mr. Callam two Casks of Corn, one of Wheat and the other of Indian Corn also a few Onions for your present consumtion —— the Corn he hopes will be able to last you untill the Return of the Supply —— he would have sent you more by this opportunity but they cannot find Room for any more on board and that you need not be under the least concern for the want of that Article as Majr. Ross and Self will be able to bring a Sufficient Quantity for Sea Store to Carry use to any other Port where we can Supply ourselves from a Market and as for fowls, Hogg &c. I would advise you not to Purchase any more as Majr. Ross will be able to bring away with him from her of his own Geese, Ducks, fowls, Hogs and Pigs, more than he will I am affraid be able to find Room on board the Gorgon if that Should be the Ship we are to goe home in —— as for Chests, Boxs &c. there is also a Sufficient number all Ready for any thing they may be wanted for of which number is one he has got to Pack the Birds in which he wanted to have sent now with the Birds he has been able to Collect her but the[y] are not able to find Room for it on board, which I Believe

I have to beg of you to be so good on the Arrival of any Ships (or from the Dutchman if he Should not be gone) to purchas me if any Such things are to be Sold as much linnen as will make a half Dozen of Shirts, a Couple pair of Sheets and three or four pieces of Nankeen —— I Should not Trouble you with this Commission if I was not very much in want of them for I lost most all my linnen by the Sirius and Should not have Saved So much as I did if it had not been for Mr. Walker who was on the Beach when one of the Seamen came on Shore with Some of my Shirts on His Back which Mr. Walker took from the Seaman and deliverd to me

By a Letter which I have from Kempster by the last Ships from Europe he Acquaints me that he Shiped a great number of
things on board of the Guardian for me of which I have not Received a Single Article as you mention to Majr. Ross of a Pice of Red Cloath being at Port Jackson that was Saved out of the Guardian I wrot for as much as would make me a Coat and Jackett and Kempster informs me that he Sent all the things which I wrote for —— I beg of You (if you think it worth my while) to put in a claim with the others that had Such an Article coming out but Should it be more or less than will make a Coat and Jackett I have no pretentions to it and Should any article directed to me come to Port Jackson in my Absence I futher beg of you to take care of them for me —— I have Sent under the care of Mr. Callam a Small Box with what Seeds the Natural production of this Island that I have been able to collect which are very few —— I hope you have been able to collect a good number Since we left you as I did not Save a Single Seed out of the great number of different kinds I had —— in the Box you will also find a little Small Shot which I Said to Majr. Ross that it would be of more Service to you than to him here as Such he has therfore Sent it to you and Should you be in any want of Powder Major Ross has told Callam to inform you to apply to Ball for what you want and inform him that Majr. Ross will on the Supplys Arrival her Repay him any Quantity he may Supply you —— the Box being made to hold more than for the Small Quantity of Seeds which I have to put in I thought I could not doe Better than fill it up with Onions which you will be So good as to give half a dozen of to Timins with my best wishes to him —— at the Same time inform him if there is any thing here which I can Send him I will with the greatest pleasure & with that friendship which I Really posses for him —— As I hope to here from you pr. Return of the Supply doe let me no all that you can about this new Corps —— if there is any thing to be offerd to induce use to enter into it for nobody knows any thing about the matter heer or if the[y] doe the[y] keep it to themselves —— make my Compt. to Nepean and that I am very much obliged to him for the care he took of my Letters and that if he will come here I shall be very happy to See him and more So if he brings the Relief with him

Adieu my friend and believe me that I am Strictly in every Sence of the word
Yours very Sincerely
Ralph Clark

My best wishes to James, whome I had almost forgot, tell him his old play fellow (who I believe writes to him as well as to you) is very well and that he is grown very much and his taking his guard Regular ever Since he has been heer as well as the best of use, he prides himself very much on his not being the Youngest officer in the Collony as he Says there is one in the New Corps Younger than him

P:S: I am Just Returned from carring a Messaged to Captain Hunter from Majr. Ross in Consequence of Some Conversation that Captain Hunter and I had this morning Respecting Some fowls and Corn which Majr. Ross has Sent on board of the Supply
for Captain Hunter use on his passed from here to Port Jackson which Conversation I thought necessary to mention to Majr. Ross which was that he would not think of Accepting the fowls and Corn that Majr. Ross had Sent on board on Account of the terms which the[y] had been for this Some time past on —— on my mentioning the above to Majr. Ross he begd of me to goe and tell Captain Hunter that his Reasons for his Sending the fowls and Corn on board for him was that as he Captain Hunter had Accepted every little present which Majr. Ross had ever Sent to him and knowing he had no Such thing of his Own was his only Reason for Sending them —— at the Same time wishing to no if he had any Public complaint to make against him Majr. Ross or if the Quarrell which Seemd to Subsist between them was a Private one for he wished to no on what terms if ever the[y] Should meet again the[y] were to meet —— Captain Hunter gave me for Answer that he had no Public Complaint to make against Majr. Ross nor Private Quarrel with him and if ever the[y] Should meet again he wished for nothing more than common Civility as he never wished to be on the Same friendly footing which they had once been —— Captain Hunter and I talked over every thing from the first Landing on this Island Untill this moment —— in the Course of the Conversation he Said that he had been told that Majr. Ross had wrote home a Complaint against him to the Admiralty (as I was Certain that Majr. Ross had never done Such a thing) I told him that I would not leave him to goe back to Majr. Ross untill he had told me who the person was that had informed him —— he beged that I would Excuse him —— I told him I would not nor could I in Justice to my friend whom I was Certain was Innocent of the Charge made against him —— When after Some time, little John going past use, he Said pointing to him there he is ther who the information came from who told it to (Ross) the Quarter Master who mentioned it to Mr. Parker the Carpenter who Acquainted me with it, that Majr. Ross was very busy in writing a Complaint against me (Captain Hunter) to the Admiralty —— I told him (Captain Hunter) I was very much obliged to him for informing me who the person was that had given him Such information but at the Same time he must excuse me in telling him (Capt. Hunter) that I did not believe that the child had ever Said Such a thing but that I should Mention it to Majr. Ross which I did who asked John if ever he had Spoke to (Ross) the Quarter Master of the Sirius which he poor fellow Said he had never which I believe to be true for the child did not like them (the Seamen) so well what can you make of Such a man (as Captain Hunter) Major Ross has taking no notice of it, which I think he is very Right in as he is Concious of never having Said or done any thing that could tend to the disadvantage of Captain Hunter Since on this Island —— there was a great dele more past between Captain Hunter and me which I will Releate to You when we Meet

adieu Your &
R C
To
Captain Campbell
Marines
Port Jackson

Clark to Campbell

Feby. 11th. 1791
Dr. Sir

As the Supply has not Yet left use I embrace the opportunity to write You a few more lines as I forgot to inform you in my letter of Yesterday how we were able to Subsist ourselves untill the Arrival of a Supply of Provisions by the Surprize and Justinian Store Ships in August last —— if it had not been for the great abundance of Birds which resorted to Mount Pit about Sun Set the greatest part of use would have been in our Graves before the Arrival of the above Ships —— you will hardly believe me when I inform you that from the latter end of April untill the Middle of July no Smaller a number on a very moderate Computation than five thousand was Kild a night —— I have often know Seven and Eight thousand, particularly on the Sunday Evenings brought into Camp by the Sailors, Marines and Convicts (male and female) which number was caught in a few hours —— there never was a Bird Caught untill one hour after Sun Set and every body was obliged to leave to mount before ten oClock —— they never came in from Sea (or where ever the[y] come from for that I doe not no) untill about Sun Set when the[y] generally hoved about the mount for ane hour before the[y] came down which was a thick as a Shour of hail —— this Account will make the Old Story of Moses being in the Wilderness be a little more believed Respecting the Shour of quails —— every body heer ous there existance to the Mount Pit Birds —— before the[y] intirly left use a nother Bird came in and Supplyd there place but was not attached to Mount Pit only but was found in the holes of the ground in the day time all over the Island —— the[y] Resemble the Mount Pit Bird in Plumage, make &c all but the feet which are white which the Mount Pit Birds are not —— the[y] eat when Boild like Mutton for which we named them the flying Sheep —— the[y] were also in great abundance for Six weeks when ther Young tooke flight and the[y] all left use

from the beginning of April untill the 20 of July we had abundance of Fish when the Surf would permit the Boats to goe out and after the 20 of July untill the begining of Decr. we were not able to Catch a fish by the Boats or from the Rocks, now when
the Surf permits the Boats to go out we catch a good number but not in Such abundance as in the Months of May and June — I have kept a Memorandum of every fish that was Caught by the Boats Since I have been in the Island and how the[y] have been Served out — also as nearly as I have been able the number of Mount Pit Birds that were brought into Camp of which I intended to have Sent you a Copy by this opportunity but for the want of Time must defer it untill the Return of the Supply

Majr. Ross desires me to inform you that he Received from Captain Hunter 106 pounds of Ships Sugar and 150 pounds of Raisins belonging to Mr. Palmer which cannot be Settled for her as Captain Hunter dose not no what Mr. Palmer will charge for them — he therfore desires that you will be so good as to pay Mr. Palmer for them and charged it to him (Major Ross) I have also further to inform you that should any thing happen to John Johnstone so as to prevent Majr. Rosses Seeing him again eather by his going home or Death he is indebted to Majr. Ross for 25 pounds of the above Raisins — I mention this to you that Majr. Ross may not be a loser by his forgetfulness as he is gone on board without mentioning how or when he is to pay Majr. Ross for the Said 25 pounds of Raisins

Adieu
Yours Sinceerly
R Clark
To
Captain Campbell
Marines
Port Jackson

Campbell to Clark

My Dear Clark
I am not as angry as I am vexed with you for entertaining So dispicable an opinion of both yourself and me as Major Ross informs me you do — after what Repeatedly passed between you and me prior to your leaving this place It should in my opinion have convinced you that Such an idea could never enter into my head and if it had be assured that you and no other would have been the person that I would have mentioned it to — but the truth is that I would just as soon have Suspected myself as I would you — after the many Repeated proofs you gave of your friendship of an intention of leading Major Ross a
stray —— when I took the liberty of Cautioning Majr. Ross against the idle Reports of those who might call themselves his friends I would not possibly alluded to any more than Majr. Ross himself had Said to me of Some of the Young people of the Sirius & what Captain Hunter Said of the Same people for from no others have I ever heard a Silable of what passed at Norfolk but what I have had from Mr. Callum from what he told me I was no longer Surprized at what Major Ross had Said —— This Gentleman I have ever found too much a time Server and too much attached to Self interest to have any high opinion of or to repose more confidence in than I would in any other Character here —— when he mentioned to me his having had his Suspicions of You and that he believed he had Said as much to me I told him that he had never hinted at Such an idea to me for that if he had I most undoubtedly would have set him right —— with respect to the injury he did you, his Answer was that he was now well convinced of it himself and that there was no man of whome he had A higher opinion than he now had of You —— on his Saying that he formed his first opinion of you from the report of others and not from his own knowlege —— I Represented the folly of Such judgements —— something more passed with which he was not as I Suppose pleased as he has not been near me Since —— I am many letters in arrears to you owing to one Accident or other but what gives me most concern is that I have not had it in my power to get any of the Commissions you intrusted to my Care executed which I hope you will believe me did not proceed from want of inclination but the want of power —— The Stockings which I intended for you I am happy that you did not get for they were not only very bad but very dear from half a Guinea to twelve Shillings —— I hope that we Shall now soon meet —— when if you are in want of any part of what I have I can with Truth assure you that a part shall with much Satisfaction be Speard you —— you will know the State in which you left me here —— I have now only to tell you that it is not a bit mended —— It is true we are all from the teeth outwards on good terms with each other and I have made it my Study to be as attentive and Civil to all as my Situation could permit but I must likewise observe that I have not met with any Return of it from one individual amongst them —— however we let that Business drop for the present and when we meet it will Serve for conversation and will I think not a little Surprise after having as I understand you have been told of the harmony among us

with this letter you have one which was lately sent to me by the Govr. who it seems found it in a Chest belonging to one of the Convicts at Rose Hill when Searching for some Stolen goods —— as it was sent to me Sealed I know not the contents —— it however Serves to let us know how very little care was takin on board the Guardian of what ever was intended for us —— The Gentlemen who have any claim upon the piece of Scarlet Cloath mentioned in one of my former letters have determined to let it Remain in Store till your Return to us
With respect to all the news in my power to collect I refer you to my letter to Majr. Ross which will save me the trouble of a
repetition and therefore as I have at present nothing more to say but what concerns yourself which is that if you will only let me
know the things you want by the return of this ship and if they can be procured they shall be sent to you

God bless you and all that's good and happy attend you. So sincerely wish your friend

Jas. Campbell
Sydney
6th. Augt. 1791
To
Lieut R. Clark
Marines
Norfolk Island

Johnston to Clark

Sydney
August 7th. 1791
Dr. Clark

On my arrival at this place from Norfolk Island I found a piece of Scarlet Cloath in the Qr. Masters Store which I have every
reason to suppose belongs to me but as I have understood that you had a great quantity of things coming out to you from
England I would not take it until I know if you had any claim to it although I believe every officer here has allowed it to be
mine

I shall therefore be much obliged to you if by the return of the Mary Ann you will let me know if you have any claim to the
Scarlet Cloath in the Store & if you have any account of Scarlet Cloath being sent out to you what quantity you expected and
what the person who sent it wrote to you upon that subject

I hope we shall soon see the Gorgon here to carry us to England otherwise they must allow us Field Officers pay for at present
they ask a guinea a gallon for Rum and the same for a pound of Tobbacca & every thing else in proportion but I hope we shall
soon be in the Land of Plenty
I Remain
Dr. Clark Yours
Geo: Johnston
To
Lieut Clark
Marines
Norfolk Island

Clark to Johnston

Norfolk Island
August 29th. 1791
Dr. Johnston

By the Mary Ann Transport which Arrived here the 14th. Inst. I was favoured with your letter of the 7th. by which you inform me that the piece of Scarlet Cloath which is still in the Quarter Masters Store you have every Reason to Suppose to belong to you but as you Understand that I had a great Quantity of things coming out from England you would not take it untill you know if I had any Claim to it and that you wish me to inform you Pr. Return of the Mary Ann if I had any Claim to the Scarlet Cloath in the Store and that you also wish to know if I have any Account of Scarlet Cloath being sent out to me, the Quantity I Expected and what the Person who sent it wrot me on the Subject

In Answer to which the only Claim that I have is that by a letter which I have from Lieut & Qr. Master Kempster (Pr. favour of Captain Nepean) where in he informs me that he hopes I have Received his letter by the Guardian and the Cask with what things I wrote for and as I wrote by one of the Ships which left Port Jackson in Novr. 88, amongst other things for as much Scarlet Cloath as would make a Coat and Jacket —— I therfore Suppose that Article was Sent as well as the other things which I wrote for

on the Supplys Arrival here in Feby. last I understood from Major Ross that there was a piece of Scarlet Cloath in the Qr. Masters Store at Port Jackson without any direction on it which had been Saved out of the Guardian —— on the Supplys Return I wrote to Captain Campbell Respecting it Acquainting him that I had wrote for as much Scarlet Cloath as would make me a
Coat & Jacket and by a letter which I had from Kempster he informs me that he had sent all the things which I had wrote for by
the Guardian —— as Such I desired him to put in a claim for me with the others that had Such an Article coming out but further
informed him that Should it be more or less than would make a Coat and Jacket I had no pretentions to it —— if Captain
Campbell has my letter of Feby. last Still by him, he can inform you that the above is what I wrote to him Respecting the Cloath
—— Kempster's letter to me dose not Mention any particular Article which letter I would have herwith inclose to you but as it
contains mostly private affairs I hope that will be a Sufficient Excusse for not Sending it —— I have Shown Faddy the
paragraph in the letter wherin he Acquaints me of his Sending the things in the Guardian and as Faddy writes to Creswell I have
beged of him to mention to Creswell that I have Shown him that part of Kempsters letter where he informs me that he has Sent
all the things by the Guardian which I wrote for which I hope will Convince you as well as the Rest of my Brother officers that
when I desired Captain Campbell to lay in a Claim for me that I did not doe it without Some pretentions —— as You Acquaint
me that you have Every Reason to Suppose that the Cloath is Yours and that Every Officer at Port Jackson also allows it to be
yours as Such I withdraw every claim that was made on behalf of me and give up every pretentions what ever to it

I hope by the time you Receive this that the Gorgon will be with you —— there is nothing under heaven I wish So much for
as her Arrival here to take use all away for of all the places under the Sun this is without Exception the most disagreeable that
possible can be —— you and Creswell are both happy fellows to have got Save the out Side of the Reef and at Such a distance
from it —— Captain Hill soon after you left use Quarrel’d with Major Ross and which Quarrel Still Subsists —— Faddy and
Hill dont Sit there Horses together neither for Faddy and him have not Exchd. a word for these ten weeks past —— I dont much
admire him myself for he talks too much of having people before the Kings Bench for me —— Major Ross has Removed Him
and all the detachment of the New South Wales Corps on this Island to doe duty at Phillipsburg (Cascade) by themselves which
I am glad of and hope they will Remain there while we stay in the Island —— I understand from Prentice that he and Abbott
have wrote (by this Convayance) letters to be delivered to Majors Gross or Melcombe which ever of them Should arrive first at
Port Jackson praying for a Court Martial on Nepean but for what Reason I am not Acquainted —— we here have had nothing
but Court Martials Since you have been gone and all of them in the N:S:W: Corps Except one on a man belonging to use which
was on (Ellis) Major Ross Servant whome Captain Hill brought to a Court Martial for Contempt and Repeated disrespect Shown
to him in not paying him the Compliment due to him as an officer of which Crime Ellis was Acquitd —— there has been no
alteration in the Detachment Since you left this Except that Clinch is Reduced

from the present appearence of the Crops of Indian Corn and wheat it has all the indication that there will be a most plentiful
Harvest here —— Faddy informs me that Creswell wishes that I would Send him as much of the Pine wood as will make a Cott freim —— be so good as to Acquaint Creswell that I have Sent on Board of the Mary Ann a Plank of 5 Inches deep 23 Inches Broad and 14 feet long for him under the Care of Mr. Lawson which I hope will come Save and Answer the purpose he wants it for and if there is here any thing which I can doe for you & if you will let me know it I will perform it if possible with pleasure & I Remain

Dr. Johnston Yours
Ralph Clark

To
Captain Johnston
Marines
Port Jackson

Clark to Campbell

Norfolk Island
August 29th 1791
Dear Campbell

Your Kind letter by the Mary Ann Transport I received the 14 Inst. believe me that though I did not write to you on the Supplys Return in may last I was then not less your friend than I am this present moment —— I can with truth assure you that there is no two men Existing whose friendship I Value more than I doe yours and Major Ross's but I cannot help Remarking that on the Return of the Supply from Carrying Captain Hunter and his Ships Companie from this to Port Jackson I was Vexed in not hearing from you and was more So on Major Rosses Reading to me a paragraph from your letter to him wher you Caution him against the idle reports of those who might call themselves his friends —— at that time there was no other person her who Major Ross placed any Confidence in but myself as such I could not think any other but that you alluded to me but your present letter has fully convinced me that I have been in the wrong to think you entertained such an idea of me that of leading Major Ross a Stray and I am now fully of your opinion that if I had given myself the Smallest time for Recollection and Recald to my memory what Repeatedly passed between you and me prior to my Embarking for this Island Such an opinion must Instantly
have been Banished from my Breast —— I therfore have nothing left but to ask your forgiveness which I heer most willingly
ask of you

Ever Since I have been on this Island and prior to my arrival in it when ever Major Ross asked me for my opinion either as an
officer or as a Private Gentleman and friend I can lay my hand on my heart and tell you as well as all the World that as an
officer I gave it him to the best of my Judgment and as a Private Gentleman and friend I gave him that also as a man of honour
and a True friend —— if I had acted otherwise (according I believe to the wish of soom of our good friends) I then should have
prostituted the name of man and friend which I trust they never will be by me —— Concious my Dear friend that in the whole
course of my life there is not a Single Action in it that gives me the Smallest Remorse for to my Country and my friend I have
been ever true —— I therfore am Quite indifferent what people in this part of the worlds opinion is of me —— Although I am
well convinced that there is a great many in this Colony that wish that I was at the D . . . I as well on your Side of the Stream as
the opposite Side of it and I Believe would give a Trifle that if possible they could make a Breack in the friendship which
Subsist between Major Ross and me but that friendship I flatter myself is not to be brock by any Set of men in this Colony or by
any promise or Reward that is possible for man to make me —— as for Mr. Callum I entertain the Same opinion of him as you
doe of whom I will not Say more at present —— you doe a little Surprize me by your informing me that you are on the terms
with the people a round you as when I left you for I understood from Mr. Callum the last time he was here that the greatest
harmony Subsist between you and them particularly between Pouldon, Furzer and you who he said often dinned with you ——
I have been often told not to believe above the half that I heer which I as often found I ought not to doe —— I am Sorry to
Acquaint you that we have not lived on Such good terms with the New South Wales Corps as I on the Supplys Return to you I
flatterd myself we should —— they are without Exception the most Selfish Set of men I ever cam a Cross and as for Hill I dont
know what to call him but as Majr. Ross will inform you of that particular I therfore most Refer you to his letter —— as we are
Constantly in hott water with them Majr. Ross has Removed them all to Phillipsburgh (Cascade) where they have been for some
time and Since they have been gone we have lived as happy as the day is long —— that is Majr. Ross, Faddy, Considen, little
John and myself and heer I beg leave to congratulate you that the disagreemnt between Majr. Ross and Considen no longer
Subsist but was Amicably Settled to the Satisfaction of both as well as to me for I have been long trying to bring this matter
round which I thank god is at last accomplished —— dont you think this will Surprize some of the people to the Right and left
of you —— as for myself I Believe it will give some the Grips for a little while untill they can get some thing fresh to work on
—— Respecting the Scarlet Cloath Geoe. Johnston has wrot to me about it informing me that he has Every Reason to Suppose
that it belongs to him —— I have wrote to him in Answer my Reason for desiring you to be so good as to lay in a Claim for me but as he thinks that it is his I have told him a Such I withdraw every Claim that you laid on behalf of me and give up every pretentions whatever to it —— I am much oblige to you for your kind offer and should I want any of the things which you may be able to spare me I shall make no Scruple to ask you for them —— the things which I wish you to purchas for me are on the enclose list which if you can get them for me without given too Extravagant a price for them I will be much obliged to you —— Majr. Ross has desired me to mention to you for fear he should forget it in his letter that you must get Some hay Cut to carry to Sea with use when we leave Port Jackson and that you had better kill as much of your Stock which he Says you are keeping up for Sea Store as we shall be able to bring more away from this of Hoggs and Poultry of all kinds than there will be room for on board of the Gorgon —— there will be about 40 bushels of potatoes put on Board of her for Majr. Ross which are now ripe but will not take them out of the Ground for this month to come and Majr. Ross further desired me to tell you that if it is Captn. Wm. Parker who Commands the Gorgon that he knows him very well is an old Mess mate of Majr. Rosses and a very good fellow and he wishes for you to find out if he goes home in the Ship with use or not —— if he dose that you would Endeavour to See him and make Major Rosses Compt. to him and inform him that Majr. Ross wishes that he would not give himself any trouble to purchasse any Stock at Port Jackson that if Captain Parker agrees to our living together that in such case Majr. Ross will put on Board as much Stock as he can find room for —— I have sent on Board of the Mary Ann a Small Cask containing 83 Eggs, 4 Yams, Some Bananas &c. for you —— also the Sugar Cask which you sent to Majr. Ross is full of Callavances for your present Consumption —— Prentice has just informed me that he and Abbot Sends letters by this conveyance to Port Jackson for Majors Gross or Melcombe which ever of them may arrive first in this Country praying for a Court Martial on Captain Nepean but what there charge against him is I am a stranger too as Yet —— I mention this to you that the first time you See Nepean that you may inform him that there are Such letters at Port Jackson that if he dose not know it he may not be taking by Surprize on Majr. Gross or Melcombe Arrival —— from Majr. Ross you will be informed how very ill he has been Since you last herd from him but by the goodness of the Almighty God he is at this present moment as well as he ever was in his life which I pray long may he continue So —— your little fellow John is very well and grows very fast and what is Still better is a very good Boy —— the letter which accompanys this directed to Kempster I will thank you to Send it on the first Ship that leaves Port Jackson for China as it is a few lines for Mrs. Clark —— as I dont think the China Ships will call here therfore any thing which you may wish to Send to me you had Better not Send them by any of those Ships Except that they have Stores &c. on board to be landed here —— I have taking the liberty with you to direct a Box as if for you but it is for Connell of your
Company

God Almighty Bless and preserve you is the constant wish of your Sincere friend

Ralph Clark

I have not put any of the Bananas in the cask with the Eggs and Yams but have sent you a Bunch under the care of Captain Monro which I hope will come safe —— Faddy and Considen begs there best wish to you —— if you Expect to hear from me by any other opportunity you must send me a Sheet of Paper for I have not got a Single Sheet

To

Captain Campbell
Marines
Port Jackson

Callam to Clark

Sydney Cove
Septemr. 3d. 1791
Dr. Clark

You will receive this note by the Solamander Captain Nickol who arrived at this port a few days since & is orderd for Norfolk with a Hundred & three male Convicts —— there is no Occurrence at this Miserable place since my last to Majr. Ross worth Communicating —— notwithstanding standing every Exertion of the Carpenter has not been Successfull in obtaining a Tree Sufficiently Sound or any ways fit to Repair the Supplies main mast —— the William & Ann Transport likewise the Atalantic in which Ship Lieut Bowen one of the Agents of Transports has arrived —— they have got Porter, Port wine, Tea, Sugar & Tabaco &c. —— the Articles were to be charged at the Rate of Cent Pr. Cent but most Articles appear charged double that price they likewise Refuse Accepting Bills that are not endorsed Reciprocally amongst the Officers —— this Step has given general umbrage & thier goods as Yet Remain on Hand —— I have indeed Received a few dozens of Porter which is Excellent a little Tobacco and some Sop & wine for the Mess but am determined neither to endorse or have my bills endorsed unless the Officers in Camp adapt the form —— Capt'n. Campbell informs me he has sent you plenty of News papers but I Believe they contain but little entertainment —— the Arrival of the Gorgon is hourly looked for which will Relieve the general anzsity of
Individuals as no private letters of any Sort have as Yet been Received —— Dr. Clark I have taken the liberty of transmitting you half a Dozen Sp: Dollars in order that you would take the Trouble to purchasing us a few fowls —— Captn. Nickol has promised to take greatest care of any that may be sent on board from —— be so good in Return to Say if there is any thing that Blackburn or myself could do for Majr. Ross or Mr. Clark at this port as it would afford a particular pleasure in Return for the Many Kind & friendly offices confered on use —— our best wishes for Majr. Ross & Sons well fare with our Complements to all the officers

& Remain your most obliged & Sinceer well wisher
Jas. Callam
To
Lieut Ralph Clark
Marines
Norfolk Island

Clark to Callam

Norfolk Island
Sept. 29, 1791
Dr. Callam

Your Pr. favour of Captain Nicol of the Solamandar with the Small parcel containing the Six Spanish Dollars I have Recieved —— I am happy to learn by Yours that you and Mr. Blackburn are well & I hold my self very much obliged to you and him for your kind offer —— But as Captain Campbell prior to my leaving port Jackson was so very kind and obliging to offer to negotiate any little Business for me which I ther want done at Port Jackson and whose friendly offer I then accepted I therfor have Commissiond that Gentleman to transact the little business which I at present want done for me at Port Jackson —— I am Sorry that I have not been So Successful an Agent for you as I could wish in not been able to procure more fowls than 15 with the Money which you sent me for that purpose —— I have sent the fowls on Board of the Salamander under the Care of Captain Nicol who Says that he will take the greatest Care of them for you —— I hope that you will Recieve them all Safe for the[y] are very fine ones —— News from here there is none Except every body is very well and from every apperance there is
every indication that there will be a most plentiful Harvest here —— there is near one hundred Acres in and Round Arthurs Vale and at Queensborough of Some of the finest Wheat that was ever Seen in any part of the World and all coming fine large Ears —— there will be near the same Quantity of Indian Corn planted by the end of this month but the Grubs have played the Devil with the most that has been planted Except at Queensborough where there has not been a Grub seen as Yet —— there is a Queensborough ten Acres of wheat and about thirty Six Acres of Indian Corn which is past the power of the Grub to hurt it and we have nothing now to fear but the fly and Catterpillar which I flatter myself they will not make there appearance so as to doe use any great hurt for of the fly there has been only two Seen and of the Catterpillar none & I hope for the Sake of them that are to Remain here they never will again —— You Complain of the Extortioned prices that the different Masters of the Ships ask for the Articles which they have brought out for Sale —— the Master of the Solamander is not behind hand with them for he asks at least three hundred pr. Cent more on his different Articles which he has for Sale than what they doe at Port Jackson and if it had not been for his Selling his things at so dear a Rate I should have been able to have sent you double the Quantity of fowls for the Money that you Sent but the people when they found that he would not part with his goods at a less Rate than what he at first asked they Rose there fowls from a Shilling to three Shillings at once per fowl —— I was in hopes that I should have had the pleasure of Seing you at Port Jackson long before this —— when you last left this although I am a little out of my Estimation I still flatter myself that, that hope is at no great distance from the hourly Expectation of they Arrival of the Gorgon —— has your Carpenter Realy flatterd himself into a belief that he will be able to find in that part of New South Wales that we as Yet know any thing of a Spar Sufficiently Sound or fit to Repair the main mast of the Supply —— he Surlly must have dreamt it for he is no Stranger for now three years past of the bad Quality of the Timber in the Miserable Country would not the Bowsprite of the Sirius make a mast for the Supply it could easly be got out and sent on the first Ship to Port Jackson —— there is also two good Top Mast and two fishes for mast here —— they I think would doe Better to Repair the Mast of the Supply than any wood your Carpenter will be able to get Round Port Jackson for that purpose —— if there is any thing which I can doe or get done for you or Blackburn here let me know it and I will with pleasure —— Major Ross, little John are both very well and joins me in best wishes to you and Blackburn & Remain

Your Most obliged and well wisher
Ralph Clark
To
Mr. Jas. Callam
Campbell to Clark

Sydney
23d. Augt. 1791
My dear Clark

I am happy for your sake to have it in my power to contradict that part of my letter to Majr. Ross in which I said that there were no letters by the last Ships either for him or any of you that are with him —— Since then I found the Ten enclosed ones which Creswell informed me were in the possession of Captn. Tench who was the first person that boarded the Ship they came by —— It gave me Sinceer pleasure to learn from Lt. Bowen the Agent who came in the above Ship that he had seen Mrs. Clark and left her in perfect health

Every thing that has come to my knowledge and worth the mentioning is containd in my letter to Majr. Ross —— it is therefore unnecessary for me to Repeat what I have there Said —— Should any of your letters contain any Marine news and which you find that I have not mentioned to him pray let me have it from you by return of this Ship

Timmins has called to report his Guard and finding me writing to Norfolk has desired me to present his Complements to Majr. Ross and you

God bless you
Sinceerly wishes
Jas. Campbell
To
Lt R: Clark
Marines
Norfolk Island

Clark to Campbell
Norfolk Island  
Sepr. 30th. 1791  
Dear Campbell

As this is best paper which Norfolk Island affords you ther fore I hope will Excuse the Brownness of it —— I have Received yours containing Six letters for me and I hold myself greatly obliged to you for your kindness in forwarding them too me —— four of them are from Mrs. Clark and contain very little marine news except what you already know —— the appointments made by Major Ross by the Death of Shea were not confirmed on the Sixteen of March but it was the General Belief that they would —— I have no Accounts of the Death of Groves or Wm. Forster mentioned in yours to Major Ross —— Mrs. Ross was very well a few days prior to the date of Mrs. Clarks last letter (the 16 of March) for She informs me that She had Received a letter from her a few days before —— Mrs. C Says that Majr. Rosses Conduct is in General very much condemn only by people that have herd but one Side of the Question and then prepossessed in favour of them that the[y] Recieve Such Accounts from in this Country —— my Dear Campbell the time is draw ing near I hope when peoples Eyes will be oppened respecting this country and the conduction of a certain Set in it —— Every impartial person is astonished what can be the reason that the despatchess brought home by Mr. King are not made Public —— they dont agree with the Private Accounts and Minestry dose not for that Reason wish to have them made Public I Believe —— I have nothing new to send you —— we Remain much in the Same State as when I last wrote you by the Mary Ann —— I hope that we shall Remain here untill Some of the Corns is Ripe otherwise what shall we doe to feed the Stock with —— it will not be long before Some of the Barley will be ripe for it is all in Ear and the wheat is coming in ear very fast —— in my last I informed you that Majr. Ross wished that you would get Some hay Cut fore Sea Store —— I am again desired to remind you of it —— ther is sent on Board of the Solamander 2 Broad planks of about Nine feet long each as you Said in one of your former letters to Major Ross that Timins would be glad of a board to Make a Table of —— they are directed for you and Majr. Ross Says that you may either give him them or keep them Yourself and doe with them what you please —— there is also on board under the Masters Care a Small Box Containing a Role of Tobacco —— that is all that I have got at present fit to Send you —— if we Should not be relieved by the first Ship that leaves Port Jackson for this Island after you receive this if you want any fishing lines or Hooks let me know it and I will send you some —— I See by the papers that your friend Lord Davie is Married to Mrs. Child that was —— I wish to God that you was at Home where Lord Westmoreland is Lord Lieutenant —— I am very much Mistaking if you would remain long in the marines if you was —— I think that it was your letter which Coll: Tallerton read in the House when the Minister was cald on to lay before
the House the Accounts which he had Received by Mr. King from Govr. Phillips —— by the Accounts we have here that Gentleman has not Stuck closly to Truth a little time will Show all —— I Suppose you know that Mercer and White are both Married, the former to a Miss Slaughter and White to a widow Lady of Island —— Majr. Ross and John are very well and both Joins me in Sending you the wishes of a Sincere friend

God Bless you
Yours Sincerly
R. Clark

NB: Considin and Faddy Send there Complementos to you & be so good as to make mine in Return to Timins & my best wishes to James (I will thank you to Send the enclosed letters by the first Ship for china that leaves Port Jackson after you Receive this) once more God Bless you

R. Clark
To
Capt'n. Jas. Campbell
Marines
Port Jackson

Clark to Creswell

Norfolk Island
Sept. 30th. 1791
Dr. Creswell

In the first place you must Excuse the paper as it is the best I have —— the enclose came to me in a letter from Mrs. Clark which She Received from Mrs. Cole —— by the latest letter which I have from Mrs. Clark dated the 16 of March, Mrs. Creswell was Still in London and from the last Accounts which her mother had from her She was in perfect health & was expected to return to Plymouth in the course of a day or two from that date in Companie with Mr. & Mrs. Kempster —— my letters which I have received contain very little marine news —— the Admiralty had not in March confirmed the appointments made in this Country by the Death of Shea —— they Vacancys were then not fild up —— I Suppose you know that Mercer is
married to a Miss Slaughter a Sister of Colln. Slaughter and a Daughter of the late Genl. Slaughter —— White is also married to a Lady of Island a Widow with three children but all of them Independent the mother having herself three Hundred a Year —— Gordon, Mrs. Clark informs me was just Return from the West Indias and Should write Pouldon by the Atalantic —— we are much in the Same State as when you left use, our Crops of wheat in here and at Queensborough look Charmingly and every apparence that there will be a most plentiful Harvest —— of the Catterpillars ther has non made ther apparence yet and of the fly only two have been Seen —— I hope they have taken ther leave of the Island —— ther is near a hundred Acres of Some of the finest wheat that ever was Seen and ther will be by the latter end of the ensuing month the Same number of Acres planted with Indian corn beloning to the Public —— the Grub have destroyed a great dele of the Indian corn in and round the Vale —— the wheat is coming in Ear very fast —— a little Rain would doe a great dele of Good —— Faddy as he writes to you will give you every little Occurrance that has happend Since his last to you (Ascott) poor fellow has been Quite Reaving Mad Since the Mary Ann left this place So much So that a dark place at the end of the Gd. House is build for him where he has been obliged to be chaind to one of the Guns beloning to the Sirius and obliged to have a Strait Waiscoat kept constantly on him —— he is within these two days past a little Better and Consident has allowd him to come out and Walk under the Colonnade of the Guard in the day time —— he ust to keep crying out that he was Phillip G King Governor of this Island —— By the Mary Ann I sent you a plank according to Your desire which I hope is come safe —— if ther is any thing which I can doe or get done for you here be so good to let me know it by the first Ship and I will with pleasure &

Remain Yours
Sincerely
Ralph Clark
Compt. to Johnston, Pouldon &c.
To
Lieut Creswell
Marines
Port Jackson

Clark's Letterbook Index
<p>| A | B Bedlake Rudp. Lieut To | 250 |
|   | Beveridge Jas. Mr. From   | 278 |
|   | Beveridge Jas. Mr. To     | 282 |
| C | Collins David Esqr. To    | 261 |
|   | Collins Lieut Wm. To      | 269 |
|   | Collins Lieut Wm. Answer  | 276 |
|   | Collins David Esqr. To    | 279 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captain From| 279 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captn. To   | 287 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captn. To   | 292 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captn. From | 294 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captn. To   | 298 |
|   | Callam James Mr. From     | 301 |
|   | Callam James Mr. To       | 302 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captn. From | 304 |
|   | Campbell Jas. Captn. To   | 305 |
|   | Cresswell John Lieut To   | 306 |
| D |                           |     |
| E |                           |     |
| F |                           |     |
| G | Gordon: Coll:             | 255 |
| H | Howe Lord To S            |     |
|   | Howe Lord Ans. S          | 243 |
|   | Hunter Capt. To S         | 248 |
|   | Hunter Capt. To S         | 249 |
|   | Hartwell B. Esqr. To      | 251 |
|   | Hartwell B. Esqr. To      | 257 |
|   | Hartwell B. Esqr. To      | 266 |
|   | Hartwell B. Esqr. To      | 271 |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hartwell B. Esqr.</td>
<td>275</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnson Revd. Mr.</td>
<td>247</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnston Geoe. Captn.</td>
<td>295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Johnstone Geoe. Captn.</td>
<td>296</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut Ansr.</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>247</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>251</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>256</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>262</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>272</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut From</td>
<td>277</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kempster Lieut To</td>
<td>283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kellow Robt. Lieut To</td>
<td>280</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kellow Robt. Lieut From</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Kellow Robt. Lieut To</td>
<td>281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Long Lieut &amp; Adjt. S</td>
<td>254</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meredith Capt. Lieut Jas. To S</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillips Capt. To S</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillips Capt. Ansr.</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillips Capt. To S</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillips Capt. Ansr.</td>
<td>242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillip Capt. To S</td>
<td>244</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phillip Capt. Ansr. S</td>
<td>245</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ross Major To Service</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ross Major To S</td>
<td>255</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Fragment

Liberty of Recomending to your friendship my friends on Board the Cormorant sloop which I suppose is before the date of this Arrived at Jamaica —— first the Purser Mr. Copland I believe to be a Gentleman in Every Sense of the Word as such Needs no further Recommendation —— the Master Mr. Atchinson is plainly an Honest Man one that I Believe would Sacrifice life Rather than Intentionally be Guilty of Meanness —— The Lieut. Mr. Wade I have found very Sincerely my friend and cannot Say too Much for him —— ther is also the Surgeon Mr. Jons a Genteel and Sociable person —— Conclude with my best wishes for Your Success and Welfare Safety

Your friend Unalterable &c.
Mattw. Trevan Junr.
P:S: if You see the Gents of the Cormorant present My Respetfull Compt. —— Suppose Betseys Letter will Speek particular family Occurance &c. &c.

This fragment is included in Clark's letterbook. The preceding portion is probably lost.
Drawing

This drawing appears without explanation but Clark was in charge of building huts at Charlotte Field on Norfolk Island. This may be a preliminary sketch of one of them.

A List of things which I Lost in His Majestys Ship Sirius when She was wrecks at Norfolk Island March the 19, 1790

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Description</th>
<th>£</th>
<th>Sh</th>
<th>d</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 Uniform Coat</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Uniform Pr. of Breeches</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Uniform Waiscoats</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 Pr. of Nankeen Breeches</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Item</td>
<td>Price</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pr. of Iaine Do.</td>
<td>2 10 d</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pr. of Doe Skin Do.</td>
<td>1 11 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 Pr. of Thread Stockings</td>
<td>1 19 8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Shirts at 13Sh. a Pice</td>
<td>3 18 8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Do. at 10Sh. a Pice</td>
<td>3 18 8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 Do. at 6Sh. a Pice</td>
<td>3 6 8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Pr. of Shoes</td>
<td>3 10 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 Pr. of Trowsers</td>
<td>3 15 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cloath and Trimmings for a Uniform Jacket</td>
<td>2 15 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Mattress</td>
<td>2 12 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Blankets</td>
<td>1 1 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Fowling Pice</td>
<td>3 1 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Pair of Steele Mounted Pistols</td>
<td>4 4 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a Powder flask and Shot Smoke</td>
<td>4 10 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Tin Tea Kettle</td>
<td>4 2 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 Large Tin Kettle</td>
<td>4 4 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Smaller dito</td>
<td>4 4 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Iron Searce Pans</td>
<td>4 5 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Tin dito</td>
<td>4 3 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 Pouter Dishes</td>
<td>4 4 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 Do. Plates</td>
<td>4 4 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>all my Books</td>
<td>10 10 6</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>£</td>
<td>47 18 8</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Ralph Clark Lieut Mars.

**Memo. of Articles Lost in The Sirius March the 19 1790**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Name</th>
<th>Amount</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Roberts</td>
<td>3 16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mrs. Keets</td>
<td>2 4 6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mr. Hurst</td>
<td>15 6</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Clark to Betsey Alicia

Sceptre —— Cape St. Nicola Mole
May 8/94
My Ever Dear Beloved Alicia

As I expect the packet every day to call here for our letters on her way home, I have Sit again down to write you my ever dear beloved wife a few lines and to acquaint all that my Soul most fondly doats on, that our dear and Tenderly beloved Son and myself are both in perfect good health —— I wish that I could Say that my happiness was as great as my health is good —— I assure you that it is not, for I am very much distressed on your Account my Alicia —— indeed my beloved woman it is not possible for me to describe how unhappy I am at this Instant and have been for these Some time past for fear any thing has happend to your health, or wellfare my Betsey —— why my dearest will you make yourself so very unhappy and miserable as you inform me in your letters that you are on our dear beloved Boy's and my Account. but long before this time I hope that you have received the many letters that I have sent you by the Several opportunity I have had of writing you —— these I trust in god will Revive your Spirits, and dispel the unhappiness which you have Sufferd on Ralphs and my Account —— believe me my love with truth I inform you that our darling Son ever Since he has left you has enjoyment a good State of health and So has your own Clark untill about a month Since when I was taken very ill with the Flux but I am thank my God at this Instant as well as I ever was in my life and I will now inform my dearest beloved Alicia, as I am again Quite recoverd that I was about three weeks time dangerously ill and Henry Says that I have nothing to thank for my life but a good constitution and keeping up my Spirrits

Mrs. Lane 15
Mr. Hooker 3 3 0
Mr. Crus [4?] 2 6
Mr. Dunning 2 16 0
Mr. Yeats 1 3 6
Mrs. S Lane [4?] 2 0
Mr. Buchter * 5 6
Mr. Baker * 8 0

* Illegible.
Lord how terrible was then my Situation then Betsey but I am well and Soon in hopes of getting home to you which will make up for all I have Sufferd —— I wrote you two Short letters the begining of this month which was the time I was So very ill but I did not like to mention any thing about it to you then for I never had any other thoughts but that I Should get the Better —— one of the letters I sent under the care of little Froughton Master of the Powerfull and the other by the Hound Sloop of war —— within these few days I have received four letters from You my Beloved —— two of them came by the Packet one dated the 2d. of Feby. the other the 2d. of March —— one of the other two is dated the 11 of Feby. and came under the care of Lieut Wall of the Bellequieux (Mr. Roberts Friend) the other I dont know by what convayance it reached me —— it is dated the 20 of November although my Betsey of so long a date I received it with a hearty welcomb and so will your Clark every one that come from the Hand of my Alicia how ever old the date of them may be —— indeed Betsey you cannot have a greater wish than I have to see and be with you that of being with you at the time of your delivery was impossible but I trust in god long before this you have been Safely brought to bed and that you my Alicia in whome all my Soul most tenderly doats on is by this time quite recovered and that also our dear beloved infant is in perfect good health —— god what would I give to know but that happiness I am not able yet to know but must remain in the dreadfull Suspence for a month longer —— in my letter by the Hound I informd you that in this I would give you ane account of my illness but in recollecting as that cannot give you any pleasure I will defair it untill we meet which I trust in God will not be long —— I wrote you from Presquil by my old Acquaintance Fairfull which I hope you have received by this time —— after the date of that letter (about three days) I was taken from Presquil and sent on a command with Oldfield to a Port Cald Cote Fair 15 miles in the Country —— we left the mole about ane hour and a half after Sun Set —— our Partie consisted beside Oldfield and myself one Sergt. and 20 Private marines —— we got to the Port about one oClock in the morning where we found a Captain of the Regt. of Dillons and one Subt. of the 49 and about 24 men of the 49 and of Dillons Regt. and had been attacked the Night before by the Enemy and had lost one man kild and one wounded and expected to be every moment again attacked which would have been the case had we not arrived —— for one hour after we got there the enemy appeard but Seing that the place had been Reinforced the[y] went away again without firing a Shot —— the[y] had Same day that we left the mole taken the Port of Comp Fosh conisting of 2 Captains, 4 Subt. about 150 men —— out of that number only 26 of the 49 Regt. and Marines including McClairin being British —— Comp Fosh was only distance from use our (Port) only 2 miles and that the Enemy was in great force there —— about 12 oClock at Noon the next day Captain Walker of the Artillery came out with orders to Captain Oldfield to spike the Guns to blow up the Magazine and Burn the Barracks and to retreat to the mole as fast as we Possible could as Accounts had come in to Capt
Whitelock that the Enemy were marching from Comp Fosh to cut off our communication with the mole and that if we did not make hast that our retreat would be cut off — you may be certain soon after our getting the orders that we were not long in spiking the two Nine Pounders in blowing up the Magazine and Burning the Barracks and destroying every thing that could be of use to the Enemy and thank God we got Save in to the mole about half after five without loosing a Single man — I was doing duty on Shore untill I was taken ill — all the marines of the Ships and the half of the Seamen have been landed as we expected to be attacked every moment but thank God we are relieved from our fears in that head for three days Since the Irrisistable of 74 with one Regt. from Sir J: Jarvis and the Bellequieux with the Transports and Two Regt. from Irland arrived here and in the room of there attacking use we are making preparations to attack them — we shall Sail for the attack of Port au Prince to Morrow or next day where I hope I shall get a few Pounds Prize money — I have offerd to Buy our dear beloved Boys Prize money for that Place — I have offerd to give him 20 Guineas for it but he will not sell it for What ever it is, it is for his dear mother — he will every body believes get more than 40 Guineas for his Share as Midshipman — I made your kindest thanks to Oldfield for his goodness to Ralph — Since I last wrote you he Oldfield has wrote home to a Particular friend of his begging that he will be so good to apply for a Commission in the Marines for our dear Boy — I hope the application will Succeed — I have as yet not received any Prize money — I dont know when I Shall — I have received my Bord and Forrage money but my dearest love my illness has prevented me from Send you as I promised part of it for the first forthnight after I was taken ill it cost me from 2 Shilling to half a Crown a day for washing — I dirted so many Shirts and Sheets a day — what doe you think I paid for a pair or Shoes for our dear Sweet Boy a few days Since no less than 7Sh. and 9d. Sterling — I forgot to mention that on my landing I was appointed Adjt. to the Naval and Marine Corps by Captain Martin of [illegible] Frigate and Since my illness McClairin has been appointed who has been exchanged — I am to be paid for the Time I did the duty as (St. Clair) who was appointed Qr. M has received for the time he did duty — he is gone home Since to England on Account of his health — I am to be appointed Qr. M. at the Landing at Port au Prince as Captain Martin my old Captain in the Preston Says that if we take the place as Qr. M. I Shall make more by it than being Adjt. — he is to command the Seamen and Marines at the Landing there — what doe you think Oldfield did on our receiving our Bord and Forrage money — he Said Clark you and I will put our Bord and Forrage money together and make it goe as far as we possible can to pay our expences while we are on Shore — where my love is there one in the corps that would have done So to put his £44 to my £8—15Sh. — there is not one — Ralph was on Shore with me at Fort [Ferd?] — Captain Davis did not wish him to remain I therefore Sent him on board — his reason was very good for he Said as we expect the place to be
attacked every moment and Should it be so Clark you will not be able to take care of the child and should the place be taken we in the Ship will be obliged to cut and run therefor Ralph being on Board he will be Save which will be much better than you both being taken —— I agreed with davis and therfor Sent him on Board although it was painfull to part with him —— the moment that I was taken ill I asked to be brought on board which the Doctor Said was a very lucky thing I did —— had poor Stapleton done the Same he would have been a live now —— the Doctor Said that he was past recovery before he came off poor fellow —— he was remarkably fond of our dear Boy —— I have not been on Shore I first came off except the night of the alarm when I caught cold and was taken ill of the Flux again —— Mr. Price is master of the Irresistable he came on board the moment Ship came to ane Anchor and he is Sailed again to night again for Port au Prince —— has made a great dele of Prize money he Says near £2000 —— he beg of me to desire of you to be So good when you wrote in to Cornwall either to Fanny or Mattw. to beg of them to let Mrs. Price know that he is very well —— that he has not So much as had a head ack —— I never was So much pleased with any letter in my life as the one dated the 23 of November where in you Say that you never loved me So much as at the moment you then was writing —— be assured my dearest Love I never will give reason to make you alter that love from me —— we have been looking every day for a Ship to arrive from Jamaica as She will bring our letters as the april Packet has been arrivd at Jamaica twelf days —— I wish to god I had my letters that She brought out for me —— I must leave room for Ralph to Sign his name otherwise you will be unhappy —— adieu now my dearest Love —— compt. to every body, m[y kin?] dred, god protect you my dear alicia and my beloved child give it ten thousand kisses for me and I will repay you ten fold on my return —— adieu my love take care of yourself and you will oblige your affectd. Husband, friend and Lover Ralph Clark

My Dear Father has not left me any more room than to say God Bless you my Dear and best of Mothers prays your own affectioned Son

Ralph Stuart Clark

[The following, partly obscured by adhesive tape, is written on the back of Clark's last letter. See illustration, page 320.]

home for you it contains three small Garris two of them well preserved ginger the other mixt sweet meats —— Wynter and his son are both very well and send there compt. as does all you are acquainted with on board —— once more God Bless you my dearest Love —— Compt. to Aunt Lowndes your ever Clark sends May 22

May 22 1794

[The following, written by an unidentified hand, appears on the back of Clark's last letter. See illustration, page 320.]
poor Mrs. Clark was delivred of a dead Child herself Survived but a few hours— this was written Some days after her death—

* Probably Cap-á-Foux

Sceptre
Port au Prince
June 18th. 1794

Dear Mattw.

I was in hopes long before this to have herd from you, it is now Eight months Since I firts wrote you to acquaint you that the Sceptre was to Sail for this part of the world —— in all that time not yet even a Single line from you, indeed Mattw. this is not consisting with our former Intimacy and which I Still hope Subsist —— candidly I must own I Expected before this that you would have given up ten minuits of your time, even though you had nothing New, Novel or interesting to inform me, Except that you and family were well and when you had herd from Betsey, inform Nancy that I am very much oblige to her for the Kind offer which Betsey informs me She made her, that of offering to come up to attend her at the time She Expected to be brought to Bed —— I ardently long for the arrival of last months Packet to acquaint me of Betsey Welfare —— In fact and I shall not Scruple to own to you although the Brother of my Betsey, that was She the wife of any other Mortal besides your humble Servant, I certainly Should covet him the possession of her —— You will See by the Public papers ane Account of our taken this place and the great Booty that has by it fallen into our hands but I am not So Sanguine as every body here appears to be What there amount of Prize money will come too —— it is the General belief that my Share will amount to Eight Hundred Pounds but myself I dont reckon at getting above a Quarter of that Sume for Prize money always Sounds great at first untill it comes to be Sharred —— about Six weeks agoe I was very ill ashore at Cape Nicola Mole but although three and fours of a day were dying around me I had no thought of given up the Gost —— I am now again Quite recovered and Ralph my Dear Boy has never been ill a day, you would have admired his little Spirit in the long Actions we had in this Ship against the Strong Fleet of Bessiton —— Sunday the first Inst. I could not prevail on him to Stay down in the cockpit but he would Stay up with me in the Lower Gun deck and fight the Brigans he Said —— he laid hold of the Tackels of the Guns and puld and Rould as much as his little Strengh would alow him —— when he Saw our Shot Strick the Fort and make the Stones and dust fly he ust to cry out Huzza, there is Some of the Frensh Rascals heads off —— indeed Mattw. he is a charming Boy —— you cannot conceive how doatingly fond I am of him —— he has been for this Some time back Rated Midshipman and Receives pay and Prize money a
Such —— I hope that we both Shall be home by the latter end of September —— we are now very bussy in Sending our Prizes down to Jamaica for Sale —— we took 45 Ships, 36 of them are large Ships deeply loaded with Sugar, Coffy, Cotten and Indigo —— Ralph Joins me in best wishes to Nancy and Mary, my Compt. to Mr. & Mrs. Boke (Quarry) to Mr. & Mrs. Cole and when you See John Boke inform him that Mr. Price is Master here of the Iristible, he has made upwards of two thousand Pounds Prize money, he is very well —— tell Nancy that I will thank her to write a few lines to Betsey and inform her that you have herd from me and that Ralph and my Self are both well —— I have wrote Betsey by this conveyance but for fear of its miscarriage I beg her to Send a few lines —— adieu my Dear Mattw. you will pardon me if I was hurt at not receiving a letter from you and if I have been to free consider the candour which has hither to accompanied our friendship admits not of insincerity —— If you was not the Brother of my Betsey I'd esteem respect you and wish to See you happy —— if therefore you Should be inclined to devote a Quarter of an hour to write me a few lines although I dont think I shall receive your letter here but wherever it is, it will be received with infinate Satisfaction by him who is at all times your Sincere Brother

Ralph Clark

When You See Fanny Copeland give my Kindest wishes to her and tell my (Terrible little Rascal John) that I am looking out for his drum that I promised him

adieu

R. Clark

Mr. Mattw. Trevan
St. Teath
Camelford
Cornwall

EDITORS' NOTE

The following pencilled list of ships appears in Clark's writing on a slip of paper in the letterbook (T indicates Transport): 


The list is overwritten in thicker pencil 1792
followed by what appears to be London 14th, 1836

There is also a paper strip 38cm long and 39mm wide bearing a postmark of an open octagon with a crown and the letter T at the bottom left hand corner and 20d at the bottom right hand corner.

Written by Mrs. Clark on her Husband's birthday

May Each Returning year in pleasure Bring
The present of his Contary and his King.
May Angels Guard his peaceful home with Care
Conjugal happiness be alwaise there
Forgive O God the follies of his Youth
And Mold his heart in piety and truth
and when thou Calsd him to the Relms of Bliss
Oh take me too, I am but thine and his

Alicia
APPENDIX 1

Documents relating to Ralph Clark held in the Public Record Office, Kew, England. This is by no means an exhaustive list.

LIST OF MARINE OFFICERS
ADM.118 248 1779 2nd Lieutenant commissioned 25th August 1779. 27th Company (Plymouth)
ADM.118 249 1782 2nd Lieutenant (Marine Officers 1st January 1782) 27th Company (Plymouth)
ADM.118 250 1783 2nd Lieutenant Appointed 1st August 1783 Company 6 (Plymouth)
ADM.118 251 1786 2nd Lieutenant (Marine Officers 1st July 1786) Appointed 1st August 1783. Company 6 (Plymouth)
ADM.118 252 1789 2nd Lieutenant with Company 6 (Plymouth)
ADM.118 253 1790 2nd Lieutenant with Company 6 (Plymouth)
ADM.118 254 1792 2nd Lieutenant with Company 6 (Plymouth)
ADM.118 255 1794 1st Lieutenant Appointed 25th September 1792. Company 100 (Chatham) DIED (Name crossed out)

COMMISSIONS AND APPOINTMENTS
REGISTER 1755–1814
ADM. 6/406 25th September 1792. 1st Lt. Company 59 (Portsmouth)

INDEX TO IN LETTERS A–K
Lt. Ralph Clark — Letters Subject
ADM. 12 56 1793 October 9 [1792?] A503 Leave
January 27 Marine List Exchange
May 15 do Removal
June 9 do Sea Credit
July 3 do 68 la [refers to the coast of England]
January 28 Portsmouth Command Leave
March 31 do Leave
July 9 Plymouth Command 68 la (see above)
ADM. 12 60 1794 No mention for 1794

MARINE RETURNS
ADM.183 74 1793 Marine Returns for 100th Company Chatham
ADM.183 75 1794 Marine Returns for 100th Company Chatham
1793 6th January NotJoined His appointment 11 Oct 1792
13th January NotJoined His appointment 11 Oct 1792
20th January Fit for duty Quarters and so on every week until
1793 5th May Embarked Tartar 1st May 1793 and was still aboard Tartar until
1794 28 December

PAY REGISTER 1757–1825
ADM. 96 482 1st Lieutenant Ralph Clark 100 Company paid from 1 January 1794–31 March 1794
[No further trace in pay books]

ARMY LISTS
Box 3 1779–1783 Officers of Marine Forces 1780 2nd Lt. Ralph Clark. 25th August 1780° 1781, 1782, 1783 as above
Box 4 1784–1789
Noted but not checked
Box 5 1790–1794

* cf: Marine List date of commission.
INDEX

A
Abbott, Lt. Edward: at Norfolk 194; Charlotte Field 195; mentioned 198, 297, 300
Aborigines: seen 90; fires seen 93; steal from Sirius garden 100; fired on by French 105; Clark's encounter 109, 110; die from small pox 109; mentioned 267, 271, 273, 276
Accidents: See also Deaths: child injured 27; seaman falls from top gallant yard 34; boy falls overboard, saved 34; marine falls on deck 49; woman injured on Lady Penrhyn 62; drownings 158, 159, 179, 180, 285; tree falls 171, 199, 200; falls 179; convict burnt 215
Ackney,—(marine officer): mentioned 68
Adjutant: See Long, Lt. John
Admiral Hughes (Smith,—Commander): dismasted in gale 61
Admiralty: letter from 243; leave applied for from 244; mentioned 246, 247, 250, 261, 272, 292, 306
Agent for Transports: See also Shortland, John; Watts, John; attends to seamen's complaint aboard Friendship. 12; mentioned 14, 15, 17, 23, 45, 68, 69, 71, 72, 75, 80, 84, 85, 86, 88, 89, 90
Albacores: seen 232, 236
Albatrosses: seen 44, 50, 74, 87
Alexander Transport (Sinclair, Duncan, Captain) court martial on 17; mentioned 13, 16, 24, 27, 36, 38, 41, 52, 56, 57, 59, 61, 64, 66, 69, 71, 72, 75, 78, 80, 82, 83, 86, 91, 247, 252, 257, 259, 260; very sickly on board 53; to go ahead of the fleet 70
Altree, John Turnpenny (Surgeon): reports duel to Major Ross 152
America: mentioned 209, 272
American ships: anchors at Cape of Good Hope 67, 230; at Ascension Island 232; Betsey (Providence, USA) 235
Ancott, John: See Escott, John
Anderson, Fanny (convict): transferred from Charlotte 36
Anall,—(midshipman HMS Gorgon): impertinent to Clark 233
Animals: See also Birds, Fish, Insects, Marine Fauna: See separate listings: Cattle, Dogs, Goats, Horses, Kangaroos, Lizards,
Pigs, Sheep, Snakes
Anson,—(convict): dies 216
Anstis, Nicholas (chief mate, Lady Penrhyn): mentioned 157
Ants: at Port Jackson 95
Arbrick, William (convict): punished 211
Arndell, Thomas (Surgeon): mentioned 16, 17, 18, 20, 25, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 42, 43, 45, 46, 47, 50, 53, 55, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 84, 91, 92, 104, 105, 254; to have water for the sick 23; gives Clark cotton thread 27; abused by woman convict 27; treats child 28, 49; asks for convict women's release 30; attends Sarah McCormick 32, 33, 41; takes sick list to Surgeon General 33; convicts loose some of his clothing overboard 54; attends convict woman on Lady Penrhyn 62; gives pig to Clark 76
Arscott, John (Askot) (convict): swims to Sirius wreck 124
Arthur's Vale (Norfolk Island): corn planted at 163; Clark measures ground at 169; mentioned 219, 303
Articles of War: read to detachment 130; mentioned 272
Arundell, Thomas: See Arndell, Thomas
Ascension, Island of: turtles caught at 232
Ascott, John: See Escott, John
Astrolabe French Ship (Clonard, Capt. Joseph-Ernest Sutton de): arrives at Botany Bay 92, 93, 264; runaway convicts go to 94, ready to sail 105
Atchinson,—(Master Cormorant): mentioned 310
Atlantic Transport: mentioned 213, 301, 306; arrives at Norfolk Island 221; sails 223
B
Bacon, Elizabeth: marine's child dies 230, 233
Baighly, Ann: See Beardsley, Ann
Baily, John: See Hailey, John
Bain, David: See Bear, David
Baizley, Ann: See Beardsley Ann
Baker, James (marine): court martial of 42
Ball, Henry Lidgbird, Lt. R.N. (Commander Supply): mentioned 31, 52, 69, 118, 265, 268, 274; sits on criminal court 97; takes flour to Norfolk Island 124
Ball's Bay (Norfolk Island): mentioned 119, 141, 142, 143, 155, 168, 219
Ball's Pyramid (Lord Howe Island): seen, described 118
Balmain, William (Surgeon): speaks with Clark 24; mentioned 36, 38, 42, 56, 57, 58, 61, 66, 90, 92, 114, 224, 269
Bananas: purchased at Rio de Janeiro 41, 43; mentioned 113, 300, 301
Banner, Samuel: See Benear, Samuel
Bannester, George: See Bannister, George
Bannister, George (convict): punished 189
Barber, Elizabeth (convict): abuses Dr. Arndell 27; tied up 28; handcuffed 29, 30; put in irons 32, 59; mentioned 33, 35; released from irons 37
Barley: sown 135, 142; caterpillars on 213; reaped 221; mentioned 305
Barnes, Robert (boatswain of Friendship): sent aboard Sirius for punishment 22; Clark gives rum to 71
Barriers, Mary: (convict): punished 212
Barnet, Henry (convict): sent to Nepean Island 199
Barrett, Thomas (convict): hanged for stealing 102
Batavia (Djakarta - Indonesia): Dutch ship sails for 56, 57, 61, 65; mentioned 180, 182, 194, 287
Beans: attacked by caterpillars 166; stolen 210
Bear, David (able seaman Sirius): drowns at Norfolk Island 159
Beardsley, Ann (convict): transferred to Charlotte 36
Bedlake,—: mentioned 14, 43, 80, 253, 257, 260, 265, 268, 274, 275; letter to 250, 251
Beef: dispute over 12; fresh at Teneriffe 16; mentioned 31, 39, 65, 259, 283; fresh at Rio de Janeiro 35; salt mentioned 50, 68, 74, 81, 83, 87, 162, 166, 174, 265; stolen by convicts 81; ration at Port Jackson 101; saved from Sirius wreck 125; rations at Norfolk Island 133, 148, 156, 189, 191
Beer: for anniversary dinner 20; mentioned 176
Bellequieux (Warship): mentioned 313, 314
Benear, Samuel (convict): absent from work 175; punished 175
Bengal: English ship sailing to 63, 256, 258; Portuguese ship from 64; American ship from 230; American ship to 235
Bennett, John (convict): flogged for breaking out of irons 14; steals provisions, hides in long boat 68; flogged for stealing 98
Benns, Cornelius (convict): punished 216
Bessiton, Fleet of: mentioned 317
Best, John (convict): Clark gives rum to 77
Betsey (Providence, USA): American ship 235
Beveridge, Innes & Co of London: mentioned 278
Beveridge, James: letters from 157, 278; letters to 160, 282
Bexley,—: mentioned 45
Bingham, Elizabeth (convict): punished 220
Birds: about the ship 50, 227, 228, 229, 230, 235, 236; shot by Clark 95; large bird shot (Emu) 104; on Balls Pyramid 118; sent to Mrs. Clark 161; sea birds blown on shore 222; sea birds caught 232; mentioned 265, 290, 292. See also Albatrosses, Cockatoos, Ducks, Emus, Gannets, Gulls, Hawks, Mother Carey's Chickens, Mount Pitt Birds, Mutton Birds, Parakeets, Parrots, Petrels, Pigeons, Pintado Birds, Providence Petrels, Quails, Robins, Snow Birds, Tropic Birds
Births: child of marine born 22; defect of hand and leg 28; Elizabeth Colley has son 170; girl born to Mary Sprigmore 187; son born to Charlotte Simpson 200; child born to Mary Ann Carty 217; son born to Elizabeth Thomas 218; Elanora Kirvan's child stillborn 219
Bishop, Elias (marine): principal in dispute 192
Blackburn, David (Master, Supply): mentioned 198, 302, 303, 304
Blatherhorn, William (convict): punished 132
Blow,—Lt. (Agent Queen): sails on Gorgon for England 225
Blunt, Richard (convict): punished 133
Boa Vista (Cape Verde Islands): seen 19
Boke, John: mentioned 318
Boke, Mrs. John: mentioned 318
Bolton, Jeffery (convict): punished 210
Bonavista Island: See Boa Vista
Bonetos (Bonetta): caught 22, 24, 28, 30, 232
Bordeaux: French ships from 65

*Borrowdale* Store-ship (Reed, H. Master): mentioned 29, 30, 50, 55, 65, 68, 69, 71

Botany Bay: mentioned 11, 27, 43, 51, 68, 70, 71, 72, 74, 77, 78, 80, 81, 82, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89, 100, 101, 105, 179, 233, 234, 235, 241, 250, 252, 253, 256, 258, 260, 262, 264, 265, 276; corn to be sown at 66; *Supply* anchors in 90; Clark dislikes 92; runaway convicts go to 94

*Boussole* French Ship (La Perouse, Jean-Francois de Galaup, Commander): arrives at Botany Bay 92, 93, 264; runaway convicts go to 94; ready to sail 105

Bowen, Richard Lt. (Agent *Atlantic*): brings Clark letters 221; Clark sends potatoes to 222; sails 223; mentioned 301, 304
Boyle, John (convict): punished 132, 207, 212
Bradley, William (1st Lt. of *Sirius*): mentioned 63, 181, 287, 288; sits on criminal court 97
Bramage, Thomas (marine): court martialed 96
Brannegan, James (convict): swims to *Sirius* 123; sets fire to *Sirius* 124; put in irons 124; released from guard house 134
Braund, Mary (convict): child Charlotte Spence dies 234
Brazil: Portuguese ship from 65; English ship going to 234
Bread: rice in lieu of 35; taken on shore 38; makes Clark ill 59; mentioned 65, 179, 259; rations at Port Jackson 101
Breezes, Elizabeth: *See* Bruce, Elizabeth
Brewer, Henry (Provost Marshal): at hanging 102

*Bridgewater*: suspected lost 61
Briage, Thomas: *See* Bramage, Thomas
Broad, Mary: *See* Braund, Mary
Broken Bay (Pittwater): Phillip explores 104 *See also* Port Jackson
Brough, Ralph (marine): rank reduced 203
Brown, Thomas (convict): punished 217; forgiven rest of punishment 219
Bruce, Elizabeth (convict): punished 130, 183
Bryan,—: *See* Bryant,—(Master's mate)
Bryant,—(Master's mate): argument with Lt. Shortland 178; mentioned 289
Bryon,—: See Bryant,—(Master's mate)
Buckland Town (England): mentioned 44
Buckley, Stephen (boatswain's mate *Sirius*): dies 236
Burbon, Island of: French ship bound to 65
Burnet,—(boy on Dutch ship): mentioned 65
Butter: ration at Port Jackson 102
Butterflies: collected at Rio de Janeiro 39, 43; mentioned 89; admired by French Abbe 100
C
Cabbage Tree (*Livistonia Australis*): mentioned 144, 201; death from eating 217
Cabbages: purchased at Rio de Janeiro 43; stolen 133; mentioned 137, 143, 273; supplied to ships 160; convict dies from eating wood cabbage 217
Cabinet Maker: See Haynes, William
Cable, Henry (convict): steals beef and wood 81; child of 225
Caddy,—(female convict): drowns at Norfolk Island 159
Calcutta (India): *Atlantic* to go to 221
Callam, James (Surgeon, *Supply*): visits Charlottes Field with Clark 182, 195; mentioned 195, 289, 290, 294, 299; letter from 213, 301; letter to 215, 302
Campbell, James (Captain of Marines): mentioned 38, 45, 62, 64, 110, 112, 113, 115, 116, 181, 230, 252, 260, 269, 273, 297, 302; his company to land at Botany Bay 91; company to remain at Port Jackson 111; to purchase articles for Clark 116; letter from 158, 209, 213, 221, 280, 294, 304; Clark writes letter to 182, 211, 215, 287, 292, 298, 305; Clark displeased with 195; sails on *Gorgon* for England 225
Canary Islands: seen 14, 15, 17
Candles: not to be supplied to *Sirius* company 129
Cap-a-Foux (Haiti): mentioned 314
Cape de Vere Islands: See Cape Verde Islands
Cape Dromedary: seen 88
Cape Horn: distance from 225, 226; seen 227
Cape of Good Hope: mentioned 35, 41, 43, 44, 45, 48, 49, 50, 51, 54, 70, 80, 83, 85, 86, 226, 228, 229, 230, 252, 253, 262, 265, 267, 268, 269, 270, 271; anchor at 55, 230; sail from 230; letter from 255, 256, 257, 258, 276

Cape St. Nicola Mole (Haiti): Clark at 313; mentioned 317

Cape Verde Islands: St. Lucia seen 18; Boa Vista seen 19; Maio seen 19; St. Jago seen 19

Captains, ships: See name of ship

Captains of Marines: See Campbell, James; Collins, David; Shea, John

Carpenter (Friendship): sent aboard Sirius for punishment 22; Clark gives rum to 71

Carthy, Francis (convict): book of, found in shark's stomach 233

Carty, Mary Ann (convict): punished 191, 205; child born to 217

Cascade Bay (Norfolk Island): landing at 119, 120, 121, 194, 195; mentioned 123, 155, 156, 158, 159, 198, 208, 221, 222, 223, 224, 297

Cascade Farm (Norfolk Island): mentioned 149, 165, 167, 171, 190, 202; flax at 161

Caterpillars: attack corn and wheat 166, 170; attack peas and beans 166; thousands of 167, re-appear 213; mentioned 303, 307

Catherall, Thomas: See Cottrell, Thomas

Cattle: mentioned 257, 260

Chaffry,—(female convict): drowns at Norfolk Island 159

Chaplain: See Johnson, Rev. Richard

Chapman, Thomas (sergeant): to have Clark's house 116

Chapman, Jonathan (convict): punished 220

Charlotte Field (Norfolk Island): new settlement named 142; company marches to 143; clearing begins 144, 145; some ground cleared 148; mentioned 149, 150, 151, 152, 162; corn planted at 163; Clark visits 164, 165, 166, 167, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 193, 194, 195, 197, 200; fire destroys corn at 168; accident at 171; Clark in charge of 172; town at Queensborough 197; wheat planted at 199, 200

Charlotte Transport (Gilbert, Thomas, Commander): mentioned 13, 27, 29, 34, 35, 36, 42, 47, 50, 53, 59, 66, 91, 92, 93, 252, 259, 260, 261; female convicts transferred to 36; convict lost overboard from 52; very sickly on board 53; to take four of Friendship's female convicts 61; damages Friendship 93

Cheese: taken on shore 38; mentioned 259
Child, Mrs: mentioned 305
China: mentioned 111, 157, 161, 215, 300, 301, 306
Chipp, Thomas (marine): mentioned 254
Chowder: made from dolphins 24; served 29
Christmas Day: celebrated 81, 176
Christmas Harbour (Island of Desolation): named by Captain James Cook 77
Chronometer: See Timepiece
Cider (cyder): for anniversary dinner 20
Clark, Betsey Alicia (Mrs. Ralph Clark): passim
Clark, Charles (convict): garden robbed 218
Clark, John or William? (convict): punished 140
Clark, Ralph Lieutenant: embarks on *Friendship* 1; feelings on seamen and women convicts 12; seasick 12, 13, 17, 43, 67, 73, 117, 224, 225, 228; at Teneriffe 15; dines on board *Scarborough* 16; sits as member on court martial 17, 96, 106, 146, 189, 202, 208, 209; troubled with heart burn 18; wedding anniversary dinner 20; describes behaviour of women 22; received a dog from Captain Walton 24; takes ill 24, 162, 206; serves water allowance 28, 32; describes Rio de Janeiro 34; on shore at Rio de Janeiro 36; catches cold 38, 51; ill with toothache 44, 46, 99, 225, 236; asks for court martial 55; officers settle matter without court martial 57, 58; ill 59, 103, 104; anticipates letter 63; has pain in chest 69, 76, 77, 225; first to see land 84; arrives at Botany Bay 90; describes Botany Bay 92; describes leaving for Port Jackson 93; on shore at Port Jackson 94; goes shooting 95, 98, 99, 100, 112, 160, 164, 165; encounter with Aborigines 109, 110; finds skeleton 110; learns he is to go to Norfolk Island 111; garden robbed 111, 113, 114; sends things on *Sirius* 115, 116; sails for Norfolk Island 117; lands at Norfolk Island 119; describes *Sirius* hitting reef 121, 122; loses many articles aboard *Sirius* 123; to act as Quarter Master during martial law 124, 284; Clark's birthday 125; convicts punished 130, 132, 133, 134, 138, 140, 141, 143, 147, 159, 165, 169, 173, 175, 178, 180, 181, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 197, 198, 199, 200, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 209, 210, 211, 212, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 224; visits Charlotte's Field 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 188, 189, 190, 191, 193, 194, 195, 197; involved in altercation 149, 150, 151; asked to be second in duel 151; arrests Lts. Faddy and Kellow 152; at inquiry into duel 154; receives letters 157; describes drownings 159; given charge of Charlotte's Field 172; dispute with marines 192; visits Phillipsburgh 199; testifies for Major Ross
sails for Port Jackson 224; boards Gorgon for England 225; has chilblains 228; letter to Captain Phillip 241, 242, 244; letter from Captain Phillip 241, 245; letter from Admiralty 243, letter to Admiralty 244; letter from George Kempster 245, 246, 278; letter to Lieut. Shortland 246, 249; letter to George Kempster 247, 250, 251, 252, 253, 256, 257, 258, 259, 260, 261, 262, 272, 283; letter to Rev. Johnson 247; letter to Captain Hunter 248, 249; letter to R. Bedlake 250, 251; letter to B. Hartwell 251, 257, 258, 267, 271, 276; letter to Capt. Lieut. J. Meredith 253; letter to Lieut & Adjutant Long 254; letter to Major Ross 255, 256, 262; letter to Coll. Gordon 255; letter to D. Collins 261, 279; letter to Lt. Reynolds 267, 274; letter to W. Collins 270; letter from W. Collins 277; letter from T. Wolrige 277; letter from J. Beveridge 278; letter from J. Campbell 280, 294, 304; letter to R. Kellow 280, 281; letter from R. Kellow 281; letter to J. Beveridge 282; appointed 1st Lieutenant 284; letter to T. Wolrige 285, 286; letter to J. Campbell 287, 292, 298, 305; letter from G. Johnston 295; letter to G. Johnston 296; letter from J. Callam 301; letter to J. Callam 302; letter from R. Kellow 304; letter to Lt. Creswell 306; index of letters 308, 309; letter from Matthew Trevan 310; possessions lost in Sirius 311, 312; letter to Mrs. Clark 313; letter to Matthew Trevan 317; poem written for 319

Clark, Ralph Junior: passim

Clayfield, William (sergeant of marines): intends to settle on Norfolk Island 170; goes with Clark to Mount Pitt 193; mentioned 218, 221

Clayton, John (marine): falls from tree 179

Clinch, Richard (sergeant of marines): rank reduced 203, 298

Cockatoos: shot by Clark 99

Coffee: trees purchased at Rio de Janeiro 43; aboard French ship 59; mentioned 179, 198; prize ships loaded with 317

Cole, Elizabeth (convict): transferred from Charlotte 36

Cole, Mr. & Mrs.—: mentioned 306, 318

Cole, William (convict): punished 143

Colley, Elizabeth (convict): boy born to 170

Colling, William (convict): punished 169

Collins, David (Judge-advocate): sits on criminal court 97; commission read 98; brings pardon from Governor 102; mentioned 103, 111, 220, 263, 264, 268, 272, 273, 274; letter to 261, 279

Collins, William (Lt. of marines): mentioned 36, 37, 58, 63, 95, 98, 262, 264, 266, 267, 268, 271, 276; very ill 103, 104; much better 105; letter to 270; letter from 276
Colls, Martin (convict): punished 204
Combs, Ann: See Coombes, Ann
Commissary: See Miller, Andrew
Commissions: read 96, 98, 223
Commodore: See Phillip, Arthur
Connell, Patrick (marine): mentioned 301
Considen, Denis (Assist. Surgeon to settlement): dines aboard *Friendship* 41, 56, 57, 59; mentioned 43, 44, 58, 60, 63, 64, 66, 117, 194, 207, 254, 280, 299, 301, 306, 307; pulls Clark's tooth 99; sails for Norfolk Island 116; lands at Norfolk Island 120; attends Clark 146; visits Charlottes Field 147; makes peace with Major Ross 207
Convicts: received aboard *Friendship* 1; list of convicts on board 2–10; trouble with seamen and women 12, 22; ordered to be put out of irons 13; John Bennett flogged 14; four women released from irons 19; Patrick Delaney dies 21; Jane Parkenson ill 21; Elizabeth Dudgeon flogged for impertinence 24; Elizabeth Barber put in irons 27; Margaret Hall put in irons 29; McNamara put in irons 30; Elizabeth Thackney handcuffed 30; Elizabeth Pully put in irons 30; complain of being ill 31; Sarah McCormick very ill 32, 34; six women transferred to *Charlotte* 36; women to be flogged the same as the men 37; child dies 49; two women pregnant to seamen 51; man lost overboard from *Charlotte* 52; Elizabeth Pugh and Rachel Harley put in leg irons 53; Elizabeth Barber and Elizabeth Dudgeon put in irons 59; women convicts to be transferred 60, 62; woman injured on *Lady Penrhyn* 62; John Bennett caught stealing 68; Thomas Yardsley and William Haynes transferred 69; Robert Sidaway put in irons 78; William Evans and John Patricks rations stolen by 81; beef and wood stolen by 81; two die on *Alexander* 83; Robert Sidaway released from irons 91; four sent on board *Scarborough* 92; sent ashore at Port Jackson 94; several run away 94; confined for striking John West 96; marry 97; Thomas Hill confined on island 97; go with Lt. King to Norfolk Island 98; woman flogged for stealing 98; John Bennet flogged for stealing 98; die in hospital at Port Jackson 100; two women shot at by sentinels 101; four convicts tried for stealing 102; Thomas Barratt hanged 102; five convicts tried for stealing 103; skeleton found at Lane Cove 110; sail for Norfolk Island 116; landed on Norfolk Island 119; two swim to *Sirius* wreck 123; Lowell wounded 128; punishment ordered: 130, 132, 133, 134, 138, 140, 141, 143, 146, 159, 165, 166, 169, 173, 175, 178, 180, 181, 183, 184, 186, 188, 189, 190, 191, 197, 198, 199, 200, 202, 203, 204, 205, 206, 207, 209, 210, 211, 212, 215, 216, 217, 218, 219, 220, 224; reported for cruelty 136; Ann Farmer dies 136; five drown at Norfolk Island 159; —Price dies 165; Elizabeth Colley bears son 170; Henry Palmer dies 171; child of Elizabeth Pipkin dies 172; Jno. Robins drowns 179; clothes issued 185, 187; girl born to Mary Sprigmore 187; tree falls
on James Elliott 199; son born to Charlotte Simpson 200; tree falls on—, Thompson 200; Rachael Smith dies 207;—, Ferguson burnt 215; two men die 216; William Cooper dies 217;—, Ferguson dies 218; son born to Elizabeth Thomas 218;—, Evans dies 218; stillborn child 219; Ann Jones dies 219;—, Dixon dies 220

Cook, James, Captain: mentioned 77
Cook, Benjamin (marine drummer): Clark gives rum to 74
Cool, Elizabeth: See Cole, Elizabeth
Cool, William: See Cole, William
Cooly,—: (convict boy): punished 218
Coombes, Ann (convict): transferred from Charlotte 36
Cooper, William (convict): dies 217
Copeland, Fanny: mentioned 315, 318
Copeland, John: mentioned 318
Copland,—(Purser, Cormorant): mentioned 310
Copland, Matthew: mentioned 21
Copland, Mrs. Matthew: mentioned 21, 52
Copper, John: See Cropper, John

Cormorant Sloop: mentioned 310
Corn: does not agree with sheep 86; grown by Clark 111, 114; mentioned 125, 160, 205, 215, 216, 219, 266, 273, 276, 289, 291, 305; ground to be cleared for 127, 134, 137, 140; mills for grinding 138; sown 147, 168; blighted 160, 163; destroyed by fire 168; caterpillars attack 166, 170; stolen 183, 197; harvested 183, 186
Cornwall (England): mentioned 315, 318
Corvo, Island of: seen 236
Cote Fair (Haiti): mentioned 314
Cotton: for making gloves 27; mentioned 270; prize ships loaded with 317
Cotton Pods: from Rio de Janeiro 41
Cottrell, Thomas (marine): confined for neglect of duty 38
Coudry, Hanah: mentioned 26
Court, Criminal: Clark gives evidence at 97; sits 102, 103; mentioned 264
Court Martial: mentioned 16, 130, 199, 200, 260, 263, 264, 272, 273, 297, 300; Clark sits as member of 17, 96, 106, 146, 189, 202, 208; at Rio de Janeiro 35; of James Baker 42; Clark asks for 55, 253; Clark sits 209, 217, 219, 220; to be at Port Jackson 218
Coventry, James (seaman, Sirius): drowns at Norfolk Island 158
Creamer, John (convict): punished 140
Creamer, Peter: See Creamer, John
Creswell, John (Lt. of marines): speaks to Clark 34; mentioned 42, 43, 98, 129, 135, 137, 141, 157, 178, 195, 211, 215, 256, 259, 260, 268, 275, 285, 297, 298, 304; to enquire into court martial 57; sits to settle matter without court martial 58; sits on criminal court 97; at Norfolk Island 111, 114, 120; visits Charlottes Field 145, 147, 188, 190; called in to settle dispute 152, 153; at dispute with marines 192; to be relieved 194; embarks on Supply 198; letter to 306
Creswell, Mrs. John: mentioned 77, 157, 198, 306
Criminal Court: See Court, Criminal
Cropper, John alias Thomas (convict): absconds 183; punished 200
Crozier, Mrs.—: mentioned 246
Cumings, Captain—: mentioned 87
D
Daniels, Daniel (convict): punished 200
Danish ship: anchors at Cape of Good Hope 61; Clark visits 64, 65, 66
Davey, Thomas (1st. Lt.): dines with Clark 16; mentioned 23, 38, 40, 41, 43, 53, 56, 57, 58, 59, 63, 64, 92, 94, 95, 114, 116, 117, 254, 260, 263, 264; court martialled 106; buys Clark's boat 115
Davies,—(Captain): mentioned 66
Davis,—(Captain of Frigate): mentioned 315
Davis, Richard? (convict): afraid of Aborigines 109
Davy, Thomas: See Davey, Thomas
Daw,—: mentioned 64
Dawes, William (2nd Lt.): mentioned 69, 230, 247, 265; sails on Gorgon for England 225
Dayes, B. (convict): punished 173; released from irons 175
De Langle, Paul-Antoine-Marie Fleuriot: French commander killed 264
Deaths: Patrick Delaney (convict) 21, 257; convict's child dies (Thomas Mason) 49, 256, 257, 259; convict lost overboard from Charlotte 52, 259; Patrick Vallance drowns 62; two convicts die on Alexander 83; convicts die in hospital 100, 106; Thomas Barratt hanged 102; skeleton of Hill (convict) found 110; Ann Farmer dies 136; seven drown at Norfolk Island 159;—, Price (convict) dies 165; Henry Palmer (convict) dies 171; child of Elizabeth Pipkin dies 172; Jno. Robins drowns 179, 180; Rachael Smith dies from fall 207; two male convicts die 216; William Cooper dies 217;—, Ferguson dies from burns 218;—, Evans dies 218; Ann Jones dies 219;—, Dixon dies 220; marine's wife dies 228; Corporal Bacon's child dies 230, 233; Sergeant Devan's child dies 233, 234; John Gilbourne's child dies 233;—, Mapp (child) dies 233; Jno. Turner's child dies 234; Mary Braund's child dies 234; Mary Hume (child) dies 235;—, Buckley dies 236; Sergeant Perry's child dies 237
Delaney, Patrick (convict): death of 21
Dennison, Michael (convict): punished 200
Desolation, Island of: abreast of 77
Devan, Edward (marine): child dies 233, 234
Devil Fish (Manta Ray): seen 88
Devin, Phillip: See Divine, Philip
Deyer, Leonard: See Dyer, Leonard
Dillon, Regiment of: mentioned 314
Divine, Philip (convict): punished 205
Dixon,—(Dickson, Thomas?) (convict): punished 198
Dixon,—(convict): dies 220
Djakarta: See Batavia
Dodge, John Thomas: reports corn burnt 168; to harvest potatoes 169; mentioned 170, 172, 175, 177, 189, 190, 197, 200, 204; Clark displeased with 174
Dogs: Captain Walton gives Clark a puppy 24; Clark's dog lost overboard 32; Captain Meredith's lost overboard 50; banned from Mount Pitt, Norfolk Island 136; mentioned 250
Dolphins: caught 22, 24
Donevon, Stephen: See Donovan, Stephen
Donovan, Stephen (midshipman *Sirius*): second at duel 153; at inquiry into duel 154
Dorvent, Ann Jones: *See* Jones, Ann
Dougherty, Judah (marine's wife): dies at sea 228
Dourrawan (Aborigine): Clark's encounter with 109
Dring, William (convict): swims to *Sirius* wreck 123; sets fire to *Sirius* 124; put in irons 124; released from guard house 134; sent to Nepean Island 199
Duck: shot by Clark 95; mentioned 289
Dudgeon, Elizabeth (convict): released from irons 19; put in irons 22; flogged for impertinence 24; put in irons with Elizabeth Pully 32; released from irons 37; put in irons for fighting 59
Duhagen, Cornelius: *See* Duheg, Cornelius
Duheg, Cornelius (seaman *Friendship*): Clark gives rum to 77
Dullage, Joseph: *See* Dunnage, Joseph
Duncombe Bay (Norfolk Island): mentioned 201, 202; turtle caught at 205
Duncombe, Joseph (convict): punished 215
Dunstervil,—: house destroyed by fire 234
Dutch ships: seen 12, 237; anchored at Cape of Good Hope 55, 56, 57, 59, 60, 67; sails 56, 57, 61, 65; dismasted in gale 61; Clark visits 65; mentioned 258, 259, 290
Dutton, Ann (convict): punished 203
Duvalt, John: *See* Gualt, John
Dyer, Leonard (convict): punished 188
E
Eady, Mrs.—: mentioned 31
Early, Rachel (convict): put in irons 53, 54; punished 191
Ebony: given to Clark 66
Edgridge, Thomas (convict): punished 218
Efford (England): mentioned 44; dog: given by Captain Walton named 24; hurts leg 26; lost overboard 32
Eggs: mentioned 300, 301
Elliot, James (convict): punished 175; tree falls on 199
Ellis, William (marine): mentioned 100, 297, 298; accompanies Clark on shore 109, 110; collects sweet tea for Clark 114; parts with Clark 116; Clark recommends to Major Ross 129; plants potatoes for Clark 147; confined for trial 208; acquitted 209
Emus: shot 104
Engle, Oataway: See Hindle, Ottiwell
Escott, John (Ancott, Ascott) (marine): steals Major Ross's rum 129; questioned by Major Ross 192, 193; insane 212, 213; mentioned 307
Essence of Malt: for scurvy 226
Etton, Jonathan (convict): punished 211
Equator: crossed 25
Equinoxial Gale: mentioned 48
Evans, William (convict): rations stolen 81
Evans,— (convict Salamander): dies 218
Exeter: mentioned 77

F
Faddy, William (2nd Lt.): embarks on Friendship 1; mentioned 15, 20, 26, 34, 35, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 53, 55, 56, 57, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 66, 78, 84, 91, 115, 120, 147, 149, 170, 171, 194, 199, 207, 208, 213, 232, 253, 260, 297, 298, 299, 301, 306, 307; abused by woman convict 27; has bugs in his bed 29; abuses Clark while drunk 57; brought before officers 57, 58; to go to Norfolk Island 111, 114; lands at Norfolk Island 119; altercation with Lt. Kellow 149, 150; decides to duel with Lt. Kellow 151; arrested for intended duel 152; does duel 153; faces inquisition 154; at dispute with marines 193; takes order to Capt. Hill 217; writes letter of complaint 218; testifies for Major Ross 224; sails on Gorgon for home 225
Faddy, Mrs. William: mentioned 44
Fairfull,—: mentioned 314
Falmouth (Devonshire): abreast of 11; mentioned 256, 258
Farmer, Ann (convict): dies 136
Faull,—: neglects to post Clark's letters 182
Fauna: See Animals, Birds, Fish, Insects, Marine Fauna
Ferd[?] Fort (Haiti): mentioned 315
Ferguson, John? (convict): badly burnt 215; dies from burns 218
Feutsell, Theophilus (soldier NSW Corps): mentioned 216
Fig tree: fruit from eaten 114
Figs: green at Teneriffe 16
Finnesy,—(convict): escapes into woods 133; still absent 136; caught 137
First Fleet: See also Alexander, Borrowdale, Charlotte, Fishburn, Friendship, Golden Grove, Lady Penrhyn, Prince of Wales, Scarborough, Sirius, Supply. sets sail 11; anchors at Teneriffe 15; watering at Teneriffe 16; leaves 17; anchors at Rio de Janeiro 33; leaves 43; anchors at Cape of Good Hope 55; leaves 67; Phillip intends dividing 69, 70; fleet divides 72; Supply anchors in Botany Bay 90; rest of the fleet arrive 91; Supply leaves for Port Jackson 92; rest of fleet leave for Port Jackson 93; Supply sails for Norfolk Island 98
Fisbourn, Andrew: See Fishburn, Andrew
Fish: See also Marine Fauna: seen about the ship 14, 22, 28, 88, 231; caught 28, 34, 91, 235; given to Clark 95; caught at Norfolk Island 128, 129, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 148, 149, 155, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171, 172, 173, 174, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 183, 184, 185, 186, 187, 199, 216; mentioned 271, 293 See also: Albacores, Bonetos, Devil Fish, Flying Fish, Old Wives, Sharks
Fishburn, Andrew (marine): principal in marine dispute 192
Fishburn Store-ship (Brown, Robert, Commander): mentioned 12, 32, 45, 50, 53, 54, 70, 71
Fisher, William: See Blatherhorn, William
Flarty, Phoebe (convict): punished 130, 165, 197
Flattery, Phibay: See Flarty, Phoebe
Flax: for thatching 127, 132, 134, 184, 187; being cut 161; mentioned 171
Flaxmore, Frances (convict): punished 211
Flaxmore, Henry (convict): punished 220
Fleming,—: Mrs. Crozier at home of 246
Fletcher,—(convict): punished 218
Flora: See Bananas, Barley, Beans, Cabbages, Coffee, Corn, Cotton, Figs, Flax, Grapes, Indian Corn, Limes, Oats, Onions,
Oranges, Peas, Potatoes, Pumpkins, Strawberries, Tea, Turnips, Watermelon, Wheat, Yams

Flour: ration at Port Jackson 101, 102; convicts tried for stealing 103, 141; amount at Norfolk Island 122, 124; saved from Sirius wreck 125, 126; rations at Norfolk Island 133, 134, 138, 141, 143, 187, 191, 210; stolen 200; received 214; mentioned 271, 283

Flying Fish: come on board 31; seen 71, 232, 233

Folk, Francis: See Fowkes, Francis

Forbes, Sir William: mentioned 54

Forster, William: mentioned 305

Foster, George: mentioned 80, 87

Fowkes, Francis (convict): punished 220; mentioned 221

France: mentioned 258

Freeman, James (convict): sentenced to death for stealing 103; pardoned on condition of becoming hangman 103

Freeman, Thomas (Capt. Hunter's clerk): appointed Deputy Commissary 158; his servant punished 186; mentioned 206, 212

French ships: See also Astrolabe and Boussole anchored at Cape of Good Hope 55, 59; Clark visits 65, 66

Friendship Transport (Walton, Francis, Capt.): Clark embarks on 1; marine detachment complement 1; loses main top gallant mast 14; splits fore top sail 18, 84; splits jib and main top gallant sails 30, 86, 87; to go ahead of the fleet 70; anchors in Botany Bay 90; damaged by Prince of Wales and Charlotte 93; mentioned 187, 253, 254, 259, 261; letters written from 241, 242, 243, 244, 246, 247, 248, 249, 250, 251, 253, 254, 255, 256, 257

Froughton,—(Master, Powerfull): mentioned 313

Fruit: See also Bananas, Figs, Grapes, Limes, Oranges, Strawberries, Watermelons. none at Teneriffe 16

Fuges, Mrs.—: mentioned 26

Furneaux, Tobias Captain: mentioned 85

Furzer, James (Lt. of marines, quarter master of Sirius): comes aboard with orders 34, 55; mentioned 56, 57, 78, 112, 260, 272, 273, 274, 299; sails on Gorgon for England 225

G

Gandous, Joseph (convict): punished 210

Gannets: caught for feathers 173, 176
Garth, Susannah (convict): transferred to the _Charlotte_ 36
Gess, George (convict): punished 180, 211, 219
Gibbourn, Andrew: See Gilbourne, Andrew
Gibbourne, Andrew (sergeant): child John dies 233; very ill 234
Gibbourne, John (child): dies 233
Giles,—(convict): punished 199
Glaster, William: See Gloster, William
Gloster, William (convict): punished 173
Goats: thrown overboard from _Sirius_ wreck 123; mentioned 232
Godfray, William: See Godfrey, William
Godfrey, William (marine): receives 50 lashes 100; mentioned 254
Goff,—: See Gough,—(corporal of marines)
Goff, Edward: hen stolen from 183
Goff, Elizabeth (convict): punished 212
_Golden Grove_ (Sharp,—, Captain): mentioned 31, 270, 271, 273, 276
Gordon,—: mentioned 306
Gordon,—(Lt. HMS _Gorgon?): mentioned 232
Gordon, Daniel (convict): sentenced to death for stealing 103; pardoned on condition of banishment 103
Gordon, Robert Jacob, Colonel: Clark calls on 58; asks Clark to dine with him 62; Clark sends letter to 62, 255; message from 230; mentioned 252, 256
_Gorgon_: Clark awaits 162, 163, 164, 165, 166, 167, 168, 171, 175, 176, 177, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182, 194, 209, 213; receives news of 208, 221; mentioned 222, 279, 282, 285, 289, 296, 297, 300, 302, 303; Clark sails for England on 225
Gough,—(corporal of marines): goes shooting with Clark 99
Gough, Susannah: See Garth, Susannah
Grace, James (convict): taken prisoner by patrol 189
Grand Canaries: See Canary Islands
Grapes: grown at Norfolk Island 186
Grasshoppers: collected by Clark 101
Gray, Charles or Patrick? (convict): escaped 162
Gray, Charles (convict): punished 200, 219; mentioned 200; testifies he was forced to sign document 224
Green, Charles (marine): court martialed 96; sentence reprieved 97; receives 100 lashes 100
Green, Hannah (convict): transferred to Charlotte 36
Greens: fresh at Rio de Janeiro 35; mentioned 82, 259, 265; sent to ships 160
Gregory, Elizabeth (child): attempted rape of 206
Griges, Mary (convict): punished 202
Grimes, Charles (deputy surveyor): Clark shows Queensborough to 223
Grose, Francis (Major NSW Corps): mentioned 297, 300
Groves, George: mentioned 71, 305
Grymers, Charles: See Grimes, Charles
Gualt, John (convict): punished 186, 187, 190, 206; recaptured after escaping 212
Guardian: ship wrecked 157; mentioned 177, 178, 277, 280, 283, 290, 295, 296, 297
Guest, George: See Gess, George
Gulf Weed: seen 235
Gulls: shot 60
Gunter, William (convict): punished 210, 217

H
Hailey, John (marine): principal in dispute 192
Hall, John (convict): punished 132
Hall, Joseph (convict): tried for stealing 102; sentenced to hang 102; respite 102; pardoned 102; mentioned 103
Hall, Margaret (convict): released from irons 19; put in irons 29; out of irons 30
Halligon, Elizabeth: See Hollogin, Elizabeth
Ham: mentioned 41
Hanse, Mrs.—: mentioned 44
Harley, Rachel: See Early, Rachel
Harris,—(convict): caught and punished 190
Harris, Jonathon (convict): punished 215
Harris, William (convict): punished 211
Hart, Frances (convict): makes trousers for Clark 29; transferred to Charlotte 36
Hartwell, Mrs. George: mentioned 277
Harvy, Elizabeth (convict): transferred to Charlotte 36
Hawk: caught 78
Hawkings, Aunt: mentioned 44, 47, 76, 94, 98, 105
Hawkins, Hannah (convict): punished 191
Hay: to be sent from Friendship to Lady Penrhyn 70; mentioned 300, 305
Haynes, William (convict, a cabinet maker): to make Clark a desk 30; transferred from the Friendship 69
Hern, William (steward Friendship): sent aboard Sirius for punishment 22; mentioned 254
Higgins, Mary (convict): punished 197
Hill,—(convict): punished 186
Hill,—(convict): skeleton found at Lane Cove 110
Hill, Francis (midshipman Sirius): missing 110
Hill, Thomas (convict): confined on island in irons 97
Hill, Thomas (convict): confined in irons 221
Hill, William (Captain NSW Corps): sent as relief 194; offers tea etc. to Clark 198; mentioned 202, 207, 208, 220, 297, 299; receives order from Major Ross 217; threatens Mr. Faddy 218; settles quarrel with Clark 222; his company embarks on Queen 223
Hindle, Ottiwell (convict): punished 143, 178
Hobbs,—: mentioned 64
Holland: mentioned 44, 258
Hollogin, Elizabeth (convict): punished 205
Holmes, Susannah (convict): child of 225
Holms,—(convict): punished 199
Holms, Susannah: See Holmes, Susannah
Horses: on board Lady Penrhyn 70
Hound Sloop: mentioned 313, 314
Howard, John (convict): punished 169, 199, 216; forgiven rest of punishment 219
Howe,—(First Lord of the Admiralty): letter from 243
Hudson, Jonathon (convict): punished 183
Hughes, Edward: child of Jane Parkenson 255
Hughes, William (marine): mentioned 254
Hughes,—(Colonel): mentioned 64
Hume, Andrew (superintendent of convicts): mentioned 161, 171, 177, 215, 217, 224
Hume, John (sergeant): child dies 235
Hume, Mary: child of Sergeant Hume dies 235
Hume, Miss—: mentioned 54, 61, 69, 72, 278, 282
Humphries, Henry (convict): punished 220
Hunter, John (Second Captain Sirius): comes onboard 35, 60; dines with Clark on Sirius 37; sits on criminal court 97; mentioned 116, 117, 124, 129, 134, 135, 140, 141, 148, 155, 156, 182, 194, 234, 287, 291, 292, 293, 294, 298; Clark criticizes 120; comes onshore after wreck of Sirius 122; allows two convicts on Sirius wreck 123; reports Clark to Major Ross 130; visits Charlotte Field 145, 147; to go on board Supply 181; letter to 248, 249
Huntingdonshire: mentioned 73
Hurn, William: See Hern, William
Husey, Samuel (convict): catches escaped convict 137
Hyena Frigate (D'Courcy, Hon. Michael, Capt.): fleet escort departs 13; mentioned 14
I
Illid, Charles (convict carpenter): punished 189
Indian Corn: given to Clark 66; mentioned 129, 199, 289, 298, 303, 307; planted 163; needs rain 173; issued out 187; stolen
Ingle, Oatway: See Hindle, Ottiwell
Ingram (Ingrim), Benjamin (convict): to be court martialled 146
Ireland: regiments from 314
Irresistible (Price,—Master): mentioned 314, 315, 318
Irvin, John: See Irving, John
Irving, John (convict): appointed assistant surgeon at Norfolk Island 115; mentioned 175
Isle of Wight: mentioned 51

J
Jamaica: ship from 238; mentioned 310, 316, 317
Jameson, Thomas: See Jamison, Thomas
Jamison, Thomas (surgeon's mate HMS Sirius): Clark quartered with 120; mentioned 121; to be assistant on Norfolk Island 194; questioned by Major Ross 196
Jarvis, Sir John: mentioned 314
Jemina,—: mentioned 45
Johnson, Mrs. Mary (Rev. Johnson's wife): mentioned 36, 38
Johnson, Rev. Richard (chaplain): baptises convict children 36; baptises marine child 37; mentioned 38, 42, 44, 64, 224; at hanging 102, 103; ill 105; visits Queensborough 222; baptises 31 children 222; letter to 247
Johnston, George (Lt. of marines): mentioned 36, 38, 59, 120, 129, 135, 137, 141, 146, 147, 155, 189, 191, 193, 195, 260, 265, 270, 271, 284, 300, 307; to enquire into court martial 57; settles matter without court martial 58; to go to Norfolk Island 114; his company to go to Charlotte Field 142, 144; declines being second in duel 151; called to settle dispute 152, 153; visits Clark at Charlotte Field 190; dispute with marines 192; to be relieved 194; embarks on Supply 198; letter from 209, 295; letter to 211, 296
Johnstone,—(female convict): drowns at Norfolk Island 159
Johnstone, John (Lt. of marines): two of his men to be court martialled 16; speaks with Clark 24; mentioned 36, 38, 42, 56, 57, 58, 59, 63, 78, 91, 95, 98, 115, 116, 120, 129, 137, 146, 259, 260, 269, 270, 271, 273, 287, 289, 293; to go to Norfolk Island 111, 114; lands at Norfolk Island 119; visits Charlotte Field 147; called to settle dispute 152, 153; boards Supply 182; sails on Gorgon for England 225
Jones Dorvent, Ann (convict): dies 219
Jones,—(convict): punished 159, 197; escapes into woods 160; mentioned 162
Jons,—(Surgeon Cormorant): mentioned 310
Judge-Advocate: See Collins, David

Justinian Store-ship (Maitland, Benjamin, Captain): arrives at Norfolk Island 157; mentioned 158, 278, 283, 286, 287, 288, 292; sails 161

K
Kable, Henry: See Cable, Henry
Kangaroos: killed 96, 98; seen 98; mentioned 265
Keable, Henry: See Cable, Henry
Keeling, John Herbert: See Kellan, John Herbert
Kellan, John Herbert (convict): mentioned 219; punished 220
Kellow, Robert (Lt. of marines): dines with Clark 16; mentioned 23, 25, 36, 40, 55, 56, 57, 61, 65, 112, 113, 114, 115, 116, 120, 135, 142, 144, 254, 258, 260, 263, 264, 271, 276, 284, 289; to enquire into court martial 57; settles matter without court martial 58; to go to Norfolk Island 114; lands at Norfolk Island 119; altercation with Lieut. Faddy 149, 150; decides to duel with Lieut. Faddy 151; arrested for intended duel 152; does duel 153; suspended from duty 154; Ensign Prentice to have his house 198; letter to 280, 281; letter from 304
Kempster, Mrs. George: mentioned 53, 72, 84, 90, 246, 247, 250, 253, 257, 260, 265, 274, 306
Kempster, Mrs. Senior: mentioned 246, 247, 251, 253, 257, 260, 265, 274
Kennedy, John (sergeant of marines): testifies for Major Ross 224
Kent (whaler): seen 67
Kergullins Land, Island of Desolation: mentioned 77
Kervan, Elanora (convict): stillborn child 219
King George III: birthday celebration 139, 202; mentioned 235
King, Philip Gidley, Lt. R.N. (Lt. Governor of Norfolk Island): dines with Clark aboard Sirius 37; mentioned 69, 70, 91, 119, 120, 121, 265, 305, 306, 307; leaves in Supply for Norfolk Island 98; new arrivals dine with 120; boards Supply for Port Jackson 124; returns to Norfolk Island 221; visits Queensborough 222; commission as Lt. Gov. read 223; refuses to let convict settle 224
King, Anna Josepha (Mr. Philip Gidley King): arrives at Norfolk Island 221
Kingfisher Fly or Horse Stinger: caught 87
Kingston, Robert (convict): punished 217

L
La Astrolabe: See Astrolabe
La Boussole: See Boussole
La Row, James: See Larne, James
Lady Juliana (second fleet transport): mentioned 157
Lady Penrhyn Transport (Sever, William Cropton, Captain): mentioned 28, 31, 36, 37, 45, 47, 53, 63, 64, 67, 91; to take four of Friendship female convicts 61; female convict injured on 62
Lane Cove: Clark goes to 109, 110, 112
Larne, James (convict): punished 215
Laurence, Robert (1st mate, Friendship): anniversary dinner with Clark 19; catches dolphins 22; tries to catch porpoise 75
Lavall, Henry: See Lavell, Henry
Lavell, Henry (convict): mentioned 18, 103; reads prayers at burial service 49; steals beef and wood 81; tried for stealing 102; sentenced to hang 102; receives respite 102; pardoned 102; punished 184
Lawrell, John (convict): fired on, wounded 128; punished 211, 212
Lawson,—: mentioned 298
Legg, George: garden robbed 199
Lemonade: taken on shore 38; drunk as toast 40, 41; mentioned 46
Letter Book: mentioned 56, 57, 60, 62, 64, 158, 182, 209, 211, 215, 221
Lewis, Joseph (marine): apologises to Captain Johnston 192
Lindsay,—Major: mentioned 42
Lieutenant-Governor of New South Wales: See Ross, Robert
Limamon, Mary (convict): flour stolen from 200
Limes: at Rio de Janeiro 36
Lisbon (Portugal): ship from 2; ship bound for 33, 64, 258
Lisk[e]ard: mentioned 31
Lizards: eaten 265
Lock, John (convict): punished 211
Log (distance sailed): 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 46, 48, 49, 54, 71, 74, 75, 76, 77, 79, 81, 82, 83, 84, 88, 117, 118, 225, 226, 227, 228, 229, 230, 231, 232, 235
Long, John (Adjutant, Lt. of marines): brings orders on board Friendship 15; orders of in orderly book 16; comes aboard with orders 34, 35, 36, 38, 39, 55, 64, 91; mentioned 40, 53, 57, 60, 72, 112, 269; to enquire into court martial 57; letter to 254
Lonkey, David (convict): to be court martialled 146
McClairin,—Colonel: mentioned 314, 315
Lord Davie: mentioned 305
Lord Howe Island: mentioned 117, 265, 276; in sight of 118; call at 225
Lovell, Henry: See Lavell, Henry
Lowal, John: See Lawrell, John
Lowndes, Aunt: mentioned 316
Lyons, Sarah (convict): punished 189, 202, 205
Lunn, Thomas (soldier, NSW Corps): court martialled 220
M
McClairin,—Colonel: mentioned 314, 315
McClaring, Charles: *See* McClellan, Charles
McClellan, Charles (convict): head fractured 131; sent to Nepean Island 199
McCormick, Sarah (convict): put in irons 22; mentioned 32; very ill 32; still very ill 34, 41; pregnant to seaman 51
McDonal, Alexander: *See* McDonald, Alexander
McDonald, Alexander (marine): receives 50 lashes 100
McFarlain, Charles: *See* McClellan, Charles
McKay, James (convict): punished 169
McNamara, William: *See* McNamara, William
McNamara, Mrs. (marine's wife?): put in irons 30; released from irons 30
McNamara, William (convict): released from irons 37; punished 130
Maio Island (Cape Verde Islands): seen 19
Maitland, Benjamin (Captain *Justinian*): mentioned 158
Mapp, James (marine): child dies 233
Marine Fauna: *See* Dolphins, Porpoises, Seals, Sharks, Turtles, Whales. *See also* Fish
Marshall, Mary (convict): punished 211
Martial Law: proclaimed at Norfolk Island 122; mentioned 284, 288
Martin,—(marine officer): mentioned 55, 67, 78, 88
Martin,—(Frigate Captain): mentioned 315
Martine,—(marine officer): *See* Martin,— (marine officer)
Mary,—: mentioned 318
*Mary Ann* Transport (Monroe, Mark, Master): arrives at Norfolk Island 208; surf too rough for landing 209; loses boat 210; sails 211; mentioned 213, 295, 296, 298, 300, 305, 307
Mason, Thomas (convict's child): dies 49
*Matilda* Transport: mentioned 208
Matthew: *See* Trevan, Matthew
Maxwell, James (Lt. of marines): comes onboard 35; dines with Clark aboard *Sirius* 37; mentioned 48, 56, 57, 104, 252, 256, 259, 260, 265, 268
May Island: See Maio Island
Meat: rationed at Norfolk Island 128
Mee, Francis (marine): Principal in dispute 192, 193
Melcombe,—, Major: mentioned 297, 300
Mercer,—: mentioned 62
Mercer,—: mentioned 306
Mercury: convicts from 2–10; mentioned 13; uprising on 78
Meredith, James (Capt Lt. of marines): embarks on Friendship 1; mentioned 13, 15, 16, 17, 29, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 46, 47, 49, 53, 55, 56, 57, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 66, 67, 68, 72, 74, 78, 84, 86, 90, 91, 94, 95, 104, 144, 147, 254, 260, 273; releases four women from irons 19; orders Elizabeth Dudgeon to be flogged 24; abused by woman convict 27, 28; puts Margaret Hall in irons 29; loses dog overboard 50; relates matter between Clark and Faddy 58; sits at criminal court 97; goes shooting with Clark 99, 100; his company to go to Norfolk Island 111; company goes to Charlotte Field 148; sails on Gorgon for England 225; letter to 253
Meridith,—(female convict): punished 191
Meynell, John (marine): questioned about dispute 193
Middleburgh: Dutch ship from 60, 258, 259
Miller, Andrew (Commissary): dines with Clark aboard Sirius 37; mentioned 58, 83, 111; serves out provisions 101
Monroe, Mark (Master, Mary Ann): mentioned 301
Moore, William (convict): punished 130
Moring, Margaret: See Bingham, Elizabeth
Morley, Roger (store-keeper, Norfolk Island): mentioned 129, 142, 181, 201
Morris, Peter? (convict): punished 220
Morrell, James (convict): taken prisoner by patrol 189
Mortimore, John (convict): punished 207
Mother Bank (Isle of Wight): mentioned 19, 22, 29, 234, 252, 257, 275; letter written from 241, 248
Mother Carey's Chickens: seen 73, 74, 79, 80
Mount George (Norfolk Island): mentioned 155, 156, 213
Mount Gower (Lord Howe Island): mentioned 118
Mount Pitt (Norfolk Island): visited 129, 139, 193, 200; birds at 131, 135, 139, 189; mentioned 135, 136, 137, 156, 190, 196, 197, 220, 223, 292, 293
Mount Pitt Birds (Pterodroma melanopus): killed on Norfolk Island 127, 128, 129, 130, 131, 132, 133, 134, 135, 136, 137, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 189, 190, 193, 200; order issued re 148; sent to Mrs. Clark 161; mentioned 282, 284, 285, 292, 293
Mullis, Stephen: Clark gives rum to 94; Clark gives grog and meat to 98
Mullot, Stephen: See Mullis, Stephen
Munday,—: mentioned 42, 49
Murray, William (Surgeon Justinian): letter recommending 157, 278; dines with Clark 158; stays with Clark 159; goes shooting with Clark 160; leaves 161; mentioned 282
Musselburgh: mentioned 54; Patrick Vallance from 62
Mutton: sent on board Friendship 23, 74; offered to Scarborough 81; full of maggots 96; mentioned 259, 260, 293
Mutton Bird (Shearwater): sent to Mrs. Clark 161; arrive after ‘Mount Pitt bird’ leaves 285, 293
N
Nancy: speak to 237
Nancy,—(Matthew Trevan's wife?) mentioned 317, 318
Nankeen (cloth): purchased from Danish ship 66; made into trousers 86; mentioned 181, 290
Nash,—: letter from 213
Nash, Mary (convict): punished 178
Natural History: See Animals, Birds, Fish, Flora, Marine Fauna
Nepean Island: See Animals, Birds, Fish, Flora, Marine Fauna
Nepean Island: seen 118, mentioned 121, 129, 177; gannets caught at 173, 176; convicts to be sent to 183, 199; convicts picked up from 203
Nepean, Nicholas (Captain NSW Corps): mentioned 278, 283, 285, 290, 296, 297, 300
New Holland: mentioned 83, 117, 262, 267
New South Wales Corps: arrive at Norfolk Island 194; court martial 199, 200, 202, 208, 217, 219, 220; houses for 204; sent to Phillipsburgh 208, 209; more arrive 208, 213, 214, 223; mentioned 283, 297, 299
New Zealand: in sight of 225
Newland, John (convict): punished 173; absent from work 174
Nickol,—(Captain, Salamander): mentioned 301, 302, 303
Norfolk Island: King leaves in Supply for 98; Clark to go to 111; mentioned 112, 113, 114, 265, 270, 272, 273, 276, 279, 281, 282, 283, 286, 287, 294, 295, 296, 298, 299, 301, 302, 304, 305, 306; assistant surgeon appointed for 115; Clark sails for 117; in sight of 118
Norfolk Island Council: meets 122, 125, 128, 133, 137, 148, 156
Norfolk Island Council Book: mentioned 125, 128, 133, 148, 180
North Head (Sydney Harbour): mentioned 117
Nowland, John: See Newland, John

O
Oatmeal: Alexander requests from Friendship 83
Oats: sown at Norfolk Island 131
Old Wives: caught 34
Oldfield,—Captain: mentioned 314, 315
Onions: stolen from Clark's garden 111; mentioned 289, 290
Oranges: at Rio de Janeiro 34, 36, 39; trees purchased at Rio de Janeiro 43
Orderly Book: mentioned 16, 17, 22, 34, 35, 38, 46, 59, 62, 64, 69, 70, 91, 92, 93, 113, 114, 115, 120, 122, 124, 126, 128, 130, 136, 142, 154, 158, 183, 208, 217, 219
Ostend (Belgium): mentioned 230

P
Palmer, Henry (convict): dies 171
Palmer, John (purser, Sirius): mentioned 58, 288, 293; visits Charlotte Field 195
Pancakes: mentioned 83
Parakeets (Parroquetts): shot by Clark 99, 112
Parkenson, Jane (convict): ill 21; dies aboard Lady Penrhyn 70; child of 255
Parker, Charles (carpenter, Supply): mentioned 291
Parker, Elizabeth (convict): put in leg irons 53; taken out of irons 54; child of 255
Parker, William (Captain HMS Gorgon): mentioned 230, 233, 300
Parrot, Edward: See Perrott, Edward
Parrots: shot by Clark 95
Parson: See Johnson, Rev. Richard
Parsons, Henry (marine): questioned about marine dispute 193
Paterson, Mrs. William: arrives at Norfolk Island 221
Paterson, William (Captain, NSW Corps): arrives at Norfolk Island to relieve Captain Hill 221; has letter for Clark 222; mentioned 222
Patrick, John: See Petherick, John
Peas: at Cape of Good Hope 58; in lieu of oatmeal 83; soup mentioned 88; ration at Port Jackson 101; attacked by caterpillars 166
Perfume: aboard French ship 59
Perrott, Edward (convict): mentioned 216
Perry,—: mentioned 26
Perry, William (sergeant of marines): child dies 237
Petherick, John (convict): other convicts steal his rations 81
Petrels: black, about the ship 231
Phillimore, William (convict settler, Norfolk Island): his farm mentioned 149, 168, 211; caterpillars at his farm 170
Phillip, Arthur (Governor): mentioned 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 33, 34, 35, 37, 40, 42, 43, 44, 45, 46, 47, 49, 50, 51, 52, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 58, 60, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 72, 92, 94, 96, 100, 106, 109, 111, 113, 114, 116, 120, 127, 161, 167, 182, 194, 197, 209, 220, 247, 252, 256, 259, 263, 268, 269, 272, 273, 280, 284, 288, 289, 295; comes onboard Friendship 16; intends dividing fleet 69, 70; goes to Sydney harbour to investigate 91; leaves for Port Jackson 92; commission read 96, 98; explores the harbour 98; sends pardon 102; explores Broken Bay 104; appoints assistant surgeon for Norfolk Island 115; letter to 241, 242, 244; letter from 241, 243, 245; refuses leave 245
Phillip Island: seen 118; birds and fish at 167, 169, 170, 176, 179, 182, 184; mentioned 181, 213
Phillips, Mary (convict): transferred from Charlotte 36
Phillipsburgh (Norfolk Island): village named 197; Clark visits 199, 207, 220; mentioned 204, 205, 212, 215, 217, 218, 297, 299; NSW Corps to be stationed at 208, 209

Pigeons: sent to Mrs. Clark 161; shot by Clark 165; mentioned 180

Pigs: one left 24; for table 31, 46, 48, 50, 85; Arndell's sow has litter 76; Clark has one pig 94; killed by lightning 96; sow as payment 115; Clark's loaded for Norfolk Island 116; Clark's has litter 117; sent ashore at Norfolk Island 120; thrown overboard from Sirius wreck 123; order regarding 126, 181; sty built for 147; convicts can return 223; mentioned 289, 300

Pintado (Pintarney) Birds (Cape Pigeons): seen 50, 228

Pipkin, Elizabeth (convict): child of dies 172; punished 202

Pitt,—: mentioned 289

Pitt Eastindiaman: at Cape of Good Hope 230

Plyer, George (marine): court marshalled 189

Plymouth: mentioned 11, 17, 74, 89, 180, 203, 225, 235, 238, 258, 266, 268, 270, 271 274, 275, 276, 277, 283, 284, 286, 287, 306; leave requested to go to 244

Point Hunter (Norfolk Island): mentioned 194

Point Ross (Norfolk Island): mentioned 121

Pork: served for dinner 30; salt mentioned 50, 74, 81, 87, 88, 166, 283; ration at Port Jackson 101; saved from Sirius wreck 125; ration at Norfolk Island 133, 148, 156, 189, 191

Porpoises: seen 12, 50, 74, 75, 79, 89, 228, 232, 234

Port-au-Prince (Haiti): mentioned 314, 315, 317


Portsmouth: ship from 234; letter written from 241, 242; mentioned 245, 277, 284

Portuguese Officer: breakfasts aboard Friendship 37

Portuguese Ship: seen 21, 32; in company with fleet 22; anchors at Cape of Good Hope 64; Clark visits 65, 66

Potatoes: served for dinner 30; at Cape of Good Hope 58; stolen from Clark's garden 113; mentioned 125, 137, 300; ground to
be cleared for 127, 134, 141; harvested 133, 169, 170; planted 135, 136, 140, 142, 143, 147; given for hard work 175; stolen 211, 218

Poulden, John (Lt. of marines): speaks to Clark 34; mentioned 39, 98, 101, 112, 256, 258, 259, 260, 263, 264, 268, 270, 271, 275, 276, 57; sits to settle matter without court martial 58; servant lost in woods 98; servant returns 99

Poultry: five fowls left 24; dying 68; Clark has two hens 94; Clark's loaded for Norfolk Island 116; sent ashore at Norfolk Island 120; thrown overboard from *Sirius* wreck 123; mentioned 289, 291, 300, 302, 303

*Powerfull* (Froughton,—Master): mentioned 313

Powley, Elizabeth (convict): released from irons 19, 30, 37; put in irons 22, 30; put in irons with Elizabeth Dudgeon 32; pregnant to seaman 51

Prentice, John Thomas (ensign, NSW Corps): sent as relief 194; visits Charlotte Field 195; to have Kellow's house 198; mentioned 198, 297, 300

Presquil (Haiti): mentioned 314

*Preston*: mentioned 315

Price,—: mentioned 71, 73, 80, 268

Price,—(convict): dies 165

Price,—(Master *Irresistable*): mentioned 315, 318

Price,—Mrs: mentioned 315

*Prince of Wales* Transport (Mason, John, Capt): mentioned 48, 52, 54, 55, 91, 256, 259, 260; to take thirteen of *Friendship* female convicts 61; damages *Friendship* 93

*Prince William Henry*: news from 234

Provost Marshal: See Brewer, Henry

*Pterodroma melanopus*: See Mount Pitt Birds

Pugh, Elizabeth: See Parker, Elizabeth

Pugh, John (marine): steals potatoes 176

Pugh, Nancy: child of convict Pugh (Parker), Elizabeth 255

Pully, Elizabeth: See Powley, Elizabeth

Pumpkins: at Teneriffe 16, 17; pie served for dinner 30
Punch: drunk onboard from 46; for Clark's wife's birthday 95
Pylades: mentioned 11

Q
Quail: sent to Mrs. Clark 161
Queen Transport: mentioned 221; arrives at Norfolk Island 222; Captain Hill's company embark 223; Clark embarks 224
Queensborough (Norfolk Island): town named 197; Clark visits 197, 198, 199, 200, 202, 218, 222, 223; wheat sown at 200; mentioned 204, 207, 215, 216, 219, 303, 306

R
Raimor, William: See Moore, William
Rainer,—(convict): punished 215
Rainger Packet (Buchan,—,Captain): at Cape of Good Hope 63, 64; leaves 64; mentioned 256, 258
Raisins: mentioned 293
Ratford, Joseph: See Meynell, John
Receveur, Rev. Laurent (French Abbé): visits Port Jackson 100
Repeat, Charles (convict); punished 140
Resby,—(convict): time expires 224
Rey,—(Lieutenant): visits Queensborough 222; mentioned 232
Reynolds, Charles Lieutenant: mentioned 18, 42, 46, 49, 53, 73, 78, 89, 246, 251, 253, 266, 274; letter to 267, 274
Rice: in lieu of bread 35; agent asks for amount onboard 45; mentioned 50, 283; pudding mentioned 88; ration at Port Jackson 102; saved from Sirius wreck 125, 126; ration at Norfolk Island 133
Richardson,—(convict): punished 132
Richardson,—(convict): to flog convicts 197, 218
Riley, James (marine): struck by convict 188
Rio de Janeiro (South America): Portuguese ship bound to 22; mentioned 23, 25, 27, 29, 30, 32, 43, 45, 71, 257, 258, 259, 260; at anchor at 33, 34
Roberts,—: mentioned 313
Roberts, John (marine): principal in marine dispute 192; mentioned 254
Roberts, Jonathan (convict): drowns at Norfolk Island 159
Robins: sent to Mrs. Clark 161
Robins, Jno. (convict): escapes into woods 133; returns, punished 134; drowns 179, 180
Robinson,—(convict): punished 219
Robinson, James (convict): punished 180
Robinson, William (convict): punished 211
Rock Weed: seen 227, 228
Rodney (boy on *Friendship*): falls overboard 34
Romaine, John (convict): punished 209
Roper,—: convict impertinent to 173
Rose Hill: mentioned 110, 295; Clark goes to 114; convicts from, going to Norfolk Island 116
Ross, John (2nd. Lt.): to go to Norfolk Island 111, 114; mentioned 116, 117, 121, 194, 264, 287, 291, 299, 300, 302, 304, 306; lands at Norfolk Island 120; accompanies Clark to Mount Pitt 139; visits Charlotte Field 147, 168, 170, 171, 172, 174, 176, 178, 184; gets lost with Clark 168; sails on *Gorgon* for England 225
Ross, Robert (Major, Lt. Governor): comes aboard *Friendship* 15, 16, 35, 39, 56, 57, 60, 63; orders from 22, 69, 72, 74, 91, 92, 191; Clark dines with 36, 37, 95, 98, 103, 113, 115, 139; mentioned 38, 42, 57, 58, 59, 61, 62, 64, 66, 72, 78, 86, 92, 93, 96, 99, 103, 104, 110, 112, 114, 115, 116, 117, 121, 128, 130, 134, 135, 143, 144, 145, 146, 156, 163, 170, 175, 176, 178, 181, 188, 195, 204, 211, 216, 220, 221, 230, 242, 245, 247, 248, 250, 252, 259, 260, 263, 268, 269, 272, 273, 274, 276, 279, 280, 281, 283, 284, 287, 288, 289, 290, 291, 292, 293, 294, 295, 297, 298, 299, 300, 301, 302, 303, 304, 305, 306; to enquire into court martial 57; informs Clark they are going to Norfolk Island 111; lands at Norfolk Island 119, 120; takes command at Norfolk Island 120; proclaims martial law 122; loses many things aboard *Sirius* 123; issues ranks during martial law 124; has report of good ground 139, 140; orders new settlement 141; names new settlement 142; visits Charlotte Field 147, 170, 171, 172, 174, 176, 178, 184, 186, 190, 200; calls council 148, 156; dispute between Faddy and Kellow 149, 150; decides at inquiry into duel 154; appoints deputy commissary 158; gets lost with Clark 168; gives charge of Charlotte Field to Clark 172; orders carpenters to be punished 173; despatches sent onboard *Supply* 182; dispute with marines 192; Clark gets his despatches from *Supply* 194; visits Phillipsburgh 199; forgives convicts 201, 219; reduces ranks 203; very ill 206; getting better 207; makes peace with Considen 207; his servant insane 212; sends Faddy with order 217; visits Queensborough 222; gives up command of Norfolk Island 223;
pards all prisoners 223; faces examination by Capt. Hill 224; sails on *Gorgon* for England 225; letters to 255, 256, 262

Roudon, Thomas: *See* Rowden, Thomas
Rowden, Thomas (marine): missing 143; returns 144
Rulby, James: *See* Riley, James

Rum: Clark's allowance 71, 74, 78, 86, 88; Clark gives to boatswain and carpenter 71; Clark gives to cook 74; Clark gives to seamen 76, 79; Clark gives to John Best (convict) 77; Clark gives to Duhagen (seaman) 77; Clark gives to men on New Year's Day 83; Clark gives to tailor 86; Clark gives to Stephen Mullis 94; Major Ross's stolen 129; cost of 296

Ryan, John (convict): tried for stealing 102; pardoned 102; goes to work again 103

St. Andrew's Day: mentioned 74, 188
St. Clair,—(quartermaster *Sceptre*): mentioned 315
St. Helena, Island of: in sight 231; described 232
St. Jago (Cape Verde Islands): mentioned 17; seen 19
St. Lucia (Cape Verde Islands): seen 18
St. Marias Island: seen 86
St. Nicholas Island: mentioned 15
*Salamander* (Nicholls,—Master): arrives at Norfolk Island 213; mentioned 218, 220, 301, 302, 303, 305
Salt: saved from *Sirius* wreck 125
Saltash: mentioned 93
Salvages Islands: *See* Selvagem Grande Islands
Santa Cruz (Teneriffe): anchored at 15
Sancto Island (Canary Islands): seen 14
Sardinia Bay: ship from 62; ship sailing from 256
Sarsaparilla (sweet tea): *See* Tea

*Scarborough* Transport (Marshall, John, Capt): mentioned 13, 25, 29, 31, 35, 37, 38, 39, 40, 41, 42, 49, 52, 53, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 64, 65, 66, 68, 69, 72, 74, 75, 77, 78, 81, 82, 83, 85, 86, 87, 90, 91, 92, 254; Clark dines aboard 16, 34, 43; to go ahead of the fleet 70
Scarcy Frigate: news from 238
Sceptre (warship): at Cape St. Nicola Mole 313; at Port-au-Prince 317
Scipio (Kirkman,—,Captain): at Teneriffe 17
Scully Island: mentioned 85
Scurvy: mentioned 82, 226, 265; appears 228, 229; people ill with 230
Sea Weed: seen 75
Seal, Thomas (convict): punished 216
Seals: seen 86, 87, 228
Seamen (Friendship): complain about rations 12; one sent aboard Sirius for punishment 22; catch fish 28; falls from top gallant yard 34; Clark gives rum to 76, 79; caught in the women's camp 97; drummed out of service 98; punished for giving rum to the convicts 101
Seamen ( Sirius): assembled after wreck 123; sent to Port Jackson on Supply 123; punished 128; bring lead ashore from Sirius 129; two drown 159; settle at Norfolk Island 195, 199
Sedgwick, Jane Miss: mentioned 73
Salvagem Grande Islands (Madeira Islands): seen 15
Sharks: caught 23, 24, 233; prayer book in stomach of 233; seen 234
Sharpe (Sharp), Maitland (Lt. of marines): mentioned 17, 36, 38, 56, 57, 59, 62, 66, 78, 90, 92, 111, 269, 270, 271, 273; speaks to Clark 24; sails on Gorgon for England 225
Shea, John (Captain of marines): dines with Clark 16; very ill 23, 42; recovered from illness 25; comes aboard Friendship 33, 38, 40; mentioned 41, 52, 56, 57, 61, 92, 105, 112, 212, 258, 271, 276, 286, 305, 306; to enquire into court martial 57; kills kangaroos 96, 98; sits at criminal court 97; death of 284
Shearman, William (convict): tried for stealing 103
Sheep: thirty brought onboard Friendship at Cape of Good Hope 65, 259; lambs born 66, 69, 70, 75, 76, 78; three to be sent onboard Lady Penrhyn 70; lamb dies 74, 85, 90; for table 81; sheep dies 85, 87, 90; no hay left for 86; killed by lightning 96
Shepperd, Mary (convict): punished 203, 216
Ship Wreck Hill (Norfolk Island): wheat reaped at 173, 222
Short,—(2nd mate Friendship): anniversary dinner with Clark 19
Shortland, John Lt. (Navy agent): visits Charlotte Field 147; asked to be second in duel 151; accepts 152; at duel 153; at inquiry into duel 154; has words with Mr. Bryant 178; letter to 246, 249; mentioned 289

Sickness: Clark sea sick 12, 13, 17; Clark troubled with heart burn 18; Jane Parkenson ill 21; Captain Shea ill 23; Clark ill 24; Margaret Hall ill 29; Elizabeth Pully ill 30; complaints of being ill 31; Sarah McCormick very ill 32; children and convicts sea sick 44; Lt. Collins ill 102, 103; number sick on Norfolk Island 131, 132, 148, 166, 204, 207; Major Ross very ill 206, 207

Sidaway, Robert (convict): put in irons 78; released from irons 91

Signals (maritime): 11, 12, 13, 14, 15, 17, 18, 19, 22, 23, 24, 26, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 44, 45, 46, 47, 49, 50, 52, 53, 54, 55, 66, 67, 68, 69, 70, 72, 84, 85, 86, 88, 89, 90, 91, 119

Silk: for making button covers 27

Simmons, William (marine): principal in marine dispute 192

Simms, William: See Simmons, William

Simons,—: mentioned 26

Simpson, Charlotte (convict): son born to 200

Sirius HMS (first fleet flagship): makes signal to sail 11; mentioned 15, 16, 23, 33, 35, 37, 40, 42, 45, 49, 52, 53, 56, 57, 58, 63, 64, 72, 91, 105, 110, 111, 113, 115, 117, 119, 121, 123, 129, 130, 131, 134, 135, 136, 138, 139, 140, 141, 142, 143, 159, 174, 177, 179, 181, 182, 188, 195, 199, 212, 248, 249, 254, 258, 265, 269, 271, 272, 274, 275, 276, 280, 283, 284, 285, 288, 290, 292, 294, 303, 307; their garden robbed by Aborigines 100; underway for Norfolk Island 116; hits reef at Norfolk Island 121, 122; salvaging 122, 123, 124, 125, 126, 127, 128, 180; two seamen drown 159; list of possessions lost in 311, 312

Skeleton: found at Lane Cove 110; Clark buries 112

Skeleton Point: Clark names 112

Slaughter,—, Colonel: mentioned 306

Slaughter,—, General: mentioned 306

Slaughter,—, Miss: mentioned 306

Small Pox: Clark's son has contracted 12; Aborigines die from 109

Smith, Hannah (convict): transferred from Charlotte 36

Smith, Rachael (convict): dies from fall 207

Smith, Susannah (convict): child of 255
Smith, Thomas (sergeant of marines): corn covered with caterpillars 166; his farm mentioned 168, 173
Smith, William: child of Susannah Smith 255
Smyth, Thomas: See Smith, Thomas
Snakes: eaten 265
Snow Bird: wounded by sailor 227
Soap: 5½lb. lent to Mr. Considen 41; Campbell to purchase for Clark 116; sent to Clark 161
Sodom: Port Jackson compared with 97
Solander, Point: Aborigines seen at 90
South America: mentioned 19, 251
South Head (Sydney Harbour): mentioned 117
Spanish Packet: anchored at Teneriffe 16
Spencer, John (convict): punished 169
Spiders: at Port Jackson 95
Sprigmore, Mary (convict): girl born to 187
Squires, James (convict): accompanies Clark on shore 109
Stapleton, —: mentioned 315
Steel, — (convict): punished 197
Steward (Friendship): See Hern, William
Steward (Sirius): mentioned 130
Stewart, Margaret (convict): transferred from Charlotte 36
Stewart, Peter (sergeant of marines): child injured 27; recovered 28; Clark stays with 114; wife has child 235
Stone House: residence of G. Kempster 245, 277; mentioned 274
Storeships: See Borrowdale, Fishburn, Golden Grove
Strawberries: at Cape of Good Hope 58
Stretch, Thomas (convict): escapes into woods 162; found and forgiven 201; mentioned 202
Streets, Thomas: See Stretch, Thomas
Stringer, — (female convict): punished 173
Strong,—(convict): punished 186, 187, 191
Stuart,—, General: mentioned 63
Stuart, K: mentioned 288
Stuart, Margaret: See Stewart, Margaret
Stuart, Mrs.—: mentioned 69, 72, 74, 84
Stuart, Peter: See Stewart, Peter
Sugar: Clark rations his 72; Campbell to purchase for Clark 116; none for six months 179; mentioned 181, 198, 270, 288, 293, 301; prize ships loaded with 317
Sugar Loaf Mountain: See Table Mountain
Supply HMS (Ball, Henry Lidgbird, Lieut.): mentioned 27, 28, 29, 31, 32, 46, 52, 53, 54, 55, 68, 69, 71, 72, 91, 117, 118, 119, 121, 123, 127, 180, 182, 183, 195, 196, 197, 234, 238, 265, 268, 279, 283, 284, 286, 287, 289, 291, 292, 297, 298, 299, 301, 303; to go ahead of the fleet 70; at anchor in Botany Bay 90; leaves for Port Jackson 92; sails for Norfolk Island 98, 116; leaves Norfolk Island for Port Jackson 124; arrives Norfolk Island 181, 194; leaves 182, 198
Surgeon General: See White, John
Surprise (Anstis, Nicholas, Master): arrives at Norfolk Island 157; mentioned 159, 219, 283, 285, 286, 292; sails 161
Sweet Meats: given to Clark 66
Sydney Bay (Norfolk Island): mentioned 118
Sydney, Lord (Thomas Townshend): mentioned 242, 245
T
Table Bay (Cape Town): anchor at 230; mentioned 255
Table Mountain (Cape Town): signals on 55, 60, 63, 67
Tailor (Friendship): loses shears overboard 78; Clark gives rum to 86
Tallerton,—Colonel: mentioned 306
Tasman's Head: seen 86
Tea: Clark gives to Mrs. Young 45; Clark to drink his without sugar 72, 79; sweet, gathered 112, 114; Campbell to purchase for Clark 116; mentioned 117, 181, 198, 270, 288, 301; none for six months 179
Tench, Watkin (Captain of marines): mentioned 34, 98, 100, 112, 113, 252, 260, 263, 264, 270, 271, 304; to enquire into court
martial 57; sits to settle matter without court martial 58; his company to land at Botany Bay. 91; his company go onboard Charlotte 93; sails on Gorgon for England 255

Tenchall, James (convict): Clark's letter to Judge Advocate 261
Tenerife (Canary Islands): mentioned 14, 22, 29, 36, 252, 257; anchored at 15; fleet sails from 17
Tennehill, James: See Tenchall, James
Teut, Mary (convict): punished 197
Thackery, Elizabeth (convict): put in irons 22; handcuffed 30; in irons with Elizabeth Barber 32; released from irons 37; punished 205
Thames River: compared to Port Jackson 93
Tholman,—: mentioned 254
Thomas, Elizabeth (convict): steals kettle 141; boy born to 218
Thomas, James (convict): attempts to steal flour 141
Thompson,—(convict): tree falls on 200
Thompson, Jeremy (convict): punished 132
Tierra del Fuego, York Minster: seen 227
Time Piece (Chronometer): on board Sirius 30, 31, 32, 70, 72
Timins, Thomas (Lt. of marines): mentioned 48, 56, 57, 59, 63, 64, 94, 95, 114, 146, 256, 259, 260, 263, 264, 290, 304, 305, 306
Tirriwan (Aborigine): Clark's encounter with 109
Tobacco: price of 296, 301; mentioned 302, 305
Tobola Planter: from Jamaica 238
Tolman,—: mentioned 36
Torbay: mentioned 11
Townson,—(Lt. NSW Corps): arrives at Norfolk Island 223
Transports: See Alexander, Charlotte, Friendship, Lady Penrhyn, Prince of Wales, Scarborough
Tregadoc: mentioned 71
Trevan, Matthew (Clark's brother-in-law): letter from 213, 310; mentioned 315; letter to 317
Tropic Birds: about the ship 118; caught 167, 169, 170, 176, 179, 183, 185; mentioned 184
Turner, Jonathon (marine): child dies 234
Turner,—Miss: mentioned 25, 67
Turnips: issued out 134; supplied to ships 160
Turtles: seen 33; none at Lord Howe Island 118, 225; caught at Norfolk Island 205; caught at Ascension Island 232; given to English ship 234; mentioned 265, 271
Tuso, Joseph (convict): punished 140; absconds, captured 146; absconds 175; gives himself up 177; punished 219
Tynan, Thomas (marine): principal in marine dispute 192
U
Usher, John (convict): punished 133
V
Vallance,—(convict): punished 215, 219
Vallance, Patrick (2nd mate Friendship): drowns at Cape of Good Hope 62
Vansetter: dismasted in gale 61
Vasconcellos, Don Luis (Viceroy of Brazil): mentioned 34, 35, 40
Vegetables: See Barley, Beans, Cabbages, Corn, Greens, Indian Corn, Oats, Onions, Peas, Potatoes, Pumpkins, Turnips, Wheat, Yams
Ventor, George: mentioned 88
Vinry,—(convict): punished 183
W
Wade,—Lieutenant: mentioned 79
Wade,—(Lt. Cormorant): mentioned 310
Walker,—(clerk): finds a shirt of Clark's 125, 290; visits Charlotte Field 147
Wall,—Lieutenan t: mentioned 313
Walton, Francis (Master Friendship): mentioned 13, 30, 31, 50, 62, 68, 74, 82, 84; anniversary dinner with Clark 19; trouble with seamen and women convicts 22; gives dog to Clark 24; Clark dines with 48; kills one of his sheep 81
Ware, Charlotte (convict): released from irons 19
Water: signals respecting allowance 23; ration increased 27; served out by Clark 28, 32, 45; full rations at Rio de Janeiro 34; ration reduced 70; mentioned 81, 252
Waterhouse, Henry (midshipman HMS Sirius): offers Clark his clothing 124; letter received from 182
Watermelon: stolen 197
Watkins, Mary (convict): transferred to Charlotte 36
Watts, John Lieutenant (Navy transport agent): mentioned 67
Watson, Thomas (convict): punished 132
Watts, Thomas: See Watson, Thomas
Wentworth, D'Arcy (Surgeon): mentioned 180, 184, 186, 191, 202
West Indies: mentioned 232, 306
West, John (marine drummer): struck by convict 96
Westmoreland, Lord: mentioned 305
Whales: seen about the ship 70, 81, 228, 236; mentioned 78
Whaling: Mary Ann to go 209; Prince William Henry to go 234
Wheat: sown 147, 199, 200; attacked by caterpillars 166; saved from fire 168; reaped 173, 222; burnt, used as coffee 179; stolen 207; mentioned 219, 283, 289, 298, 303, 305, 306, 307
Whitaker, George (convict): acquitted on stealing charge 103
White,—: mentioned 306
White, Catherine (convict): punished 197
White, Charlotte (convict): punished 166; mentioned 189
White, John (Surgeon General): on board Alexander to attend ill 27; mentioned 35, 39, 42, 58, 66, 103, 269
White, William: mentioned 46, 79
Whitelock,—Colonel: mentioned 314
Williams, Isaac (convict): punished 210
Williams, John (convict): sentenced to death for stealing 103; pardoned on condition of banishment 104
Williams, Thomas (marine, Clark's servant): Clark gives his jacket to 45; mentioned 65
Wine: at Tenerife, 16, 17; for anniversary dinner 20; leaking cask of 35; mentioned 41, 250, 288, 301, 302; convicts tried for stealing 103; none for six months 179
Wisehammer, John (convict): punished 173; absent from work 174
Wishihamer, John: See Wisehammer, John
Wittiker, George: See Whitaker, George
Wolrige, Thomas: letter received from 157, 277; Clark letter to 160, 161, 215, 285, 286
Wood: stolen by convicts 81; completely out of 85
Wood, George (convict): punished 132, 220
Wood, John (convict): punished 210
Woody, Edward (convict): punished 198
Wright, Henry (marine): punished for attempted rape 206, 207
Wynter,—Junior: mentioned 316
Wynter,—Senior: mentioned 316
Y
Yams: mentioned 300, 301
Yardsley, Thomas (convict): transferred from Friendship 69
Young, Mrs. Thomas (marine's wife): Clark gives tea to 45
Young, Robert Parry Lieut. (naval agent): sails on Gorgon for England 225